



# CLOSE COMBAT MAGE

BOOK 02

*Cloud Sky*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Close Combat Mage

(近戰法師/近战法师)

(Jin Zhan Fa Shi)

by

## Cloud Sky

(雲天空/云天空)

(Yun Tian Kong)

# Synopsis

---

As a mage, it's very embarrassing to be in the water-type.

Although it's a battle profession, the attack is very weak.

Most people use it as a support profession.

But, the appearance of Suo Jia (索加) changed that convention.

A water-type mage can also be incomparably strong!

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by FlowerBridgeToo, Taffygirl13, Pika @ [Taffy Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 101: Superior Tactics (Part 1)

---

The Heavens One Holy Water's weakness was that it was vulnerable to physical attacks, as it didn't have a good defense. For example, the Rock Thorn was a sharp stone that was thrown outwards, and it could completely penetrate the Aqua Aegis. Rock was not at all affected by the cold, and couldn't be extinguished like fire. From a certain point of view, the earth system magic could restrain the Heaven's One Holy Water.

There was even less need to talk about fire warriors or wind warriors. This wouldn't be a problem if one was able to use the Heaven's One Holy Water to successfully freeze the enemy. However, if one wasn't able to, and the enemy was able to get close to their opponent, then the frail and weak Aqua Aegis would be absolutely useless. The Heaven's One Holy Water was indeed quite powerful, but it was currently only able to defeat fire mages. If Aimi wanted to be able to have any fatal effects on any of the other elemental systems, then she would need to train much harder. Once she was able to achieve high-ranked magics like the Freezing Rain, Aimi would definitely be the nemesis of all the systems!

However, Aila was different. She didn't hold very many advantages over fire mages, since their explosive force was enough to shatter the ice with its explosive power. Against fire warriors and earth mages however, it was a completely different story.

This is how the world works. Although it isn't completely fair, once one wants to be special and outstanding, then a special force that exploits your weakness will exist. This is something that no one can change.

Calmly looking at Suo Jia, Aila said in a low voice, “Don’t worry, Lord. If our opponents are the fire warriors, I am confident in my ability to defeat them. However...”

Although she didn’t finish her sentence, Suo Jia already understood and nodded in response. “You’re correct, I am also thinking about the wind warrior situation. Their incredible speed makes it quite difficult for us to hit them with our magics. Although we have the interspatial ring’s three absolute defenses, it would only buy us some time. In the end, the results will still be the same.”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Aimi and Aila both fell silent. After a long time, Suo Jia said in a serious tone, “You know as well as I do, that we must defeat two teams between the earth mages, fire warriors, and wind warriors before we can claim the championship. Right now, we must decide who to choose as our opponents this afternoon.”

After contemplating for a period of time, Aila’s eyes lit up as she spoke to Suo Jia, “I think we should choose the fire warriors as our opponent. Although the fire warriors are able to easily defeat the wind warriors, the speeds of wind warriors are a lot faster than those of fire warriors. If they were to suddenly close the distance between us, whether it be fire warriors or wind warriors, the results will be the same!”

“Yea...” Resolutely muttering while nodding his head, Suo Jia understood that although the fire warriors were originally more powerful than the wind warriors, they were only stronger in

attacking power. No matter how powerful their attacking power was, if they could not hit their opponent, then it might as well be wasted.

However, wind warriors were different. Although their attack power was inferior, they were as fast as demons. This made them extremely difficult to hit with spells. Once they closed the gap, although their attack power was weaker than that of fire warriors, it was the same result to Suo Jia's group of three. It didn't even need to be wind warriors; at close quarters, even earth warriors would find it extremely easy to defeat the three of them.

While Suo Jia was muttering to himself, Aimi said in confusion, "Aila, why didn't you select the earth mages? Although the Aqua Aegis can not block the Rock Thorn, it should not be a problem for you right?"

Nodding her head indifferently, Aila said in a low voice, "Although I do not fear the earth mages, the earth mages are not scared of me either. If I had to face an earth mage, then it would definitely be a competition between Swamp Techniques, Ice Spheres and Rock Thorns. This means that the victor would only be determined based on who depletes all their magic power first, and I feel that this type of fight would be completely meaningless."

Aila's eyes began to passionately burn. "Didn't you say it this morning? We are going to create history. In that case, since we've already defeated the apprentice level's strongest fire mages, we obviously need to defeat the next strongest fire warriors as well!"

"Well said!" Hearing this, Suo Jia excitedly replied, "Your words

were well spoken; by choosing fire warriors, we are challenging the strongest in order to create a new record in history. In actuality, water should be able to overwhelm fire, and so our victory should be a bit easier. As long as we properly utilize the Swamp Technique to hinder our opponents, and then bombard them from afar with Ice Spheres, then we will be able to obtain victory!”

While speaking, Suo Jia finished his porridge in one gulp and stood up. “Let’s go, there’s not much time left. We need to go and meditate. No matter what, we must win!”

Time passed quickly. Finally... the first round of the afternoon matches began. The four groups once again looked at each other fiercely, and the water mages were allowed to choose their opponents based on past accomplishments. This time, Suo Jia didn’t move, and Aila directly walked up to the stage. After selecting her opponents, Aila coldy stood on the side while waiting. She silently waited for the competition to begin.

The afternoon’s first round only had two matches, so the selection process only took a minute. Water mages versus fire warriors, and earth mages versus wind warriors. This was grade one’s semifinals, and only by winning this could they enter the finals to fight for the trophy cup.

Quickly, under the instructions of the judges, the others all left the competition stage. Only Aila’s cold figure stood on the platform. She lowered her head as she waited for her opponent to walk onto the platform.



Below the platform, the fire warrior's instructor stood with his students. He furrowed his brows and looked at the petite girl standing on the platform. Originally...he had expected the opposing party would send Aimi out. After all....Heaven's One Holy Water was indeed formidable. If an attack managed to hit a target, then its extreme freezing abilities would instantly cause the enemy to suffer from frostbite.

However, it seemed that the opponent was not Aimi, but a thin, small girl. Her face had an extremely cold expression, and her whole body seemed to emit a frosty air as well. Could it be....that two geniuses had appeared in the Water Arts?

Waving his hand, the fire warrior instructor said in a serious voice, “#3, I want you to go up first and test her. Don't advance prematurely; first test out her abilities. If you aren't able to completely grasp her abilities, then don't act rashly. Be more cautious, got it?”

“Hehe...” Fire warrior #3 laughed, and smiled wryly, “I understand, teacher. I'm just an experimental pawn, right? Don't worry, I'll definitely reveal the opponent's strength!” #3 then rested his large sword on his shoulders and began to walk towards the arena.

As if she hadn't noticed her opponent enter the arena, Aila silently stood in place. She refused to raise her head to the audience. Only after the judge announced for the round to start did Aila slowly raise her staff and lift her head up to look at her opponent. Her piercing gaze instantly locked onto the fire warrior.

“Xi!” Suddenly feeling Aila’s scrutinization, the fire warrior couldn’t help but shudder. He wasn’t sure why, but he felt like he had become some sort of game that was currently being targeted by a cold and ruthless hunter. It gave him a feeling of extreme danger that began from his feet, and instantly spread throughout his whole body.

Gritting his teeth, fire warrior #3 didn’t advance recklessly. He tightly gripped his sword, and began to slowly shift to the side. The reason he did this was to attempt to feel for his opponent’s strength. Once he was able to discern her true power, he could violently charge in. At close quarters, the blazing sword could even cleave steel; victory would definitely be his!

“Baji!” Only after shifting two steps to the side....the fire warrior looked downwards at his feet in amazement. In an instant...his left foot had already sunk below the ground. A powerful adhering ability was currently spinning around beneath his foot.

“Not good! It’s the Swamp Technique!” The fire warrior internally realized.

## Chapter 102: Superior Tactics (Part 2)

---

As any experienced person knows, the Swamp Technique cannot be underestimated. Although it was only the combination of mud and water, once one fell into the swamp, there was no way they could get out of it, no matter how much strength they used. Even if they had enough power to pull themselves out, they'd end up breaking their own leg!

The best way to break away from the restrictions caused by the swamp was to slowly wiggle, swivel around, move about, and then pull oneself out after having loosened the bindings. Trying to pull directly out with force alone wouldn't work. The fire warrior hurriedly began to rotate his leg and move his foot around. Finally....his left foot was able to escape from the swamp.

Just as the fire warrior was inwardly celebrating his success, he tried to jump towards the side. However, after he exerted energy to move, his body still remained motionless. In horror, he looked down at his right foot. Unknowingly, his right foot had also become trapped by a swamp.

Although the fire warrior had successfully freed his left foot from the Swamp Technique, his right foot had unfortunately been caught right after. It was quite evident that while he was busy trying to release his left foot, Aila had once again cast a Swamp Technique underneath his other foot. It seemed like what she did was quite simple, but in order to grasp the timing for this, it require quite a bit of mental decisiveness and a sufficiently fast casting speed.

When he exerted some strength, his body was still unable to move. Helpless, the fire warrior was forced to drop his left leg back to the ground, which deeply sank into the ground as well. At this moment, although his two legs could still move a bit within the swamp, it was extremely difficult to do so.

“Xi!” The fire warrior took a deep breath. He knew that in order to break free from this Swamp Technique, he had to assemble his battle qi, and use his explosive fire system battle qi to blast the swamp apart. This was an extremely easy way to gain his freedom again, and after a brief moment, boiling fire system battle qi began to frantically circulate within his body, gathering together, and beginning to brew...

“Chi...” Right when the fire warrior was about to explode with battle qi, and cause the swamp to burst apart, a violent earth shattering sound rang out. Lifting his head in shock, he saw a blue-tinted Ice Sphere whizzed towards him.

If it was an ordinary situation, a fire warrior would never be scared of such a spell. Once it drew near, he could shatter it or move backwards to avoid it; both were easy to do. However, both his feet were currently nailed to the floor, and other than facing it head on, there wasn't a second option.

Tightening his grip on his greatsword, the fire warrior fiercely slashed outwards. With a bang, the Ice Sphere was completely shattered into countless shards and cold frost.

However, although the fire warrior had successfully broken the ice sphere, his efforts in escaping the swamp had stopped. In

addition, his two legs were now even more firmly embedded into the floor, and half his calf was already caught. In addition, he was still continuously sinking!

With Aila's current strength, a single Swamp Technique was roughly ten centimeters deep. However, if she added one more and continuously produced two Swamp Techniques, then at it would have an additional ten centimeters of depth. If the fire warrior was unable to break out of this, then she could drown him alive with just the Swamp Technique. This was what made the Swamp Technique so frightening!

Moving his two legs a bit with difficulty, the fire warrior knew that if he did not find a solution soon and ended up sinking further, it would be impossible to break free with his current amount of battle qi. Once it reached that point, the warrior who lost all moving capabilities would be no different from a mage's practice target.

Unfortunately, Aila obviously would not give him that chance, and one after another, Ice Spheres were shot in his direction. The fire warrior couldn't do anything but continuously wave his greatsword, cutting the Ice Spheres in halves.

He cut apart ten Ice Spheres in succession, until finally... the fire warrior felt that something was wrong. When the Ice Spheres were shattered, the released cold air had already created a thick layer of frost on top of his armor, making it difficult for him to move.

This was not all there to it; the cold air that leaked into the armor had already made him shiver. If he continued in this way, he didn't

know how much longer he could last. The most important part was that those Ice Sphere shards had already started to cause the swamp ensnaring him to freeze. The swamp was like steel, and moving around in there made his two legs feel like they were being snapped.

Seeing the opposing Aila once again lift up her staff, the fire warrior understood that he had already lost all chances of victory. If he continued like this, he would be knocked down! After realizing this, the fire warrior lifted his hand in defeat; there was no point in continuing.

Seeing the fire warrior slowly walk off the stage, Suo Jia was so excited that his face radiated with delight. Aila actually gave him an important lesson; although she only utilized the Ice Sphere and Swamp Techniques, she used the two to their utmost limits. She even linked the two magic spells together, and utilized the icebound effect she mentioned earlier. She imitated the effects of the Revolving Frozen Gas's results and rooted the fire warrior in place so he would not be able to move at all. If it wasn't like this, how could the prideful fire warrior possibly admit defeat!

While watching Aila coldly standing on the platform, Suo Jia discovered that he had begun to admire her more and more. Normally, she wasn't very talkative. But once she spoke, her words always contained brilliant wisdom behind them, as bright as snow, and as cool as ice. She was always so calm and indifferent, as if nothing in the world could possibly phase her. She stood there in an awe-inspiring manner, both frigid and proud, just like a majestic icy mountain.

Fire warrior #3 said in a depressed voice, “Teacher, she already knows ice techniques; I obviously cannot defeat her. But....isn’t the Ice Sphere Technique something that one can only activate as an intern mage? I suspect that they used external help!”

“Shut up!” The lecturer looked around his surroundings to confirm that nobody had heard the student’s words, and then hissed, “Don’t make us lose face. What she used wasn’t the Ice Sphere Technique, but the ordinary Water Sphere Technique. This doesn’t even count as magic. In reality, the only reason she had been able to summon an Ice Sphere was because of the special effects from the ice-condensing staff in her hand.”

“Ah! Relying on weapons to obtain victory? Then our loss is too unjust!” Fire warrior #3 cried out in contempt as he looked back at the platform where Aila was standing.

“Ai...” Lightly patting #3’s shoulders, the fire warrior captain sighed, “Just go throw out your Blaze Sword first before you start hating on the opponent. In reality, your Blaze Sword is still at a much higher level than her ice-condensing staff.”

“Eh!” Hearing the captain’s words, #3 couldn’t help but stutter in self-defense. Although he didn’t want to admit it, his precious sword was indeed quite a good item. Unfortunately for him, he hadn’t had a chance to display the sword’s power.

Just as #3 was trying to find a rebuttal, the fire warrior instructor said in a low voice, “Don’t be so stubborn. If you aren’t a bit more modest and don’t try to learn from your defeats, then you will never in your lifetime be able to even dream of defeating that

girl. Her strategy and tactics are clearly much more advanced than yours. When comparing the two of you, you seem like a mere 3 years old!”

The fire warrior instructor then turned towards #2 and said, “Alright, now it’s your turn to go up and test her. Remember....don’t stop; as soon as the round starts, start running. In addition, remember to carefully watch your steps, so that you can avoid being trapped by swamps.”

The fire warrior lecturer then paused for a while before continuing, “Also, try to be more attentive. Don’t advance as soon as the round begins. Gather all your battle qi below your feet, and run as hard as you can. If you get trapped by a swamp, quickly use the battle qi to blast the swamp apart. As long as you get closer to the girl, I believe....that the competition will end!”

“Brilliant! Really brilliant!” Fire warrior #2’s eyes lit up in excitement at the lecturer’s words.

Soon afterwards, the second round of the competition began. As before, Aila stood there as the representative for the Water Arts. Seeing the extremely confident fire warrior #2 enter the arena, Aila coldly smirked. To be honest, she didn’t think that the fire warrior apprentice would have any chance of defeating her at all. After analysing her opponent for an entire afternoon, she had already completed a method to face the fire warrior apprentice that would yield certain victory!

The competition began as soon as the referee gave the command. Just as his instructor had instructed, the fire warrior immediately



began running around the platform. Faced with fire warrior #2's wild running, Aila immediately activated two Swamp Techniques in succession. Both were evaded by her opponent, but the third Swamp Technique did manage to trap him. However, in an instant, fire battle qi burst outwards, and blasted the swamp apart. Just like that, fire warrior #2 charged over, a malicious smile showing on his face.

Seeing the wildly running fire warrior, Aila understood that the Swamp Technique was already useless. The fire warrior had now forgone attack and was using all of his ability to get closer to her. Once he achieved that, then no magic would be of use any longer. The Blazing Blade would instantly cut through and break all of her magics.

However, Aila didn't panic at all. The normally expressionless Aila suddenly smiled gently, and stowed away her staff. Facing the fire warrior #2 currently 20 meters away, Aila activated Aqua Aegis!

The Aqua Aegis isn't really magic. Instead, it is more similar to the ability to control water and the Water Sphere. Following Aila's movements, fire warrior #2's body began to approach the rippling Aqua Aegis at high speeds.

Everyone watching became completely dazed from shock. Even Suo Jia was gaping at Aila, not understanding her actions. No matter what, there was no need to cast Aqua Aegis against this opponent, right?

## Chapter 103: Suo Jia's Divine Might (Part 1)

---

While everyone was in a state of confusion and did not understand what was going on, Aila pulled back her left hand and pointed the staff in her right hand outwards. With a whizzing sound, an Ice Sphere immediately shot towards fire warrior #2.

“Peng!” A dull sound rang out, and although fire warrior #2 successfully avoided the Ice Sphere, the Ice Sphere collided with the enormous Aqua Aegis and immediately shattered. The ice-cold water completely drenched fire warrior #2 in the blink of an eye.

Not pausing for even a second, Aila quickly fell back. Her left hand made a circular motion, and another Aqua Aegis was summoned around the fire warrior's body. Soon after, she pointed her staff forwards, and another Ice Sphere shot out.

After three Aqua Aegis' and three Ice Spheres were cast in succession, fire warrior #2 was completely soaked by the cold water. His body was drenched, however... this did not affect him greatly. During this time, he had already shortened the distance between them by ten meters.

Facing the fire warrior who was getting closer and closer, Aila remained calm and lifted her staff. She released three Ice Spheres in succession; at such a close distance, it was impossible for her to miss. However... the Ice Spheres did not hit the warrior's weak points, and were instead shattered by fire warrior #2 one by one. Even so, it was obvious that Aila had successfully accomplished her goal.

The cold air within the Ice Spheres spread out when they were shattered, and the moisture on fire warrior #2's body rapidly froze into ice. He noticed that not only was the surface turning into frost, but even the armor, inner clothing, and the surface of his skin was frozen.

On the outside, it seemed like the warrior was nearing his goal of getting within the range of 7-8 meters. However to his surprise, it was getting more and more difficult to move. The dense cold air surrounded his body, and the armor felt like it was being cooked as it turned scalding hot!

Ka Cha... Ka Cha... Loud, clear sounds rang out, and warrior #2 was using all of his strength to move his four limbs. The ice on his armor began to fall off chunk by chunk, and sanguine-colored blood continuously flowed out from between the armor's chinks. It was obvious that these small chunks of ice had already pierced through his skin.

Seeing Aila almost within his reach, the fire warrior knew that if he simply took a few more steps forward, victory was his. Only under this belief could he endure the pain and suffering his body was facing from the icy cold. No matter what, he had to win!

Seeing the fire warrior walk up to her with difficulty, Aila stood in place, coldly staring at the approaching warrior. Her face showed a normal expression, quiet and easygoing.

Finally, fire warrior #2 stopped walking forwards. It wasn't that he wanted to stop, but rather that he had no choice but to stop. When he looked at his two feet, he saw that they had already sunk

into the ground!

“Ya!” Unwillingly shouting out, fire warrior #2 took the greatsword in his hand and slashed at Aila. Seeing the fire warrior #2 stabbing out, Aila’s face remained expressionless and she stood there for a long time as she watched her opponent attempt to attack her.

However, the greatsword gradually stopped a centimeter in front of Aila’s nose, and hung in the air helplessly, as the fire warrior #2 could no longer exert any more force. No matter how he moved his body, he could not move it even an inch.

Fire warrior #2 really wanted to throw the greatsword in his hand at Aila. However....the armor around him had already frozen, completely halting his movements. They locked him where he was standing, and he was unable to budge. Since his battle qi was practically used up, his entire body had frozen along with the armor, just like a hard shell. Although Aila was right in front of him, he could no longer move towards her.

Raising her left hand gently, she used her snow-white, tender, and almost transparent hand to push the greatsword in front of her aside. Aila replied in a heavy tone, “You have already lost!” Hearing Aila’s words, the fierce and unyielding expression in the fire warrior #2’s eyes instantly disappeared. Hot tears overflowed from his eyes.

As if she couldn’t bear to see her opponent cry, Aila quietly turned around and began to walk toward the platform. When she turned around, Aila said in a low voice, “Don’t be miserable, after

all, you're currently witnessing history being written. You should be happy instead."

Just as Aila finished speaking, the referee announced that the victor of this round had been the Water Arts mage representative, Aila! In an instant, the entire arena exploded. Water mages were always those that got defeated immediately. Yet they turned out to be so formidable this year; they had even managed to defeat the most powerful fire mages and fire warriors. This was too unbelievable!

In the midst of the noise, the fire warrior #2 left the stage without a fuss, perhaps Aila's final words had taken their effects. Although he was disappointed by the defeat, the fire warrior #2 was not dispirited.

Seeing the fire warrior #2 slowly walked off the platform, the fire warrior instructor closed his eyes. After contemplating for a long time, he helplessly sighed. He knew that Aila's last technique was something that the fire warriors couldn't break through at their current stage. Unless they were promoted to warrior trainees, there was absolutely no way they could counter it!

Opening his eyes, the fire warrior instructor slowly stood up, and said to the team captain, "Go tell the referee that we have conceded. There's no way that we can beat this year's water mages!" The fire warrior instructor turned around gloomily, and began to walk outside the tournament area.

As the fire warriors left, the entire crowd was shocked into a daze. All of them knew that they had just witnessed a miraculous

history being made. Being able to personally see such a moment happened within their lifetimes was a type of honor!

After this, the competition between the earth mages and the wind warriors in comparison wasn't interesting to the audience at all. Eventually, the wind warriors had gained an overwhelming victory. By defeating the earth mages, they were now qualified to enter the finals.

In the eyes of other people, if the water mages could defeat the fire mages and fire warriors, then taking down the wind warriors would just be a piece of cake. But Suo Jia, Aimi and Aila had serious expressions on their faces after seeing the competition between the wind warrior and the earth mage.

Strictly speaking, the earth mages weren't weak. Even if Aimi and Aila went up against them, they wouldn't dare to guarantee that they would end up victorious. Earth subdues water.

However, to the wind warriors, the earth mages weren't imposing at all. The wind warriors had only sent out one representative, and had cleared the competition as if they were pulling weeds. When all of the earth mages had been swept out of the competition, the wind warriors held a matchless power of influence.

Looking at Aimi and Aila seriously, Suo Jia said in a heavy tone, "Our final match's opponent should be the wind warriors, what do we do? Do you two have the confidence to defeat them?"

Aimi strongly shook her head in response to Suo Jia's words and said, "No, no, no....there's no chance at all. Their movements are so fast that my eyes can't even follow. There's no way I can lock my attacks onto them. Even if they were so near that they could chop off one of my arms, I still wouldn't be able hit them with a spell!"

Aila chimed in, "That's right, their speed is too fast. The wind warriors can evade my magic even within a distance of ten meters. I have absolutely no way of defeating them!"

Hearing Aimi's and Aila's words, Suo Jia helplessly sighed. He knew that the wind elemental warriors were really too fast. The Swamp Technique would have absolutely no effect on them with their speed. The fact that the Swamp Technique could be completely ignored by the wind warriors was something they all knew already.

Since the Swamp Technique didn't work, the water mages essentially lost its strongest auxiliary magic. Moreover, the Water Sphere Technique was too slow; a wind warrior could easily dodge it within 10 meters. Based on these facts alone, Aimi and Aila would be completely helpless.

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia slowly stood up and said gloomily, "Originally I didn't plan on participating in this grade's competition. However.....in such a case, this is no longer possible. Leave the wind warriors to me!" Suo Jia straightened his clothes, and then casually strided towards the tournament area.

Seeing Suo Jia's unhurried and graceful movements, Aimi, Aila,

and all of the class' other girls couldn't help but brighten at such a scene. To them, Suo Jia was an Epic-level expert. As long as he went out, there was no way they'd lose.

Feeling the 200 gazes on his back Suo Jia momentarily felt the burden on his shoulder become incomparably heavy. The most critical battle in their plans to make history was to be completed by Suo Jia; this most prominent part would be written by Suo Jia himself. No matter what, the wind warriors had to lose. On the other hand, Suo Jia had to win as directly and efficiently as possible, without any struggle!

Soon after, Suo Jia and wind warrior #1 stood on the platform. Seeing the completely calm Suo Jia, wind warrior #1 said in excitement, "Truthfully speaking, we must really thank you. You guys not only defeated the most powerful fire mages, but the fire warriors as well. You've basically helped passing the crown to us wind warriors and have already laid out most of the foundation for us to achieve victory!"



## Chapter 104: Suo Jia's Divine Might (Part 2)

---

Wind warrior #1 trembled in excitement, “Your Water Arts have already made history. However....the wind warriors definitely won't fall behind. We will also create history; this year's crown for our grade will definitely be ours!”

Arrogantly extending his hand, the wind warriors #1 pointed at Suo Jia and said, “Brat, if you're smart, then you should directly forfeit now. None of your magics have any effect on me. If you concede defeat, then your records on history might look a bit better. Otherwise, don't blame me if your achievements are completely refuted!”

Facing the arrogant wind warrior, Suo Jia slowly raised three fingers, and announced to the whole audience, “Three moves. I don't even need a staff to defeat this weak wind warrior; I only need three moves. If you can survive my attacks, it will count as your victory.”

“Wha-!” The entire audience immediately began to clamor. What kind of joke was that; going against a wind warrior widely known for his speed was a battle of attrition. Someone who could defeat them in thirty moves was already considered an expert, let alone in three moves.

Hearing Suo Jia's words, wind warrior #1 practically exploded in anger. He pointed a shaking finger at Suo Jia and said, “Good, good, good....very good. You can say whatever you please, just wait and see the actual result!” The wind warrior turned around to leave, and returned to his position, waiting for the referee's

command.

Seeing that both sides were ready, the referee loudly announced for the competition to begin. After the referee gave the command, the wind warrior started and immediately charged towards Suo Jia wildly.

Suo Jia sneered in disdain at the wind warrior who had just leaped towards him like a bullet. Suo Jia placed his hands behind his back, and leisurely watched the wind warrior charged crazily towards him, as if he was watching a horse race.

Seeing Suo Jia was so nonchalant, the wind warrior couldn't help but burst in anger. He suddenly increased his speed, and charged towards Suo Jia at the speed of lightning. He wasn't scared of facing off a measly water mage apprentice like this; his speed would triumph all in the end!

Under everyone's gazes, the wind warrior's figure flashed forwards: 50m, 40m, 30m, 20m! Finally, just as the wind warrior surpassed the 20m distance, Suo Jia began to move. He extended his palm and pushed it out towards the wind warrior. In that instant, the wind warrior's body suddenly changed in a strange way; it seemed as if he had been tossed to the side, and he somersaulted towards the ground.

Suo Jia sneered at the wind warrior on the ground. He extended his right hand, and an Ice Sphere whizzed out. With a muffled bang, it collided straight into the wind warrior's chest. There was the distinct sound of bones breaking; even if the distance had been slightly larger, one could still clearly see the wind warrior spit out

a mouthful of fresh blood.

“Two moves!” After only two moves, the wind warrior could no longer stand. This....what in the world was this?!

Everyone knew that Suo Jia's second move was the Ice Sphere, but what was that first move? It seemed like he had just pushed empty air, and yet the wind warrior had suddenly tumbled down. Was this sorcery or magic? It was beyond strange!

The wind warrior stood up with difficulty as he put pressure on his injuries. He knew that the broken bones had already pierced through his muscles; as time went on, he would lose more and more blood.

Gritting his teeth in pain, the wind warrior bellowed, “It's already been two moves, but I haven't necessarily lost yet. At this stage, we both have one move remaining. I want to see exactly how you plan on defeating me! The wind warrior endured his pain, and slowly raised the precious blade in his hand.

“Wu!” Only now did the audience suddenly realize that in that instant, the distance between the wind warrior and Suo Jia had already been decreased. There were now only 5 meters between the two.

Although the wind warrior's chest area had already been soaked crimson with blood, he would definitely still be able to defeat Suo Jia in a single attack, despite the serious injury. Once he proved victorious, the injury wouldn't matter.

“Not good!” Seeing this scene, the female lecturer, Aimi, Aila, and the other girls in the class, all stood up in shock. Within a distance of 5-6m, a mage didn’t have any power to reverse a dire situation, especially if their opponent was a wind warrior.

Activating a magic requires at least a few seconds. For a wind warrior under the assistance of wind battle qi, five meters could be covered in the blink of an eye. Suo Jia had already lost his final chance.

However, was this true? The answer was clearly no. Suo Jia looked at the wind warrior in pity; he still had a major move at his disposal that he hadn’t used it: the interspatial ring. However... Suo Jia didn’t want to use it yet. Relying on magic equipment to defeat his opponent would only make his victory meaningless. Suo Jia wanted to use his own strength to mercilessly defeat the other party.

Coldly looking at the wind warrior, Suo Jia smirked, “Originally, I could’ve easily defeated you from even further than 20m. Just now, I could’ve just attacked you with another Ice Sphere to defeat you while you were still on the ground. However, I don’t desire such a victory.”

Suo Jia’s eyes gradually brightened, “Right now, the distance between us is only around 5 meters. This is exactly the range of attack that you warriors enjoy the most. It is also a situation that I purposely created. If I’m to defeat you, I must do it while you are at your strongest. This is the way I battle!”

Suo Jia slowly raised his right hand, and pointed it towards the wind warrior as he said in a low voice, “If you admit defeat now, I’ll let you go. However, if you still insist on attacking, don’t blame me for being ruthless!”

“Che....” Turning around to spit out a mouthful blood, the wind warrior said in a tense voice, “There will only be two outcomes. One is that you will be defeated by my blade, and the other is that I will be completely subdued by you. If you think I’ll simply admit defeat, dream on. Come at me....give me all you’ve got!”

The wind warrior looked down at the precious blade in his hand. A golden glow enveloped his entire body. It was obvious that he would burst out with his fastest and strongest assault!

“Ai....” Sighing, Suo Jia suddenly clenched his palm together into a fist and....he bent his right arm, immediately....causing everyone to gasp in shock at the sight!

A mighty blood dragon roared as it burst out from the chinks in the wind warrior’s armor. The dragon was completely condensed from the wind warrior’s blood. Under Suo Jia’s control, 60mL of the wind warrior’s blood was extracted from his body.

Although the wind warrior had planned on killing Suo Jia with a single sword strike....his body was no longer under his control. Paralyzed, he slowly fell down.

At the same time, Suo Jia folded his arms across his chest, causing the crimson blood dragon to coil around him. Seeing the

mighty blood dragon, everyone knew that this had been formed from the wind warrior's own body. Having lost such a massive amount of blood, the wind warrior couldn't possibly stand back up.

Looking at the paralyzed warrior with pity, Suo Jia said, "I've already told you that you aren't my equal. Despite not having displayed my true abilities, you've already lost. To me, all mage and warrior apprentices are like feeble chicks. A light pinch would be enough to kill you guys instantly. Don't even try to resist. The final result will be something you can't even imagine!"

"Quick! Hurry up and end the competition. If you don't treat him soon, he'll die!" The wind warrior instructor shouted out urgently after finally regaining his senses.

Hearing the instructor's voice, the referee quickly announced Suo Jia as the victor. At the same time, the wind warrior instructor madly rushed over to pick up wind warrior #1's body.

"Freeze!" Just as the wind warrior instructor was prepared to leave the tournament area, Suo Jia said in an ear-piercing shout, "Don't move him. If you do, he might actually lose his life!"

Suo Jia waved his right hand, and the mighty blood dragon rushed back into the wind warrior's body, entering from each one of the armor's chinks. At the same time, the wind warrior slowly awoke. His face had regained color, and it was clear to everyone that he had used a godly technique to return all of the blood back into the wind warrior's body.

Coldly looking at the wind warrior instructor, Suo Jia said, “This is only a competition, so I don’t want to take his life!”

# Chapter 105: Suo Jia In Close Combat (Part 1)

---

Although Suo Jia had just said that it was simply a competition and he really did not want to take anyone's life, the way he had said it was simply too eerie. It made those who heard it perspire from their backs.

Embracing his dear student, the wind warrior instructor returned to the spectator's area with a deep and concentrated expression. "What happened just now? Why did you suddenly fall down? If you hadn't slipped and fell, you wouldn't have lost in such a strange way."

Blankly looking at the instructor, the wind warrior muddle-headedly replied, "I don't know what happened either. Right when I was about to advance, I suddenly felt that my front foot was suddenly grabbed by an enormous hand and pinned towards the ground. Under such a great force, I lost all control, and fell down."

The instructor knit his brows; he did not understand how the opponent had accomplished this task. However, once a wind warrior decided to madly rushed in as fast as he could, if he suddenly met some sort of interference, then his fall would be extremely disastrous.

After muttering to himself for a short period of time, the wind warrior instructor resolutely turned around and said to wind warrior #2, "Alright, go up and test him a bit. However, you need to be careful. Don't recklessly rush towards him, and be mindful of any sort of danger. As long as you maintain a speed where you can avoid his Ice Spheres at any time, then you're fine. His Ice Sphere



is extremely powerful, and I estimate that it is not as simple as freezing a Water Sphere.”

Speaking up to here, the wind warrior instructor helplessly furrowed his eyebrows. He had clearly seen Suo Jia walk up to the stage empty handed earlier, and he had casted the spells with his bare hands. In that case, how had he cast the Ice Sphere Technique?

Seeing the blue glove on Suo Jia’s right hand, the wind warrior instructor incorrectly assumed that it must have been related to that blue glove. Laughing evilly, the wind warrior instructor walked towards wind warrior #2; after some discussion, wind warrior #2 took strode towards the stage.

Stepping into the arena, wind warrior #2 looked over Suo Jia in contempt and loftily said, “Using magic equipment to defeat us is rather underhanded. Even if you guys make history, it will still be because of outside influences. I will be the first to look down on you!”

“What? Dependant upon outside influences!” Hearing the wind warrior’s words, Suo Jia could not help but furrow his eyebrows. Long before walking on that stage, he had already decided that in this competition, he had to win directly and efficiently, without the slightest bit of controversy. However, he had never imagined that despite walking up to the stage empty-handed, he was still criticized. This blame had definitely been forced upon him.

Suo Jia bitterly replied, “I don’t understand what you are talking about. I didn’t even use a staff, and yet you claim that I am relying

on magical equipment; isn't this venomous slander?"

The wind warrior snorted coldly and declared, "Did you think you could conceal it from me? If you have the guts, take off your right glove and fight with me. If you can beat me in such a way, then I will be convinced."

"What!" Hearing wind warrior #2's word, everyone cried out in shock and turned their attentions to Suo Jia's right hand to look at the strange blue glove. Because of the wind warrior's words, everyone subconsciously thought that was some peak grade treasure.

"Chi....." Suo Jia sneered at the wind warrior. He didn't bother to explain and directly took off the glove. He walked to the side of the stage and threw the glove to Aimi. Soon after, he turned his head around to face the wind warrior, "Are you happy now? Do you want me to strip off completely to fight with you?"

He did not expect Suo Jia would really take off the glove. The wind warrior couldn't help but to stare blankly at Suo Jia for a while. If one did not want others look down on them, then they had to try their best. The wind warrior's mouth twitched in contempt and said flatly, "How do I know you don't have any other treasures on your body?"

Laughing disdainfully, Suo Jia coldly said, "What? Dont be a sore loser! I didn't expect you wind warriors would fall to this level. You guys are way too inferior when compared to the fire warriors and fire mages!"

While speaking, Suo Jia took off the rings on both hands, the headband that was the Atlantis' Wisdom on his forehead, and the necklace. Lastly, he stretched both hands and took off the magic robe.....

It was around early summer at the moment, so the temperature wasn't that high yet. But even if one was naked, they wouldn't feel too cold. Of course, Suo Jia was not generous enough to get butt naked to fight with him. Taking off all the outer clothing, Suo Jia exposed his thin undergarments. Under the caress of a light breeze, everyone concluded that it was impossible for Suo Jia to hide any more magic items on his body. If he stripped any further, then he would really be butt naked!

Wearing only loose and soft undergarments, Suo Jia seemed as if he would fly up high into the sky under the brush of the light breeze. Suo Jia faced the wind warrior disdainfully and gestured at him as Suo Jian indifferently said, "Come, you can inspect as much as you wish, and see if there are any more magic items on my body!"

Facing Suo Jia who were half naked, the wind warrior laughed complacently, "You have to take off everything. Who knows if those underpants of yours is some kind of treasure? Hehe....."

Glaring at wind warrior #2 coldly, Suo Jia said in a heavy tone, "Do you know what "having one's name go down in history as a byword for infamy" means? You'd better start praying; pray that I won't win when we exchange our moves later. Otherwise, I will certainly return 100 times the shame I received, and make you

become the disgrace of all wind warriors in the history that we will create today!”

Suo Jia smiled slightly and said sinisterly, “Did you think I wouldn’t be able to fight with you after forcing me to take off my clothes? You are too naive, it would be way too convenient if my underpants are a magic item. Have you ever seen a magic item without any magic spell formations or symbols? I seriously question how you’ve lived for so long if you don’t even understand something so simple!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, wind warrior #2’s expression immediately became ashen. After all... any magical equipment, especially magical robe type clothing and armors, all had magical engravings on them in order for them to have magical properties.

Seeing the ashen faced wind warrior #2, Suo Jia laughed loudly and said, “So pitiful, if you are scared then just say you are scared. If you don’t dare to fight then you should say you don’t want to anymore. However, you insisted on saying that I am relying on magical equipment, even though you know that there is no way I would fight you while completely naked. You used words to try and force me too. You’ve really provoked me, you despicable bastard... you will learn the consequences!”

Suo Jia walked onto the stage and walked towards the changing room nearby. When Suo Jia came out, he was wearing simple training clothes.

The competition area was originally the wind warrior facility’s practice area, and within the changing room were numerous

clothes worn while practicing. Each of these clothes were engraved with a Holy Light Insignia, as well as the Academy's serial number. At this moment... Suo Jia was simply wearing what wind warrior #2 would normally wear as a training outfit.

Walking toward the stage with a smile on his face, Suo Jia coldly said towards wind warrior #2, "Hey, now I am wearing your normal training attire. There is no way that this is some magical equipment or some type of mysterious treasure, right?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the warrior couldn't give a rebuttal, no matter how strong the wind warrior was. This outfit was issued by the school and all of them were exactly the same. If even this was considered a treasure, then there wasn't anything in this world that couldn't be considered a treasure anymore.

Stretching his hands and feet, Suo Jia smiled and said, "Mm... this warrior outfit feels rather comfortable, and does not affect movement in any way. With this, I can properly play with you."

While speaking, Suo Jia gestured towards the judge that it was alright to start the match. Receiving Suo Jia's hint, the judge checked with wind warrior #2 as well, and then firmly nodded his head and loudly declared for the start of the match!

## Chapter 106: Suo Jia In Close Combat (Part 2)

---

Following the judge's words, wind warrior #2 abruptly pulled out the double-edged blade from behind him and quickly rushed towards Suo Jia. However, Suo Jia seemed as if he didn't even see the wind warrior 50m away from him. Casually moving his hands, a stream of water roughly nine meters long suddenly appeared. Following Suo Jia's movement, it circled Suo Jia's body, whistling as it coiled around him.

"This..... What is he going to do!" Seeing this scene, the female lecturer, Aimi, and Aila were all dumbfounded. Could it be that..... Suo Jia wanted to beat his opponent purely through water manipulation? That was impossible! Suo Jia did not possess Heaven's One Holy Water, so it would not possible to defeat his enemy like this.

Seeing the stream of water completely coiling around Suo Jia on top of the stage, wind warrior #2 laughed ruthlessly and upped his speed by one level. His body arched as he rushed towards Suo Jia, and covered the 20 meters distance between them as fast as lightning. At the same time, Suo Jia's eyes suddenly lit up, and he quickly started to make his move.

The instant the wind warrior got into Suo Jia's effective range, Suo Jia suddenly spread both of his hands, and a layer of blue, cold air flowed out. With Suo Jia as the center, the cold air instantly surrounded and circled around him, while emitting a whizzing sound. Its momentum could not be stopped, and in a flash, the 20 meters perimeter around Suo Jia was completely enveloped by ice

cold streams of air.

Although he had lost his Frost's Sigh and its ability to lower his magic by 10 degrees, after half a year of wearing Atlantis' Wisdom and the help of Faerie's Spirit, Suo Jia's magic and spirit power had far surpassed anyone else's in his age group. His overall strength was superior as well. Even though Suo Jia and the warrior had both attended school for a year, Suo Jia's might couldn't be compared to other mage apprentices'. Just based on the improvement from the Exhaustion Training Method alone, he was already exceeded everyone else.

The Revolving Frozen Gas was originally a high-ranked magic for apprentice mages to use. Compared to the wind warrior who was just an elementary warrior, Suo Jia was on a completely different level.

The only downside was that the Revolving Frozen Gas was still an auxiliary magic in the end. It didn't have a strong destructive power, and its only effect was freezing. It was slow, and was impossible to use it to kill an opponent with a single attack. However, this was exactly what Suo Jia wanted. He didn't plan on relying on just this magic alone to get rid of his opponent. The honor that the wind warrior had previously taken from him was something he was determined to get back.

Following the Revolving Frozen Gas' cold streams, the wind warrior suddenly felt acute pains all over his entire body. Overwhelmed with shock, he looked at his own body, and saw that the armor covering his entire body had already began to freeze. Due to the cold air streams, the water content from the air around

him began to solidify, forming a thin ice layer. With his body under attack from the icy coldness, he felt both numb and acute pains, causing his speed to dramatically fall.

Even though wind warrior #2's body had been slightly frozen, nothing could freeze the wind battle qi. The wind warrior mustered his strength to gather his battle qi, and leapt forward in a flash, entering 10 meters range within Suo Jia. Seeing this scene, all the spectators outside the stage couldn't help but cry out in surprise. Everyone knew that the fight had reached its climax; the victor was going to be decided in a split second.

Under everyone's attentive gaze, Suo Jia smiled mysteriously. In the next instant..... the water stream spiralling around his body began to freeze under the super low temperature of the Revolving Frozen Gas. This was the latest skill invented by Suo Jia in his closed-door training before the competition — Ice Stream Technique!

This was not truly a spell, but one could not say that it wasn't magic either. In actuality, this was combining water control with magic in the most perfect way. Although the water stream became an ice stream, Suo Jia could still freely control it. This stream of ice was Suo Jia's weapon in close combat!

Seeing that the wind warrior had entered within 10 meters, Suo Jia waved his hand. A thick and wide ice dragon instantly rushed out, gliding along the ground. It was quick-witted, as if it possessed life.

Seeing the stream of ice leaping towards him like a snake spirit,



the wind warrior's expression couldn't help but darken. He brandished the precious sword in his hand, and chopped at the stream of ice with the intent of splitting it apart. However, he would never have thought that the stream of ice almost seemed as if it had a pair of eyes, wriggling away in an instant and avoiding the his sword easily. In the next moment, the head of the ice stream rose up from the ground, and suddenly pounced onto wind warrior #2's body.

“Geji...geji....geji....” A concentration of clear sounds rang out as the stream of ice instantly coiled itself around every part of the wind warrior #2's body. The arm-thick dragon had completely wrapped itself around the warrior from head to toe, showing only his fear-stricken gaze at Suo Jia.

The audience watched attentively as the stream of ice lifted its head up high and summoned a sharp ice cone pointing at the wind warrior's eyes. Everyone knew that once this ice cone descended, the wind warrior would be doomed; even if he was ten times stronger than he was now, the result wouldn't change.

A person's body was weak, like the area near a human's eyes. No matter how strong one's battle qi was, he wouldn't be able to resist an attack aimed at their eyes. As long as a sword pierced through, no matter how brilliant one was, they would still be doomed. Of course...an expert would pay attention and protect their own eyes, as well as other weak spots, making them difficult to attack. However, the wind warrior #2 was no such expert.

In reality, it wasn't just coiling around the warrior. The ice stream that had absorbed the Revolving Frozen Gas was constantly

emitting cold air and corroding the wind warrior #2's body, disintegrating any resistance. The creaking sounds were actually generated from the stream of ice as the wind warrior #2 struggled.

Laughing lightly, Suo Jia was not worried at all as he walked forward and stood in front of the wind warrior #2. The hardness and strength of this stream of ice was almost equivalent to a rock's. An apprentice of the Wind Arts wouldn't be able to break off from such a strong shackle. Since he had already been captured by the stream of ice, then he could forget thinking about escaping.

Smiling at the wind warrior currently trapped by the stream of ice, Suo Jia casually said, "How about it? Do you still have anything to say?"

Glaring at Suo Jia in fury, wind warrior #2 continued to struggle fiercely. However, the stream of ice's grip was firm, and aside from the creaking sounds, there was absolutely no sign of it being deterred by his movements.

"You! This is clearly not magic. You're definitely still hiding some type of magic item on you!" Wind warrior #2 said stubbornly, still refusing to admit defeat.

Curling his mouth arrogantly, Suo Jia shook his head and said, "Don't think you are the strongest in this world. In reality, you are equivalent to a tiny ant in my eyes. I could kill you with a single finger. My powers are not something the likes of you can even imagine!"

Suo Jia conversationally explained, “Listen closely. This stream of ice is really just controlled by the manipulation of water. Examine it carefully; the core of this ice dragon is a stream of water!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the wind warrior #2 smiled grimly “Of course I know the manipulation of water. However....how are you able to condense the stream into ice? How do you explain that?”

Laughing ruthlessly, Suo Jia said arrogantly, “I don’t need to explain it to you. Since you are the one seeking problems, then it’s not my fault!”

Suo jia turned around to face the three judges and declared loudly, “Look closely. This fellow might not recognize it, but as the great heads of the Water Arts, if you cannot recognize it, then the Holy Light should be ashamed!”

Saying that, he extended his pale right arm and quickly began to draw into the air with his forefingers. The blue light coming from his forefingers formed a spell array. With a wave of his hand....a fierce, cold air blew outwards with Suo Jia as its center, and began to spread out and circle above them.

“Revolving! Revolving Frozen Gas!” Seeing such a scene, the three judges were immediately dumbstruck. The female instructor on the battleground below cried out sharply. He could fake everything else, but Revolving Frozen Gas magic was not something that could be faked.

Following the fiercely burning ice, wind warrior #2, who stood right in front of Suo Jia, was the most unfortunate one. A stream of cold air burst out and immediately, his outer skin was cut apart, with wounds as fine as threads. One cut followed another, and they appeared continuously all over his skin and face.

Fire wasn't the only thing that could crack people's skin. In reality, cold winds were like blades, and if the temperature was low enough, they could even instantly freeze one's skin to split into cracks. Anyone living within the freezing Northern districts would know this fact.

“Ah!” A miserable, world-shaking howl echoed throughout the tournament area. At this very moment, the wind warrior #2's voice no longer seemed like a human's. The incomparable feeling of pain was not something that he could endure.

What does frigidness feel like? Does it only make people shiver? No...it actually isn't like that at all. If it's cold enough, it actually burns. Once a person is frozen to a certain point, it will feel as if the entire body is submerged into boiling water. Currently, the wind warrior #2 felt like a basin of scalding water had been dumped onto him. After a few miserable cries, his head lowered, and had completely fallen unconscious.

“We admit defeat!” Not waiting for the Revolving Frozen Gas to finish wreaking havoc, the wind warrior instructor in the battle arena immediately shouted their defeat in alarm. In the instant when he saw Suo Jia leisurely casted the Revolving Frozen Gas, he already knew that Suo Jia's power had already surpassed the apprentice level. He could even be on the mage trainee level. He

was already a strong expert; after all, the Revolving Frozen Gas represented a peak-grade mage trainee!

Originally, since the other party had already admitted defeat, Suo Jia would've naturally ceased his actions. However, he was enraged by the opposite party's rude words in the beginning of the match, so Suo Jia intended to punish him. Taking advantage of the instant before the referee could end the competition, Suo Jia suddenly waved his hand, and the stream of ice suddenly unravelled itself. Along with the stream of ice's sudden movement, the wind warrior's body suddenly flew out into the air in a spiral. The body flew out of the tournament area's perimeter as fast as the wind, and began to fall down towards the platform.

“Peng! Pala....” After a string of sharp sounds, the wind warrior #2's body was pitifully thrown into a row of empty seats. As it smashed into the hard seats, his bones were crushed upon the impact. Blood spurted out of multiple wounds; in addition to the fact that the body was littered with infant sized wounds split open from the freezing air, the wind warrior's appearance could only be described with the word 'tragic'!

# Chapter 107: King Of Kings (Part 1)

---

Despite Suo Jia's vicious and merciless actions, he did not receive the berating of everyone watching. After all... wind warrior #2's actions really made everyone despise him, and this type of punishment could still be viewed as light. Wind warrior #2 had already tainted a warrior's honor and dignity. Even if Suo Jia killed him on the spot, no one would think badly of him.

However with this victory, many of this competition's witnesses could not believe that history had already been made. In this newly written history, wind warrior #2 had inevitably also tarnished his life's reputation; even his parents, spouse, and children would feel humiliation because of him.

However, wind warrior #2 did not care about these things. So what if history had been made? Wasn't it still limited to within Holy Light city? Outside of Holy Light City, who would know who he was?

While wind warrior #2 was daydreaming of ways to humiliate Suo Jia to alleviate his depression, the three judges on the other side all walked over from to where Suo Jia was standing. They nervously looked over Suo Jia from top to bottom.

After a really long time, the head judge trembled as he said, "Student Suo Jia, if I did not guess wrong, not only can you already meditate, but you can also already cast the Ice Sphere and Revolving Frozen Gas. Am I right?"

Nodding his head, Suo Jia calmly said, “You are correct, it is as you say.”

The judges exchanged shocked glances, and the referee said with difficulty, “Um, I wonder... have you perhaps learned the Glacial Armor Technique? If you have learned it, please demonstrate it for us.”

Although Suo Jia felt that the referee’s request was quite strange, he still decided to fulfill it. He stretched his right hand forward. With a lightning fast wave, a Glacial Armor rapidly extended from his feet and quickly climbed up Suo Jia’s legs. In an instant, Suo Jia had already shrouded himself in a layer of sturdy Glacial Armor.

Seeing this scene, the head judge’s eyes shone brightly and he shouted excitedly, “Good! Very good! Students, I want to break a good news to everyone. Our student Suo Jia had just broken the greatest records from the past millennium!”

“What!” Hearing this, the students all stood up in shock. What kind of record was this!

Seeing all of the confused students, the head judge excitedly said, “According to what’s been recorded, the earliest person capable of meditation was a holy mage from a thousand years ago. However a thousand years later, our Suo Jia at the young age of eight has not only learned meditation, but also grasped the three major spells: Ice Sphere, Glacial Armor, and the Frozen Revolving Gas. This is a record that no one has ever surpassed, and will be difficult to trump even in the future. Our student Suo Jia will be forever

recorded in the Written Annals and shine for eternity! He will be someone that all of humanity's mages will look up to and admire!"

After they heard what the head judge had said, every student started to cheer. However, wind warrior #2's complexion grew ugly, very ugly... if what that judge said was true, then his infamy would spread beyond the Holy Light Academy.

Just as Suo Jia had said, along with the birth of a new history, his sullied name would inevitably go down in history as a byword for infamy for all eternity! His parents, relatives, and even his wife and children would be humiliated because of him. Wind warrior #2 couldn't help but sway a few times at this thought. He regretted it, he truly regretted it! If only he had known earlier... if only he had known earlier! How would he.... In despair, wind warrior #2 could only feel everything in front of him become dark, and immediately fainted. Who would've thought that his entire life would be ruined by a mere school competition?

Suo Jia smiled at the cheering students. After working hard for such a long time, he had finally achieved his most important goal. He had successfully made history, and set a new record. This feeling was too wonderful.

Staring blankly at Suo Jia standing on the platform, the wind warrior instructor didn't continue to fight. He happily renounced the rest of the competition, and directly conceded defeat. At that moment, everyone knew that Suo Jia's words weren't just empty; in Suo Jia's opinion, all of the mage apprentices were worthless people that couldn't be called mages. With a single flick of his finger, Suo Jia could easily annihilate them; this wasn't an



exaggeration at all.

Quickly following that, Aimi and Aila were called up to the stage, where the head judge personally bestowed the trophy upon the three individuals. Under the Holy Light Emperor's decree, the team that obtained victory were all eligible for his award. Those who did not have nobility titles became Village Paladins, and those with titles were upgraded by a class. This was a way for rewarding Holy Light civilians for their good martial art skills.

Soon after, the head judge placed the championship trophy in Suo Jia's hands. The trophy was a representation of glory and honor, and belonged to the team. Moreover, this trophy also had historic value and importance; after all, it was the first time that the water mages had ever obtained any victory in the grand competition. It was also the first time that they had ever received a trophy! Suo Jia's, Aila's, Aimi's names would be forever engraved on the precious trophy cup, and the three individual's accomplishments would be widely known among countless generations of future students.

After the awards had been handed out, the grade-wide championship tournament finally ended. Suo Jia fulfilled his promise from half a year ago, and had won his grade's competition. This allowed him the right to enter the interschool championship tournament!

The interschool championship tournament was simply the competition between the champions of the nine grades. The lower grade champions had the right to challenge the champions of the higher grades, giving them another opportunity to increase their

nobility ranking. The loser would have to forfeit their chance to gain an increase in nobility ranking. The only thing was, these types of challenges did not happen often. After all... it was extremely difficult for the lower grade students to defeat their senior sisters and brothers from higher grades. In addition, the rules stated that one had to at least challenge those that were three grades higher. In other words, Suo Jia could only challenge the students that were 11 years old or older. This also had to be an eleven year old who had participated as a member of the competition in order for the challenge to be approved.

Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila all had the challenging rights. However, the two girls gave them up at the same time. Although the lower grades were allowed to initiate a challenge, if the 11 year olds did not want to participate, then they could only challenge those that were 12, 13, 14, 15 or even older students. Thus, their probability of winning was simply too low.

Based on past records alone, the student apprentices did not participate in the championship power struggle. They had struggled to earn their new nobility titles; how could they possibly risk losing them again? Although Aili and Aimi were getting stronger quickly, they did not have the slightest confidence in winning this.

Suo Jia, on the other hand, didn't even think twice about it, and immediately chose to participate in the challenge competition. In actuality, Suo Jia's current strength was already at that of a top-level mage trainee's. Even if he was compared to the 18 year-old water mages, he would definitely not feel any fear.

Normally, only when one became around 12 years old would they reach the mage trainee level. Then they'd learn meditation, as well as the Ice Sphere Technique. 14 was when one learned the Glacial Armor, and around 16 - 18 was when one learned Revolving Frozen Gas. This was the school curriculum from start to finish in order to become a qualified mage trainee. To learn outside of this was at one's own risk.

Therefore, even if Suo Jia was only 8 years old (soon to be 9 years old), his strength was already comparable to that of 16-18 year old students'. Even if he wouldn't necessarily be able to achieve victory when confronting an expert, he definitely still had chance!

Suo Jia had already thought about this very carefully. Even if this nobility rank was precious, it was definitely still worth the risk. One could guarantee no losses would be suffered as long as they were able to attain one victory. Even if one lost after that first match, they wouldn't gain nor lose anything. To Suo Jia, the promotion of the nobility rank was currently way too slow. It was still far from his expectations. Thus, it was very unlikely that he would miss this kind of good opportunity to rapidly raise his nobility rank.

Suo Jia's goal was to leave for the Greater Trade Routes. That's why....he wouldn't be able to stay very long in Holy Light City. Within this limited amount of time, he had to put all his efforts in accumulating money bit by bit and raising his noble rank. As long as he had a guaranteed status, nobody would dare bully his friends and family after he left.

The interschool championship tournament wasn't to be held

during the same day. It was organized to be the first competition three days from now. When that time came, the Lord of Holy Light City would personally come and witness the competition. The final victor would be able to use this opportunity to choose a weapon or equipment from the Holy Light City Lord's treasury house. With this, all the champions from each grade would be motivated to courageously take part in the competition.

After the competition ended, Suo Jia went home. Aimi and Aila, on the other hand, returned back to school. Their competition had already ended. They could rest for a while now, as the bitter training that they had suffered through the past month had practically stifled them to death.

However, Suo Jia was different; he never relaxed. Although the grade competition had ended, the interschool-championship tournament hadn't started yet. During the three days before the start of the competition, Suo Jia wanted to use his time well and train. This was what "preparing until the last minute" meant.

When facing off against people of the same age group as him, Suo Jia was able to maintain an attitude of looking down on them. However, when facing his seniors, Suo Jia no longer had such dominance. Although everyone's training was pretty much the same, his opponents had all practiced for 10 years, while Suo Jia had only trained for a year. In terms of practice and skill, an insurmountable gap existed.

## Chapter 108: King Of Kings (Part 2)

---

Although Suo Jia had grasped the Ice Sphere Technique, the Ice Sphere's projectile speed, destructive power, coldness, power and hardness were all incomparable to his seniors'.

They had all used the same Ice Sphere as a base, but a Mage Saint's Ice Sphere could break through a 10 centimeter thick steel plate and wasn't any different from an artillery shell. However, the Ice Sphere that Suo Jia activated couldn't even break through a 10 centimeter thick dirt wall. After all, Suo Jia had just learned the Ice Sphere Technique. He couldn't use it as skillfully, and was only able to utilize a small portion of the Ice Sphere's strength.

Speaking of other aspects, there were absolute gaps between Suo Jia and his seniors when comparing in terms of magic theory, perception of the water elements and activation of the magic as well as his technique. Just based on the Ice Sphere's power alone, Suo Jia was definitely not his seniors' equal in terms other magic aspects as well.

There was also the Revolving Frozen Gas. No matter whether it was its AOE or its temperature, none of them could be compared. Although the Ice and Snow Pact could boost the power of ice magics, it wasn't the only method either. A lot of practice, comprehension, perception, and theory could also decrease the magic's temperature. The only thing was that these types of comprehensions and theories could only be aimed at a particular magic. On the other hand, the Ice and Snow Pact affected all types of ice magic.

If a person spent their whole life on practicing the Revolving Frozen Gas, then they could definitely reach the absolute lowest temperature in the magic, and wouldn't be any inferior to the effects of the Ice and Snow Pact. However....they would only be able to achieve such a low temperature in the Revolving Frozen Gas. They wouldn't be able to lower the temperature in any of the other ice magics.

However, the Ice and Snow Pact was different. Once this was practiced, then all ice magics would gradually lower their temperatures according to the training, boosting damage ability. It was exactly for this reason that the Ice and Snow Pact was regarded as being on the same level as meditation.

Although Suo Jia had trained in the Ice and Snow Pact for a long time, it was still incomparable to his seniors, who had been training in magics for 10 years. They could activate any magic 10 times more often than Suo Jia could. Their power, experience, and techniques were all things that Suo Jia's current level couldn't compare to.

However, Suo Jia wasn't at a complete disadvantage. Although Suo Jia was not the highest ranked in terms of magic training, it could be said that if Suo Jia was #2 in controlling ability of water, nobody in the world would dare to call themselves #1!

After receiving Aila's advice, Suo Jia had researched battle techniques and magic combinations that he could use in conjunction with each other to suit his own style. This allowed Suo Jia to create an entirely new method of combat — the Ice Stream Technique!

The Ice Stream Technique used the ability to control water as its base, and combined the ice elements and the freezing effects. This allowed the stream of water to form into a sharp weapon. By manipulating the water within, Suo Jia could pretty much cover both long and short distances; he didn't have any of the weaknesses that water mages had! The Ice Stream Technique was Suo Jia's close combat weapon!

After the competition ended, Suo Jia had already brought back his equipment. After all....although those magic equipment couldn't be called priceless, they were still valuable treasures that Suo Jia paid careful attention to.

He put on the Atlantis' Wisdom band on his forehead, hung the Faerie's Soul around his neck, replaced the Frost's Sigh on his right finger, and the interspatial ring on his left. Finally, he re-equipped the mysterious blue glove on his right hand, covering the shiny Frosts' Sigh!

After completing all this, Suo Jia smiled confidently to himself. In regards to defense, not only did he have the Glacial Armor, he also had the interspatial ring's Space Shield on his left finger. After the effects of the Snow Lotus fruits, Suo Jia's current spirit power was enough for him to activate the Space Shield's absolute defense 100 times in succession without any difficulty.

Currently, the only thing aiding Suo Jia's fighting strength were two treasures; one was the defensive interspatial ring, and the other was the Frost's Sigh. Although the others were extremely formidable as well, such as Atlantis' Wisdom and the Faerie's Soul,

they did not play any roles in a fight.

Within the underground training area, Suo Jia took in a deep breath. His right hand skillfully made a waving motion and a blue-colored water stream instantly appeared from his hands. Although Suo Jia's skill in controlling water although did not improve by much after a year of cultivation, his ability to control the power of water had actually doubled. The thickness of the water stream that he could control had already grown from a wrist's size to an arm's size, increasing by more than double.

Seeing the river-like stream of blue water, Suo Jia could not help but furrow his eyebrows. Using the Revolving Frozen Gas to freeze the stream of water was not really worthwhile; the magic and spirit power costs to use it were really too high. Although it could allow the water stream to maintain a frozen state, if he met an expert, and couldn't achieve victory in a short period of time, this stalemate situation would quickly exhaust Suo Jia's magic power.

The Frozen Revolving Gas was a spell that Suo Jia had not grasped for a long period of time yet. Based on Suo Jia's current strength, he could at most only cast it three times, unless there was a long period of time between fights to recuperate, like today. Otherwise, his magic power would be completely consumed, and Suo Jia would not be able to persevere for any longer.

Moreover, although the Revolving Frozen Gas' power was quite large, only 20-30% of it was used by the ice stream. The majority of the cold air would randomly disperse over the area. The auxiliary type Revolving Frozen Gas wasn't suitable as a trump card for a battle; it was only a supplementary aid.



After encountering the wind warrior today, this problem perhaps wasn't a major one. However, once Suo Jia met with a senior warrior trainee, then without a doubt, his ice stream wouldn't be able to evade that lightning-fast blade. To a senior student, any casual attack could completely slice apart the ice stream. There were no chances of escaping this fate. Even a fire warrior would be able to easily achieve this.

In short, Suo Jia clearly understood that although defeating those his age wasn't a problem, defeating opponents that were older than him would provide obvious results. If he continued to use the Revolving Frozen Gas to activate the Ice Stream Technique, he would end up paralyzing himself under the strain. There was no way he would have the opportunity to win that way.

However, if the Revolving Frozen Gas wasn't used, then what else could Suo Jia use among the skills currently at Suo Jia's disposal? The Ice Sphere wouldn't do; once the Ice Sphere was used, the water stream would probably be smashed into pieces immediately. The Glacial Armor also couldn't be used; that was an automatic magic that set himself as its target. There was no way it could be used on the water stream.

After contemplating this for a while, Suo Jia finally realized that aside from the Revolving Frozen Gas, his other two magics were pretty much useless on the water stream...

Tightly knitting his brows together, Suo Jia painstakingly wracked his brains. He had already eliminated three ice magics. Suo Jia currently only had the Moisture Technique, the Swamp

Technique, the Meditation Technique, and the Ice and Snow Pact left!

Suo Jia's eyes couldn't help but light up at this thought. The moisture Technique, Swamp Technique, and the Meditation Technique obviously couldn't force the water stream into an ice stream. Aside from these, Suo Jia's only remaining hope was the Ice and Snow Pact.

While pondering this, Suo Jia suddenly extended his right hand. He penetrated through the water stream and in the next instant.....Suo Jia used all his energy to activate the Ice and Snow Pact. The blue glove on his right hand suddenly began to shoot out rays of bright blue light.

Kacha...Kacha...Kacha.....The powerful sounds rang out clearly. Starting from Suo Jia's hands, the entire water stream began to quickly freeze. In the blink of eye, the entire stream had become a thick and solid ice stream that emitted cold air in all directions!

After staring blankly for a bit, Suo Jia suddenly laughed out loud. He hadn't imagined that this Ice and Snow Pact could actually have such mystical effects. Seeing the cold mist steadily flowing around the stream of ice, Suo Jia knew that the Ice and Snow Pact combined with Frost's Sigh had lowered the temperature by another 10 degrees. And then because of the Frost's Sigh own effect, the temperature had been decreased by twofold. In other words, the water stream's current hardness and power level were two times more than Suo Jia's Ice Sphere.

# Chapter 109: Full Body Equipment (Part 1)

---

As everyone knows, Frost's Sigh could decrease the magic consumption of ice magic by 50%, increase the power of ice magic by 10%, as well as double the effects of the Ice and Snow Pact!

Generally, people thought of the Ice and Snow Pact as being similar to the practice of meditation. Most people had never thought of using it to attack and neither did they know that this Frost's Sigh actually possessed the ability to increase the power of the Ice and Snow Pact. In fact, the doubling of the cultivation effect of the Ice and Snow Pact and the doubling of the power were basically the same effect.

Excitedly dispersing the stream of water in his hands, Suo Jia once again stretched out his right palm. While he was controlling the water stream, he mustered all of his strength to activate the Ice and Snow Pact as well. Immediately... an unending stream of thick and solid ice leapt out. Under Suo Jia's control, the large ice stream revolved in a ten meter radius around Suo Jia.

Although it was only as thick as an arm and had a length of about nine meters, the stream would still make others exclaim in astonishment. The most important aspect of this ice stream was that, with the effects of both Faerie's Soul and Frost's Sigh, its temperature had actually reached negative 80 degrees! Even a slight graze would immediately result in frostbite!

That's not all; another important part was that the ice stream's hardness had also increased by several fold. It was extremely similar to regular steel. Upon seeing that it was comparable to an

embroidery needle tip, no one would doubt the ice stream's sharpness.

Excitedly laughing out loud, both of Suo Jia's hands waved upwards, commanding the giant, slender ice stream to encircle him in a flash. Violently dancing around Suo Jia, it had the appearance of a conscious snake spirit.

The reason why he was laughing so heartily was because Suo Jia was simply too joyous. This ice stream allowed Suo Jia to take the first step onto the correct path towards his dream. To Suo Jia, this was really an important event.

Everyone knew what Suo Jia yearned to be. It wasn't to become a powerful mage, but rather to become a powerful warrior. However... because he couldn't utilize battle qi, his body was not as sturdy. This kind of Suo Jia was unable to become a warrior, as a warrior only had a set of skills and techniques that were unique to the class, completely different from those of a mage.

The current Suo Jia, even with a sword or a large blade, would still be unable to stand off against any warriors. With his level of strength, a simple slash from them could split him in two; his technique, physique and weapon control were even at the point where nobody could be bothered to pay any heed to him.

However, with this ice stream, everything was different. The ice stream was a soft and flexible weapon, similar to a whip. Under Suo Jia's control, it could break away from his body and wander about within ten meters of him. No matter how fierce the enemy's attacks were, they would not be able to land a hit on Suo Jia's

body.

One could say that this ice stream allowed Suo Jia to enter the realm of magic-based martial arts. By relying on it, even if Suo Jia were to fight against a warrior at close range, he could still be victorious.

The strength, hardness, and temperature of Suo Jia's ice stream doubled his power. In addition, no matter how the enemy attacked, even if the stream was chopped in two by a blade, Suo Jia could still use the water controlling technique to control the ice stream. Furthermore, the ice stream's characteristic was that it allowed Suo Jia to have a nearly limitless method of attack.

Within the next three days, Suo Jia never left his house and instead, was completely engrossed in his detailed training. In the span of only three days, the Ice and Snow Pact and his water controlling technique both showed clear improvements, evidently due to his overwhelming concentration. The temperature of the ice stream had not only dropped even further, it had gotten marginally thicker as well.

After the three days, Suo Jia exited the training area with a thin and haggard appearance. He had finally finished the preliminary phase of combining the water controlling technique together with magic. Although, he was mentally exhausted, Suo Jia's confidence level had risen.

After arriving at school, Suo Jia did not say anything. He immediately rested his head on the table and fell asleep, without caring too much about how there was only an hour left before the

start of the competition. Suo Jia clearly knew that someone would wake him up when the competition was about to start.

At nine in the morning after the three days of training, the prologue of the grand inter-school championship had officially began. The participants eligible to take part in the tournament were not only the most powerful of their grades, but their abilities also far exceeded anyone of the same age. If not for this, who would willingly risk losing their noble titles by challenging experts that were more powerful than them?

When Suo Jia was woken up from his sleep, the ceremony had already reached the important segment. One of Holy Light's high ranking officials was already seated next to the competition area, and the judge had already notified the contestants to come up on stage.

In an effort to improve his mental state, he casually cast a Moisture Technique on himself, and after the long sleep, Suo Jia's magic and spirit power were already pretty much restored. Although he wasn't in his ideal condition, Suo Jia was not worried; even if the spirit power needed for his new battle method was high, the magic power required wasn't.

Drowsy-eyed and exhausted, Suo Jia went on stage. He silently closed his eyes and continued immersing himself in his half-conscious state as his body swayed. However, he had not realized that the group of distinguished guests, as well as the surrounding students, had already locked their gazes locked onto this mysterious youngster.

The high-ranked citizens of Holy Light City weren't the only ones who had come to watch this competition, even the entire student body of Holy Light Academy had gathered here to watch the annual tournament.

Just as Suo Jia was overcome with drowsiness, the booming sound of the gun-salute rang out as the Duke of Holy Light City stood up and spoke, "Ladies and gentleman! In order to encourage everyone, the one who reigns over this competition will earn the rights to enter Holy Light's treasury and select any one weapon or piece of equipment!"

"Wa!" Although they knew about this a long time ago, when the Lord of Holy Light City once again confirmed it, the entire student body still could not help but shout in envy.

Sweeping his gaze in an imposing manner, Duke Wen Sha continued, "Before the start of the competition, I still need to once again remind the participating students: Your current nobility status was awarded to you by the Holy Light Emperor and is extremely precious. As long as you have this nobility status, you can separate yourself from the common folk."

Pausing for a moment, Duke Wen Sha continued, "Today's competition is conducted according to the laws of the empire. The winner has the opportunity to obtain the rise in nobility status that was previously given to the the loser. You can only find this kind of opportunity in Holy Light. This represents the Emperor of Holy Light Empire's love and your importance to him!"

Speaking up to this point, Duke Wen Sha's expression suddenly

became serious and he cautioned in a heavy tone, “All of the student participants should think about their decision. Once you enter this competition, then there is a chance that you will lose your nobility title. My attendance today represents that of the Holy Light Emperor’s, and be a witness to these events!”

After reaffirming and reiterating the importance of nobility titles and risks they would face should they choose to enter, Duke Wen Sha’s impassioned speech had finally come to an end. However, everyone on that stage had already thought it through, and were resolute in their decision not to quit. Frankly speaking, they would not have waited until now if they were going to change their minds. To shrink back on the approaching battlefield was something they were unwilling to do.

The competition was about to formally begin after Duke Wen Sha’s speech had ended. Since the competition was for the younger participants to challenge the older students, as the youngest one, Suo Jia had the rights to choose any opponent he wished.

What’s worth mentioning was that the younger batch of students between 8-12 year olds were the ones who would be issuing challenges. They could not be picked as an opponent by those who were older. In addition, although it was said that the younger generation of students had to challenge someone who was at least 3 grades higher than they were, in actuality, Suo Jia had to challenge a student 5 grades higher; namely someone of at least 13 years of age.

At the same time, the experts that were 17-18 years old could not challenge anyone. They could only wait for the others to challenge



them. Furthermore, they were not the same as the champions of the other age groups; it was compulsory for them to join this competition. Normally the champion would be from the 17-18 age group.

TL note: For those who don't understand, Suo Jia can only challenge a student at least three years older than him. However, because most students do not want to risk losing their nobility titles, they do not participate, forcing Suo Jia to face someone much older.

## Chapter 110: Full Body Equipment (Part 2)

---

Suo Jia frowned as he looked at the competition timetable that was handed to him by the judge. Because nobody in the 8-13 age groups were taking part in the competition, Suo Jia was the only challenger among these age groups. The first person that Suo Jia could challenge was actually a 14 years old fire mage!

Suo Jia tightly knitted his brows. Even though 14 year olds were not that old, Suo Jia was still only 8 years old. The opposing side's age was almost two times his age. Most importantly, within Suo Jia's 8 years of life, there were 4-5 years where he didn't understand or remember anything.

In introspect, even though the opposing side was only 14 years old, they had spent 6, almost 7 years, in the academy. But what about Suo Jia? He had only attended the academy for barely a year. The time they spent within the academy to learn and cultivate was 7 times more than Suo Jia had! Furthermore, they were one of the powerful fire mages.

A fire mage was the most powerful among the other mage classes. They possessed the most powerful attacking spells, as well as the highest destructive power! Nobody dared to confront a fire mage. As a mage trainee, their formidability could not be questioned.

The fire mage apprentices had already grasped the Fire Ball, Sea of Fire, and Soulfire Circle magics. On the other hand, fire mage trainees knew the Great Fireball, Fire Wall, and the Raging Flames of Defiance; this mean that the power of their Fire Arts were greatly raised.

After muttering to himself for a bit, Suo Jia was able to reach a definitive decision: his first opponent would be—a 14 year old fire mage. Seeing that Suo Jia had chosen him, the fire mage couldn't help but look excited. In his opinion, Suo Jia's noble rank would undoubtedly become his!

Perhaps some people would wonder; since everyone already knew the Suo Jia had displayed that his abilities were on the mage trainee level, then why was his opponent confident enough to dare to face off against Suo Jia?

Actually, aside from the winners of the 17-18 year old groups, as long as any other grade victors took part in this competition, they were definitely unyielding. They weren't even afraid of fighting those three years older than them; how could they possibly be afraid of one three years younger? Just like Suo Jia, they had absolute self-confidence, hence they were brave enough to come forth. Otherwise, who would dare to play around with their nobility rank?

After Suo Jia had chosen his opponent, one by one, the others began to leave the arena, and the entire area grew silent. Although the thousands of students were gathered around to watch, none of them made a sound.

Arrogantly sticking out his chest, the fire mage gently stretched his arm towards his back and pulled out his staff. Immediately.....a sparkling, translucent fire staff surrounded by a red glow came into view.

Suo Jia suddenly frowned at the opposite party's staff. He had seen this staff before; Suo Jia had recently run around to view various warrior weapon stores and the bazaar to look around. Suo Jia's understanding and knowledge about weapons and magic equipment was now extremely extensive.

This staff seemed to have been carved out of crystal; it was quite a good one. Although it wasn't a High-ranked staff, it was still undoubtedly the best possible option for a mage trainee. There were more than 100 million other staffs better than this one. However, Suo Jia knew that no matter how superior the staff was, if one cannot draw out all the power within it, it'd be pointless even if one used it as a hammer.

This was an Ideal-ranked staff, with a price of around ten million gold coins. Its special feature was that it could compress fire. It could notably shrink a huge Fire Ball, increasing its speed. Most importantly, once the tiny Fire Ball hit its target, all of its compressed energy would be released in an instant, causing a violent explosion!

If one were to say that the Freezing Staff could allow one to turn a Water Sphere into an Ice Sphere, directly jumping into the ranks of ice system spells, then this Concentrated Flame Staff's ability would be to allow a normal Fire Ball to condense into a tiny fire essence. This would result in a middle rank spell — Violent Fire Ball.

That was not all there was to it. If one looked at the other party, his ten white fingers were all sporting bright red rings. Suo Jia noticed that each of those fingers wore a Ruby Ring, and in total,

increased the fire mage's fire system power by 50%! In addition, each of those Ruby Rings could lessen fire system spells' magic power consumption by 5%. With the ten rings added together, it reduced the magic consumption by 50%.

The most ridiculous part was that the fire mage had a row of holes on his earlobe and wore 5 pairs Lightning Flint Earrings on each ear. These earrings could increase the speed and power of fire magic by 50%.

This was far from all he had. The opponent's wrist was densely packed with a total of ten bracelets, five on the right and five on the left. It raised the fire mage's control over fire system magic by 100%, and increased the casting speed by 100%!

The necklace worn around the opponent's neck was hidden by the clothes, making Suo Jia unable to identify it. However, Suo Jia was able to estimate that the fire mage was wearing four or five necklaces from the chain that was revealed around the neck. At the very least, it could increase the opposing party's magic recovery speed by 100%. Adding on to the Ruby Rings that increased his magic power by 50%, the fire mage could most likely madly release unlimited explosions.

Seeing this scene, Suo Jia couldn't help but sigh in admiration. Could this guy still be considered human? He was practically a moving fortress armed to the limit. Even though it completely neglected the defence, the opponent had enough firepower to crush any kinds of attacks.

Laughing bitterly, Suo Jia couldn't help but shake his head to

himself. It was not that he never thought of arming himself with equipment, it was just that he had never thought about equipping himself to the brim like his opponent. With this, grasping victory would be much easier.

However, as the hero who was going to create a new history, the only consequences of doing this was people ridiculing him. That would be equal to placing himself on the stage to let people curse and sneer at him. How could one be considered a hero if they relied on equipment and magic items to win?

On the other hand, the fire mage evidently did not have this problem. He had only thought about obtaining that nobility title, and for that sake, he had not spared any cost, as he covered his entire body with magic equipment. Although these were all middle-rank mage equipment, they were still all Ideal-ranked magic equipment. Adding together all of the equipment the fire mage wore today, it was worth even more than several hundred millions.

Suo Jia cherished his reputation, so he would never allow himself to fall to this level. Moreover... magic items were just like opium; once one got accustomed to it, they wouldn't be able to break away from it. The spell would just be relying on the magic item's effects to be cast. One would slowly lose all their creativity and imagination. There would be no need to cultivate so much, and all of one's spirit power would be used on the magic equipment.

Suo Jia also paid close attention to magic equipment, but the ones he picked were all auxiliary equipment. Atlantis' Wisdom always kept him in a meditative state, Faerie's Soul gave him a

faerie's physique, and Frost's Sigh increased the effects of the Ice and Snow Pact by 100%. The only item that had any use in actual combat was the interspatial ring, and that was Suo Jia's lifesaving treasure.

While Suo Jia was observing his opponent, the opponent was also observing him. When the fire mage saw that Suo Jia was empty handed from top to bottom, not carrying any magic equipment, he could not help but laugh with confidence. After wearing his entire set of magic equipment, the fire mage's strength had already increased to that of an elementary mage's. It didn't matter if his opponent was 17-18 years old expert, the fire mage still had enough confidence to fight against them, let alone an eight years old child!

Beneath the platform, the female lecturer, Aila, and Aimi were all jumping up and down from anxiety. Aila and Aimi were cursing the shameless fire mage for using too many magic artifacts. Even if he beat his opponent this way, it would have no relevance to his actual strength. His opponent would fall to the magic items.

The female instructor scolded Suo Jia because she had already warned this youngster repeatedly; no matter what, he should at least get a staff. But look at him now, that guy had actually gone onto the stage empty handed. Did he think of himself as a boxer?

On the other side, Duke Wen Sha was stroking his chin as he sat in his VIP seat, his gaze locked onto Suo Jia. Duke Wen Sha didn't think that the fire mage's usage of magic equipment was unfair; that was still strength. The experienced Duke Wen Sha only looked for results, no matter the methods. The reality was just like this; in a war, the loser was always in the wrong. Nobody ever bothered to

listen to the loser's complaints, and would only sing praises to the victor.

However, as a veteran expert, Duke Wen Sha also knew that a true expert wouldn't lose to inanimate objects. Although the great 7 experts had all used complete Epic-ranked equipment sets, they would've still been extremely formidable without their equipment as well. They were using the equipment, rather than the equipment using them; their original strength was above the equipment's. Otherwise, how could they truly harness the magic item's power?

However, this fire mage no doubt had become strong due to magic equipment. Rather than saying that he was using magic equipment, it was more accurate to say that the magic equipment was using him.

Duke Wen Sha was very curious and looked at Suo Jia attentively; just how did this empty handed youngster plan to defeat the fire mage who was equipped to the brim? Seeing the calm expression on Suo Jia's face, Duke Wen Sha firmly believed that Suo Jia wouldn't lose if he was as awesome as his daughter had described. At the very least, he wouldn't lose very badly.



# Chapter 111: The First Victory (Part 1)

---

The audience waited in anticipation. Finally....the referee stood up with a severe expression on his face. He raised his right hand high up in the air, and declared, “The two contestants on the stage, get ready....competition....start!” The referee then threw his hand downwards.

The next instant....the fire mage suddenly began to move. The staff in his hand lit up, and it began to burn fiercely as a fist sized bright red Fire Ball whizzed out towards Suo Jia.

“Bang!” Although Suo Jia had managed to successfully dodge the Fire Ball, he hadn’t imagined that the Fire Ball would violently explode upon colliding with the ground. Shards of rock flew out and pierced Suo Jia, inflicting deep cuts into his skin.

But this wasn’t the end; the opposite party clearly had no intention of stopping. His staff once again lit up and began to release Fire Balls one after another towards Suo Jia. With the aid of his magic equipment, both the magic’s activation speed and projectile speed reached extreme levels.

In reality, although the opposite party’s activation speed was fast, it wasn’t faster than Suo Jia’s. However, Suo Jia understood that if he attacked his opponent, he’d be the one to suffer. His opponent had been training for 6-7 more years than he had, and wasn’t lacking in magic equipment. Both his opponent’s spirit power and magic power were superior to Suo Jia’s.

Because he was considering this, Suo Jia didn't attack. Instead, he chose to continue evading. However, he hadn't realized that his opponent's attacks would be so fierce. It was only the beginning of the match, yet Suo Jia had already been indirectly hit. The scattering shards had created wounds on Suo Jia's body one after another.

Under the audience's attentive gazes, the fire mage seemed like a madman. He continuously shot out Fire Balls, generating muffled bangs as everything around Suo Jia was blasted away. Smoke and dust filled the air, and it soon completely hid Suo Jia's figure. Despite this, the fire mage still didn't stop. He continued to wave the staff in his hand to shoot out Fire Balls to blast through the smoke. Although he couldn't lock onto his target, he was still able to continue attacking with the hope of hitting his target with his staff's especially explosive power.

The audience all gaped in shock at this scene. What in the world was this? This was way too powerful! This firepower could definitely suppress any enemy. Almost everyone was now completely sure that Suo Jia would lose!

On the other side, within the thick and dense smoke, Suo Jia stood with dozens of wounds covering his body. He felt the continuous Fireballs explode nearby, and knew that this was the major point of the match. If he tried to attack too early, he would lose the competition.

Roaring in anger, Suo Jia suddenly waved his arms. Under his powerful manipulation, a whirlpool of water instantly appeared with Suo Jia as its center. Suo Jia's right arm swiftly dances, his

finger drawing shapes into the air, and momentarily activating Revolving Frozen Gas. The spiral of cold air began to spread out around Suo Jia.

The water whirlpool was rotating clockwise, while the cold air was rotating counterclockwise. If anyone saw this, they'd discover that the tide of cold air was quickly being absorbed by the whirlpool. Having been restricted by the whirlpool, the cold air was confined and couldn't diffuse.

After a stream of clear and concentrated sounds, the vortex that was 1 meter wide and two meters tall instantly froze, and formed a sturdy, shining, vortex of ice!

Not daring to tarry, Suo Jia suddenly reached further and activated the Ice and Snow Pact onto the ice vortex to lower its temperature. The vortex's strength and hardness were boosted by several-fold. Even the fierce Fireballs currently blasting the vortex head on did no damage.

Seeing that the ice vortex was successful, Suo Jia couldn't help but exhale in relief. Although describing it takes a long time, from the time Suo Jia materialized the water whirlpool, activated Revolving Frozen Gas, froze the whirlpool, to when he finally combined it into the ice vortex with the aid of the Ice and Snow Pact, the whole process took only about 1-2 seconds. Actually, Suo Jia had prepared to use Revolving Frozen Gas from the beginning; otherwise, he wouldn't have gotten this far.

Not daring to overlook any of the opponent's explosions, Suo Jia activated the Moisture Technique on all of his wounds. The cuts

made from the shards of rock quickly recovered. By the time the fire mage had finally stopped his assault, Suo Jia's wounds had all already healed. Suo Jia had even managed to rest for a bit.

“Wa!” Along with the gradual dispersion of the smoke, the entire audience finally saw the sparkling bright and translucent protective barrier of the ice vortex. Despite bearing the fire mage's explosive attacks, the barrier showed no signs of cracking. It was like a great diamond, and it sparkled as it reflected the sun's rays.

Everyone had to admit that the fire mage's attack had far surpassed the mage trainee level, almost at the level of an elementary mage. However, they also had to admit that Suo Jia's defense had the capability of resisting an elementary mage's violent and explosive attacks!

The terrifying part of a fire mage was their extremely dominating firepower and their gigantic Area Of Effect spells. However...as long as these were resisted, then there wasn't much left of the fire mages as their defenses were extremely weak. Fire shields and Wind shields were fine, but they were intangible items. How could they possibly compare to the ice shield, which was comparable to a stone shield? This was something that even idiots understood.

Hugging his arms together, Suo Jia stood within the ice vortex and calmly said, “What? Are you done attacking?”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the fire mage couldn't help but be at a loss for a while. Then he suddenly waved the staff in his hand, and once again tried to blast the ice shield. A fire mage's battle meant it was full of only attacking, and nothing else. They used powerful

firepower to completely defeat their opponents; this was the only combat method they could use.

However, if their opponent was powerful enough to completely ignore their Fire Arts attacks and negate their attacks, then the fire mages would be unable to flee. They could only wait until the moment their magic power and spirit power ran out, and then be easily wiped out by their opponent.

Faced with the fire mage's wild explosive attacks, Suo Jia couldn't help but hug his arms together and feel his spirits rise. After waiting for a long time, the opponent's attacks showed no trace of stopping; they were still just as fierce as before. This made Suo Jia furrow his brows in confusion.

Although maintaining a sturdy defense could also lead to victory, this type of win was extremely meaningless. Moreover, Suo Jia had no desire to act like a tortoise. He didn't like locking himself up within a shell. For the sake of being more persuasive, he had to personally act and defeat his opponent!

While thinking deeply, Suo Jia quietly shut his eyes. Although the smoke obscured his vision completely.... he could still tell the opponent's position by observing the landing point and trajectory of the opponent's magic.

Putting aside Suo Jia, who was silently calculating and determining the position of his opponent amidst the smoke, the audience on the other side was currently staring in a daze at the strange scene in front of them. The powerful fire mage relying on a full body of equipment was currently crazily bombarding the area

all around Suo Jia. Smoke rose high up into the air, completely hiding Suo Jia from view.

“Chi...” Just as the audience was silently wondering whether it would be Suo Jia who would be unable to keep up his defense or whether it would be the fire mage who would run out of magic power first, a low whizzing sound and a blue light suddenly shot out from within the smoke. The light shot straight towards the fire mage, who had just finished releasing a Fireball.

Two round balls of magic, one red and one blue, flew towards each other. They crossed each other midway, and then continued on straight towards their respective targets. Afterwards....as the Fire Ball gave a loud boom, the Ice Sphere managed to collide into the fire mage's chest, who was completely unable to dodge.

Staring blankly at the fire mage, whose body had just been thrown through the air, the audience was unable to understand what had just happened. At that moment, a blue light flashed from within the smoke once more, and an Ice Sphere shot through the air and towards the fire mage. Once again, it accurately landed on its target.

“Putong...” After suffering two powerful attacks in succession, the fire mage finally fell to the ground weakly, his body curled up in pain. A single glance was enough to tell that he had completely lost his ability to continue fighting. Even his life was in imminent peril.

## Chapter 112: The First Victory (Part 2)

---

“Good!” Although Suo Jia was still hidden within the smoke, making the audience unable to determine his status, Duke Wen Sha still banged his fist onto the table, shouting in excitement.

Any perceptive and experienced expert could tell that the counterattack just now contained intelligence that an 8-year old child should not have!

In reality, the fire mage hadn't let his guard down. He had first used the explosions to cause the dust to obscure Suo Jia's vision, and then he constantly moved around to continuously bombard Suo Jia with spells. That way, Suo Jia wouldn't have had any way of determining the fire mage's position.

However, although he hadn't been able to see with his eyes, Suo Jia's magic still accurately landed on its target. Suo Jia had calculated the fire mage's general location from the spells' trajectories. After going through more comprehensive analysis, Suo Jia had also been able to distinguish the fire mage's movement habits, and was thus even able to determine the fire mage's future locations.

Basically, Suo Jia had blindly managed to hit an invisible, moving target 50 meters away from him. Moreover, he had not only landed his attack once, but twice. Suo Jia had been able to completely simulate his opponent's movements and state of mind. Otherwise, there was no way Suo Jia could've accomplished such a feat.

Moreover, Suo Jia had intelligently taken advantage of the instant the fire mage had paused after having finished casting a magic. Without this, even if Suo Jia continued to launch secret attacks, the fire mage could perhaps counter them with Fireballs. If the two collided, there'd be no way Suo Jia could discern the fire mage's position.

Time, opportunity, analysis, and mental state....in regards to all aspects, Suo Jia had completely defeated his opponent. The fire mage had been fully equipped all the way up to his teeth and even used such explosive Fireballs. Yet, the situation of the battle had been overturned by two uses of the most basic ice magic — the Ice Sphere Technique. The wisdom used behind this method was equivalent to that of a 50-year old sage's!

Finally, the audience watched as the smoke gradually dispersed. Suo Jia's figure appeared under everyone's watchful gazes; Suo Jia, that fellow, had actually made an ice chair and was currently sitting on it while putting on airs. Both his eyes were closed and he was in a state of recuperation. God!? What kind of attitude was this? Was this an action that someone facing a powerful enemy would have?

Seeing Suo Jia comfortably sitting on his ice chair, Duke Wen Sha's gaze was filled with admiration and praise. This child was indeed how his daughter had described him; too intelligent and too wise! This child's future was really too unfathomable!

Sighing in admiration, Duke Wen Sha shook his head and slowly stood up, "I hereby declare that the victory of this challenge competition is the first grade water mage — Suo Jia!"



Hearing Duke Wen Sha's voice, Suo Jia slowly opened his eyes. He leisurely stood up, and gracefully greeted Duke Wen Sha with the proper noble's etiquette. However, he remained completely silent.

Amused by Suo Jia's calm expression, Duke Wen Sha smiled and said, "Congratulations, Lord Suo Jia. You have won this round, and have earned another opportunity to raise your noble rank!"

Suo Jia wordlessly smiled at Duke Wen Sha's words. As before, he was quietly recovering. He understood well that unless he abandoned the competition now, his next opponents would only be stronger and stronger.

As expected, Duke Wen Sha continued to talk with Suo Jia, "How about it? Do you want to continue challenging, or do you want to stop now?" Duke Wen Sha felt a bit conflicted; although he really wanted to watch Suo Jia continue fighting, his rationale was telling him that ending here would be the smartest action.

Suo Jia's eyes suddenly lit up at Duke Wen Sha's question. He locked gazes with Duke Wen Sha, and Suo Jia said resolutely, "I choose to continue the challenging!"

"Good!" Duke Wen Sha declared, "Since you still want to continue challenging, then you can now choose your next opponent. At the same time....you will have 30 minutes to rest."

Suo Jia fished out the timetable and began to examine it closely.

He had already beaten the 14 year old fire mage, and none of the 15 or 16 year olds were participating. His current choices were only a 17 year old wind warrior, and an 18 year old fire warrior.

Suo Jia couldn't help but furrow his brows as he examined the timetable. This wind warrior was a super genius. He had the nickname of being the "star of speed"; his speed was so fast that it seemed like he could race straight to the moon. Even a powerful fire warrior would be completely unable to go against this wind warrior. The most extreme part was that according to this school's records, his victory rate against mages was 100%! This wind warrior even gave a grand speech in the start of the competition, declaring that he was the bane of all mages. Even those that were much stronger than him wouldn't be his equal.

As for the fire warrior, not much more needed to be explained. That guy had already been at the academy for 10 years. Within these 10 years, he'd always been his grade's champion. Moreover....for the past 3 years, he was able to continuously completely overwhelm the wind warriors, and had become the final champion of the entire inter-championship competition. This was his last time participating in the competition, and his only goal was to become the overall champion for the fourth time in succession!

Suo Jia's expression became pained as he looked over these two people's details. The wind warrior who was the bane of all mages, or the fire warrior who was the reigning champion within Holy Light for the past 4 years? One was 17, and one was 18, while Suo Jia had only lived for a fraction of their lives. Did he really have to continue fighting through this competition?

Suo Jia tightly closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He knew that if his goal was a mere noble rank, it was better to simply give up now. However, his goal wasn't the rank; his sole goal was to create history and become the champion!

Suo Jia's nervous heart finally calmed down. He slowly opened his eyes and said in a heavy tone, "The next person I want to challenge is the wind warrior!"

"Wa!" All the people in the audience cried out in shock. They all looked at Suo Jia with gazes of pity; in their opinions, Suo Jia was definitely screwed.

Perhaps the wind warrior wasn't as strong as the fire warrior, but the fire warrior had also lost to many mages before. On the other hand, the wind warrior had never lost to any type of mage. To any mage, the wind warrior was much more formidable than the fire warrior!

Everyone knew that if Suo Jia faced against the fire warrior, there would be at least a slight sliver of hope. However, against the wind warrior's ridiculous speed, no mage would be able to do anything about it.

Actually, if it weren't on a stage, perhaps the wind warrior wouldn't be so formidable. However, this platform was only about 50m wide. There was nowhere to run. Once one left the platform, it would count as their loss! In a situation like this, the wind warrior's specialty pretty much forced all mages to helplessly lose. In reality, mages weren't really suitable for fighting on areas like this; platforms were the warriors' realm!

After choosing his opponent, Suo Jia went back to lying on his chair. He closed his eyes, and focused all his efforts on recovering his magic and spirit power. The next battle would be one of matchless difficulty and he could easily lose. If he couldn't recover his spirit power before the start of the round, then Suo Jia might as well forfeit the match.

30 minutes is a very long amount of time, but there are some occasions where it passes in the blink of an eye. Suo Jia felt that he had only just closed his eyes before his time was already up.

Perplexed, Suo Jia slowly woke up and rubbed his eyes. He then casted two Moisture Techniques to recover his spirit and clear his mind. Although he had just taken a short nap, Suo Jia had finally managed to recover to his peak state before the intense battle would begin!

Slowly standing up, Suo Jia walked over the edge of the platform. A battle between a mage and a warrior was always a battle of distance. Although Suo Jia used the ice stream, he didn't dare to be careless. He'd have to first increase the distance between him and his opponent and test around for the wind warrior's characteristics before doing anything else!

A wind warrior covered in golden armor strode up to the platform with a magnificent sword at his waist. The noon sun's rays reflected off of his golden armor in strands, making him look like a war god as he walked over.

The wind warrior's handsome face, his natural and unrestrained poise, his tall and straight posture, and his celebrity-like temperament all seemed to belong to a monarch's. His expression of extreme self-confidence made it impossible for anyone to imagine him losing!

Leisurely standing in front of Suo Jia, the wind warrior elegantly waved at the audience. Immediately afterwards....countless shrill shrieks from girls rang out. Suo Jia couldn't help but bitterly smile at this. What exactly was he doing? Giving a performance? It looked like....he viewed Suo Jia as completely unimportant.

Suo Jia smiled darkly. Very good....The wind warrior could be arrogant and show off all he wanted right now. In a moment, Suo Jia would let him understand the consequences of belittling him! Even if Suo Jia didn't win, he was determined to destroy him until people wouldn't be able to distinguish if he was alive or dead; Suo Jia wanted to see how the wind warrior could act so arrogant then. This was the warrior's punishment for being so disrespectful to Suo Jia!

Hehe, aside from the grade-level competition, there was no other battle that could be won so easily. Otherwise, wouldn't it become a chaotic mess?

# Chapter 113: Knowledge To Face Poisonous Fangs (Part 1)

---

The wind warrior had been occupied with greeting the shrieking girls in the audience the entire time he was onstage, and he had never paid any attention to Suo Jia from start to finish. Looking at his natural expression, it was evident that he really did not care about Suo Jia in the slightest.

‘Time Out!’ Just when the referee was about to announce the start of the match, the female lecturer firmly gestured with her hand from outside of the stage and signaled the referee to temporarily suspend the match.

Faced with the female lecturer’s request, the referee immediately agreed to stop the match temporarily. As an academic adviser, she was permitted to request a short duration time-out to give some advice to her students before the start of the match.

Suo Jia knitted his brows upon seeing the female lecturer shout for the time-out and soon after, he slowly left the stage. Seeing Suo Jia drawing nearer, the female lecturer pulled Suo Jia to a corner where no one was around. She swung her arm around Suo Jia’s neck and said in a low voice, “Suo Jia, you sure are courageous. The match hasn’t begun yet, so you still have a chance to withdraw. Listen to me, you’re definitely not fit to be his opponent. Even though I can use the Frost Arrow, I would still lose to him if I was to go up on that stage!”

Hearing the lecturer’s words, Suo Jia couldn’t help but frown as he began to feel more wary about the wind warrior. He hadn’t

expected that this guy would have already attained such tyrannical strength. Even his lecturer couldn't help but admit that she wasn't a match for him.

While Suo Jia was pondering over this, the lecturer continued, "This guy was nicknamed the Lightning Wind Warrior. His speed is so fast that there's absolutely no way one can see him clearly. In the blink of an eye, he can cover 10 meters of distance. At the most crucial moment, he will be able to attack with the Lightning Wind Thorn once he's within 20 meters of you. This so-called Lightning Wind Thorn is a flying needle; it can attack any enemy within a 20 meters radius. Its speed is as fast as an arrow's!"

"Heavens!" Suo Jia finally realized after listening the the lecturer's words that this time-out was indispensable. Otherwise, he wouldn't have known anything and gotten injured by this Lightning Wind Thorn.

The lecturer continued, "You absolutely cannot underestimate this Lightning Wind Thorn. He has a total of two Lightning Wind Thorns, and they are Legendary-ranked magic equipment, and they're rumored to have the ability to pierce through magic. No matter what type of magical defense one has, it is impossible to guard against these needles at all. Even if you use the Whirling Ice you used just now, I fear that you still wouldn't be able to block them. This is precisely the reason why he is known as the bane of mages! Until now, there has not been a single person who has successfully avoided his second Lightning Wind Thorn."

Sighing in admiration, he lifted his head and looked at Lightning Wind Warrior. Suo Jia could not help but laugh bitterly; this was

simply too outrageous. That Lightning Wind Thorn might not be something that warriors feared; after all... a warrior's armor was sufficient to guard against a needle sized Lightning Wind Thorn. However, this wasn't the case for mages, as the mage robes that mages wore had basically no defensive capabilities.

In actuality, the Lightning Wind Thorn would not cause a mage to lose their life, and it wouldn't even cause the mage to suffer from any fatal injuries. However, due to the Lightning Wind Thorn's magic piercing ability, it would temporarily cause a mage to lose control over their magic and become an ordinary person. Think about it, how could an ordinary person defeat a tyrannical wind warrior?

The female lecturer said in a low voice, "You need to pay careful attention; this Lightning Wind Thorn is without shadow or form and it doesn't even make a sound. There is only a single thread of golden light for you to determine the trajectory of the attacks."

Hearing the female lecturer's words, although Suo Jia's brows furrowed more and more tightly, his mind became more and more excited. The stronger his opponent, the more his fighting spirit would increase. No matter what, this was a match that he had to participate in.

Since he decided that he had to participate in this match, within this limited period of time, Suo Jia gathered as much information on his opponent as possible. The Lightning Wind Warrior actually possessed extremely formidable techniques. First was the Lightning Wind Charge; once launched, he could cover a ten meter distance in a flash. Next were the Lightning Wind Thorns. Within



20 meters, he could shoot out his two piercing legendary magical equipment — Magic Forbidding Divine Needle! Battle Forbidding Divine Needle! Once struck by these embroidery sized needles, mages would be unable to use magic, and warriors would be unable to use battle qi, .

Of course in reality, the two divine needles each had different uses. One prohibited the use of magic, while the other prohibited the use of battle qi. If a warrior was hit with a Magic Forbidding Divine Needle, then there would not be any effect and would only cause a slight pain. Likewise, if a mage was hit with a Battle Forbidding Divine Needle, then nothing would happen either. Truthfully, only when the two needles were added together could they seal everything!

It was precisely because of these two great battle techniques that the opposing side had become the bane of mages, and become the well-known Lightning Wind Warrior. Apart from these, he wasn't very different from the typical wind warrior.

Thinking up to here, Suo Jia bowed his head towards his lecturer in appreciation, and then turned around to walk onto the competition area. Seeing Suo Jia's resolute look, the female lecturer could not help but stare blankly after him. She really could not understand: even though he knew that he was going to lose, why did he still want to participate?

While the lecturer was wondering this, Suo Jia had already returned to the competition area. As soon as he arrived, Lightning Wind Warrior proudly said in a voice that everyone could hear, "Brat, since your lecturer has advised you for so long, I believe that

it is still better if you don't fight this match. In reality, even if it was not you but instead your lecturer, the result would not be any different. The Magic Forbidding Divine Needle can restrict any magic under the heavens!"

Hearing his opponent's words, Suo Jia could not help but feel a dark anger surge from within his heart. From the very beginning, his opponent had never placed him on equal ground. This was also one of the reasons why Suo Jia had decided to endure this round despite perfectly understanding that this was a difficult match to win. A competition could be lost, but a person couldn't lose!

However even now, the opposing party did not give him any face, and even humiliated Suo Jia's lecturer in front of so many people. It should be known that....this was a really impudent act, and extremely shaming. What was he implying when he said that it would not make a difference even if his lecturer came up? He was obviously looking down on other people.

Suo Jia took a deep breath, and glared at Lightning Wind Warrior intensely before saying, "Since you have so much confidence, would you be willing to make a bet with me?"

"Make a bet?" Looking at Suo Jia in confusion, Lightning Wind Warrior said in confusion, "What do you want to bet? What is there to bet? Or could you be you trying to bet on the outcome of this match?"

Nodding his head, Suo Jia's eyes glowed as he said, "You are correct. We are precisely betting on who the winner and loser will be. If I lose, not only will I grant you the nobility title that I just

won, but I will also give you the nobility title I won from my grade level competition! However... if you lose, your two divine needles will belong to me!”

“What!” Looking at Suo Jia in shock, Lightning Wind Warrior said in disbelief, “God! You are letting me receive so many easy advantages? This... if I don’t agree to this, wouldn’t I be a fool?”

“Hahahaha...” Speaking up to here, Lightning Wind Warrior laughed loudly towards the sky. While laughing loudly, Lightning Wind Warrior resolutely declared, “Alright, since you are stupid enough to gift your nobility titles to me, how could I not accept? Let’s bet!”

## Chapter 114: Knowledge To Face Poisonous Fangs (Part 2)

---

Hearing Lightning Wind Warrior's words, Suo Jia smiled. He turned around and gestured respectfully at Duke Wen Sha, "Duke Wen Sha, please act as our witness. That way, nobody can take back their words later!"

Duke Wen Sha nodded, then turned to face the Lightning Wind Warrior with a smile on his face, "In that case, let me confirm: Lightning Wind Warrior, do you agree to make this bet with Suo Jia?"

"I agree! Why wouldn't I? I hope that Duke Wen Sha will be fair, I'm afraid this brat will lose and try to back out!" Lightning Wind Warrior laughed.

Loftily narrowing his eyes at Lightning Wind Warrior, Duke Wen Sha coldly said, "I, Duke Wen Sha, always keep my word. Since I am acting as witness, you two had better not even think of reneging. If either of you show even the slightest hint of breaking your words, I will kill him on the spot!" While saying this, a red light exploded out of Duke Wen Sha's entire body.

Sensing Duke Wen Sha's aura, the Lightning Wind Warrior couldn't help but wet his lips. Duke Wen Sha was a legendary warrior with great strength, and a single strike from the Duke was enough to defeat more than even 100 Lightning Wind Warriors added together.

While the Lightning Wind Warrior was inwardly sighing in admiration, Wen Sha continued in a dignified voice, “Suo Jia, Lightning Wind, do both of you confirm your participation in this bet? This is the last time I will ask. There will be no other chances to back out after this final inquiry. If you back out later, you will not only automatically lose the bet, but I will also kill you on the spot!”

Hearing Duke Wen Sha’s words, Suo Jia nodded resolutely and replied, “That’s right, I am willing to bet my two noble rank advancements against him. I request the Duke to be my witness!”

As soon as Suo Jia finished speaking, Lightning Wind Warrior also loudly replied, “I am also willing to bet. I voluntarily bet my two Divine Needles. If I lose, the Divine Needles will belong to him!”

“Good!” Duke Wen Sha declared, “In that case, the bet is established. No one can back out, and any renouncers will die!”

“Hahahaha....” As soon as Duke Wen Sha finished speaking, Suo Jia suddenly broke out into laughter. Everyone watched in shock as Suo Jia laughed so hard that tears came out of his eyes.

After a long time, Suo Jia finally ceased laughing with some difficulty. Gasping for breath, he wiped away his tears and turned to gesture respectfully at the Duke, “Duke Wen Sha, Suo Jia requests you to keep the gambled items!”

Hearing Suo Jia, Duke Wen Sha was shocked for a minute.

However, he soon broke out into laughter just like how Suo Jia had laughed. While laughing heartily, Wen Sha was also admiring Suo Jia to death. This child was so intelligent that he had even managed to hide facts from the Duke.

Originally, Duke Wen Sha had thought that Suo Jia would have some other methods to deal with the Divine Needles. Just a moment ago, Duke Wen Sha was still secretly guessing to himself just what kind of methods Suo Jia could possibly use against these special Divine Needles that were specialized to fight mages, so much to the point that he had enough confidence to even dare to bet against his opponent!

However, Duke Wen Sha understood now; this bright young fellow didn't have any particular methods to defeat his opponent. If those two Divine Needles were so easy to defeat, then how would the Lightning Wind Warrior have remained so unbridled during this entire time? Thinking about it, if Duke Wen Sha, who was an experienced veteran that had gone through years of battle, couldn't think of a way to defeat the Lightning Wind Warrior, then how could Suo Jia?

It instantly activated within 20 meters, and aside from a faint golden light, nothing could be seen. Even if one wanted to use the golden light as an indication of the attack, it would be impossible; every time Lightning Wind Warrior moved, he emitted thousands of golden light rays. How was one supposed to know which one to watch out for?

Currently, everyone, including the Lightning Wind Warrior had been tricked by Suo Jia. In reality, Suo Jia didn't have any

particular methods to deal with the two Divine Needles. However, although Suo Jia was helpless in the arena, he had been able to use an alternative method outside of the fight; he had used this bet to solve the issue.

As everyone knows, if one wants to make a bet, then one must first take out the items at stake and hand them over to the witness. Only the winner has the right to retrieve these items. Of course... it's possible that the items will not be asked for at all. However, once someone requested for them to be held in custody, then everyone must oblige!

In other words, once this bet was confirmed, then there was no way the Lightning Wind Warrior could even think of using his Divine Needles during the tournament. He had to hand them over now and give them to Duke Wen Sha as collateral. Only after winning would he be able to take them back.

The entire arena fell silent at Suo Jia's request for a moment before breaking into an uproar. To think that there was still such a hand to play, this frightening child was too shrewd. He could even come up with a move like this!

At the same time, Lightning Wind Warrior was also inwardly alarmed. He shouted, "That isn't fair! If I cannot use my two Divine Needles, then my strength will decrease drastically. If I must hand over a collateral, then I would rather not bet!"

"Hmph!" As soon as Lightning Wind Warrior finished speaking, Duke Wen Sha snorted in anger, "Young man, it was you who wanted me to be fair. I'm sorry, but I just announced to everyone

that the bet was established. You can refuse to compete now, but no matter whether you compete or not, you have to hand over your two needles! If you abandon the competition, then it will count as your forfeit, and the Divine Needles will go to Suo Jia!”

Duke Wen Sha then swept a dignified gaze around and loudly stated to the audience, “Everyone....do you think Wen Sha’s judgment is fair or not?”

Everyone firmly nodded in response. This wasn’t really a question; the bet had already been established. It wasn’t like one could simply bet or not bet with a simple word. Not betting was fine, but it would be equivalent to forfeiting. All of the collateral would automatically go the opposite party. All bets in this world followed these same rules; it didn’t need to be discussed any further.

Seeing everyone nod in unison, Duke Wen Sha’s expression hardened. He angrily said, “Hand over your Divine Needles immediately. Or....do you want to go back on your words?” A cold aura began to emanate from Duke Wen Sha’s body.

“Renouncers must die!” Feeling the murderous aura coming from Duke Wen Sha, Lightning Wind Warrior immediately recalled the words that the Duke had said previously. His body shuddered, and then he obediently handed the two Divine Needles over, placing them in Duke Wen Sha’s hands.

Nodding, Duke Wen Sha continued, “Very good. Suo Jia’s noble rank advancement opportunities are also under my control. As long as you win, I’ll grant them to you instead. Don’t worry, even I



wouldn't dare to joke around with such things."

Duke Wen Sha said in an imposing manner, "Alright, now that both parties have presented their stakes, I'll hand the remaining time to the referee. I'm simply a witness." Duke Wen Sha slowly sat back down.

"Tch..." Gritting his teeth in irritation, Lightning Wind Warrior glared maliciously at Suo Jia and said, "Brat, you're despicable. You even used such nasty tricks. But you'd better remember that even without my Lightning Wind Thorns, I still have the Lightning Wind Charge. I will definitely still defeat you!"

Smiling, Suo Jia said in disdain, "You've really been wasting your life for so long. Could it be that you don't know? Cutting down an enemy requires using one's head. Someone as simple-headed as you that only relies on external sources couldn't possibly be my equal. Right now....I'm only pulling your teeth. I'll break your legs next. When the time comes, I'll see just how arrogant you can still be!"

Hearing Suo Jia's infuriating words, Lightning Wind Warrior practically exploded from anger. This bastard had managed to slander his greatest weapon with just a few words; it really pissed him off. He was really enraged; there was absolutely no way he could forgive a bastard like Suo Jia!

Ignoring the ashen faced Lightning Wind Warrior, Suo Jia turned around and walked to the platform. He straightened his body and smiled at the referee. Receiving this signal, the referee asked the Lightning Wind Warrior if he was ready. After receiving

a confirmation, the referee firmly declared that the competition....had now officially started!

As soon as the referee gave the command, the Lightning Wind Warrior immediately sprang into action. His strides were small, but his speed was extremely fast. Moreover, his speed just kept increasing; in an instant, the pace of his footsteps reached a frightening speed. It looked as if he had created countless afterimages.

“Heya!” After a sudden shout... the Lightning Wind Warrior’s body first tilted upwards, and then he suddenly leapt forwards. His strides suddenly grew much larger, but his pace didn’t change, making his overall speed several fold higher! Suo Jia only saw a blur, and at the next moment....Lightning Wind Warrior had already flashed 10 meters forward. His body appeared to curve, but was actually straight as he charged towards Suo Jia.

Although the 50 meter distance seemed long, the Lightning Wind Warrior was able to cover it within 3-4 seconds. In an instant, the Lightning Wind Warrior had already appeared within 20 meters perimeter around Suo Jia. However, up until now, Suo Jia still had no way to attack.

Seeing the Lightning Wind Warrior sharply charging over, Suo Jia’s forehead began to sweat. If Suo Jia hadn’t gotten rid of the Lightning Wind’s Divine Needles, then he might’ve already lost in that instant. Such extreme speed was beyond shocking!

Looking down at the opposite party’s feet, a pair of boots surrounded by golden light appeared in Suo Jia’s vision. Without a

question, these boots were a magic item. Moreover, they were most likely an Ideal-ranked magic item that was not very far from a Legendary-ranked item. Based on the golden light surrounding the boots, the supplementary effects they contained were probably the wind attribute auxiliary magic — Wind Rush!

Nodding, Suo Jia finally understood. In reality, his opponent's strength was like the fire mage he had just fought; completely reliant on magical items. The Lightning Wind Charge originated from the Wind Rush magic the boots carried. If Suo Jia wore those same boots, he would be able to use the auxiliary Wind Arts to battle as well. The so-called Lightning Wind Charge was really only activated with the boots. There was no need for further explanation about the Lightning Wind Thorn.

In reality, Suo Jia hadn't simply frozen during these short seconds. He had already cast a series of magics successfully. However....currently, the spells were still hidden, and hadn't been used yet. This was the trap that Suo Jia had laid out; once the spells were actually used, the battle would end. What Suo Jia needed to do now was to try to make this trap useful.

Arrogantly standing in place, Suo Jia waved his hands. Instantly, the Water Whirlpool and the Revolving Frozen Gas began to intermingle with each other. The Whirling Ice Protective Wall once again appeared around Suo Jia.

Seeing this scene, the wind warrior couldn't help but inwardly curse. If he had those two Divine Needles, he would've been able to completely bypass that ice wall. The needle would've directly flown past, and ended the battle. However, now he could only try

using brute force to break past the ice wall.

# Chapter 115: Absolutely Will Not Cower

## (Part 1)

---

The wind warrior's body quickly swayed left and right in a strange manner. In the next moment... the Lightning Wind Warrior suddenly leapt past the left side of the Whirling Ice Protective Wall in a flash. The double-edged sword in his hand created a few tiny cracks on the ice wall. The sharp end of the sword swept past Suo Jia's body; just a little bit further and he could have wounded Suo Jia.

Suo Jia was overwhelmed with shock; as he avoided the opponent's long sword, he couldn't help but inwardly wipe away his sweat. This fellow was equipped with treasures all over his body! The sword was obviously something with an extraordinary background, as it could easily cut the ice wall that was as hard as a steel. This was not something a common weapon could achieve.

Not daring to waste any time, Suo Jia hastily extended his right hand to control the Ice and Snow Pact to rapidly mend the small cracks in the Whirling Ice Protective Wall. Otherwise, the ice wall would shatter if the opponent was allowed to create small cracks.

However, it was only natural that Suo Jia wouldn't defend continuously. From a distance..... the wind warrior turned around and flipped backwards. He breached the ice wall with the sword in his hand once more. If Suo Jia hadn't mended the ice wall earlier, it might have already collapsed by now.

Not daring to be negligent, Suo Jia rapidly used dozens of Swamp Techniques in succession on the surrounding ground. Suo Jia

finally smiled as the last Swamp Technique was laid out..... after defending for such a long time he could finally begin his counter attack.

Just as the Lightning Wind Warrior swung his sword down with an explosive force, Suo Jia suddenly used a Water Sphere, as well as the Revolving Frozen Gas. Immediately... the Lightning Wind Warrior's double-edged sword was frozen and stuck halfway into the ice wall.

The Lightning Wind Warrior was dumbstruck as he discovered that his double-edged sword was actually stuck in the ice wall. He could only stare blankly as Suo Jia used another Water Sphere to cover the entire blade, freezing it so that it was even harder to budge.

Seeing this scene, the Lightning Wind Warrior couldn't help but panic. If his double-edged sword was taken away from him, how was he supposed to fight? With his fists? This wouldn't do, he wasn't a boxer. Without his double-edged sword, he would lose his ability to fight. Even if he could fight, he wouldn't be a match for Suo Jia.

The wind warrior frantically grabbed the hilt of the double-edged sword with both hands and pulled backwards with all his strength. However..... he had given a few tugs before discovering that the ground underneath his feet had somehow become soft. The wind warrior looked down suspiciously, and saw that both of his feet were already sinking into the ground slowly.

Greatly alarmed, the wind warrior clearly knew that because he

had stopped moving, he had happened to fall into the Swamp Technique's trap. If he didn't manage to escape it soon, then he would lose this battle. A warrior with both of his legs restricted was no different from a magic target.

The Lightning Wind Warrior panicked, and tightly gripped the doubled-edged sword that was frozen in the ice wall. He gathered his battle qi around his feet, causing the ground to abruptly explode. As dirt flew everywhere, his feet finally came free!

However, before the wind warrior could even exhale, a blue ice stream as thick as his leg began to coil around his sword arm like a viper.

Seeing the ice stream coil around his arm, the wind warrior immediately became startled. He quickly attempted to release his sword and retreat, only to find that he had lost all feeling in his frozen arm. In theory it was a sound plan, but the slight delay allowed the ice stream to wrap around his body, entangling him completely in an instant.

If Suo Jia only relied on the hardness of the pure ice stream might still be unable to restrict the Lightning Wind Warrior; however, inside the stream of ice was a current of freezing water. While the ice bound the opponent, the ice water completely froze his limbs, effectively paralyzing him.

It wasn't that the wind warrior didn't want to struggle. However, the current distance between Suo Jia and the wind warrior was only about a meter. While the ice stream was coiling around the warrior and freezing him, the wind warrior also had to suffer from

Suo Jia's water manipulation attacks. No matter how the warrior tried to move, an opposite force would always materialize from inside his body, preventing him from completing his desired movements.

Feeling helpless, the wind warrior decided to try one last effort to use the remaining battle qi within his body to break the ice stream. But before he even had a chance to do this, Suo Jia had already taken control of the blood within the Lightning Wind Warrior's body and caused it to frantically rush into his brain. The Lightning Wind Warrior could suddenly see only gold bars floating in his vision as the world started to fade to black. He attempted with all his might to grab the gold bars, but was unable to. Although not deadly, the mass amount of blood in his brain made him lose all ability to gather spirit power, let alone battle qi.

After some time, Suo Jia relinquished his control over the ice stream. It already covered the Lightning Wind Warrior completely from head to toe, flawless and without a single crack. Looking at it from a distance, it looked as if the Lightning Wind Warrior had become one huge block of ice, frozen in place.

In order to prevent an accident from occurring, Suo Jia was using all of his strength to reinforce the ice stream with the Ice and Snow Pact. At the same time, he executed an ice-cold attack on the Lightning Wind Warrior!

Most people assumed that ice was weaker than fire, however cold and heat generally were equally terrifying. The Lightning Wind Warrior currently couldn't even tell if he was being frozen or being burned by a large fire.



Although the Lightning Wind Warrior was extremely strong and courageous, he was not strong enough to the extent where he could withstand fire and ice. After his initial efforts ended in failure, he had already lost all chances of victory. His body gradually began to freeze and become paralyzed, and even his consciousness had begun to fade.

Meanwhile, Suo Jia fetched the double-edged sword still stuck in the ice wall and lightly pressed it against the Lightning Wind Warrior's neck. He simultaneously turned his head towards the referee and said, "If you don't declare this match as my victory, I will behead him!"

# Chapter 116: Absolutely Will Not Cower

## (Part 2)

---

Hearing Suo Jia's words, even though the Lightning Wind Warrior's consciousness had already become fuzzy, he still understood that he was in a dangerous situation. He really wanted to beg for mercy and admit defeat. However, at the moment, his entire body had already been frozen solid by the ice; he was unable speak! Lightning Wind Warrior was frozen to the extent that he couldn't even change his expression.

Luckily, the referee was experienced. Hearing Suo Jia's voice, he resolutely declared the match over. The victory belonged to the first year water mage apprentice - Suo Jia!

"Ya!" Hearing the referee's voice, Suo Jia tossed away the double-edged sword and clenched both fists before cheering loudly. Although it looked like this victory was obtained effortlessly, Suo Jia had already brought out all of his abilities to their limits!

Suo Jia didn't hold anything back in either wisdom, technique, or strength. If he was still incapable of defeating his opponent under such conditions, he didn't know how else he could possibly win. In the battlefield, the slightest bit of hesitation could lead to defeat!

Looking at Suo Jia's joyous expression, Duke Wen Sha couldn't help but smile. He slowly stood up and laughed loudly. "Congratulations Suo Jia. According to the bet, you have won these two Divine Needles. At the same time, the two opportunities to promote your nobility rank will be returned to you since you

won.”

Hearing Duke Wen Sha’s words, Suo Jia excitedly rushed over and received the case containing the two Divine Needles. Right as he was prepared to leave, the head judge called out to him with a smile, “There’s still more. You defeated the Lightning Wind Warrior and obtained his nobility promotion. Therefore, you have already earned three nobility promotions. Heavens ..... this is an astonishingly impressive feat!”

The head judge carefully continued, “How about it? Do you wish to continue the challenge? The next one..... would be the last competitor. This person has been the champion for three consecutive years. This will be his fourth year defending the Holy Light Crown —— the fire warrior, Mi XiuSa!”

Knitting his brows, Suo Jia said without the slightest hesitation, “Of course I will continue the challenge. My goal is not the nobility promotion, but to test my strength. So unless I am defeated, I will keep challenging!”

Seeing Suo Jia’s resolute expression, the head judge and Duke Wen Sha couldn’t help but be amazed. They couldn’t possibly have known that Suo Jia’s objective was to advance along the Greater Trade Routes. If Suo Jia couldn’t even prevail in Holy Light City, then how could he even speak of the Greater Trade Routes? Even the strongest experts in Holy Light City were only ordinary warriors on the Greater Trade Routes. If Suo Jia couldn’t even stand his ground in Holy Light Academy, then it meant that he hadn’t put enough effort into his training yet.

After hesitating for a while, Duke Wen Sha frowned and said, "Suo Jia, don't you think you should think about it a bit more before making a decision? Mi Xiusa's strength is something that I understand clearly. You have to understand that during the competition in past years, Mi Xiusa finished all of his battles within ten seconds. Even the Lightning Wind Warrior couldn't resist for a single second longer."

Hearing Duke Wen Sha's words, Suo Jia couldn't help but shake his head while laughing. He earnestly said to Duke Wen Sha, "Duke Wen Sha, I want to ask you: Is this Mi Xiusa stronger than you?"

Duke Wen Sha looked at Suo Jia in confusion, "Isn't that obvious? No matter how strong he is, he is still only an eighteen year old child that hasn't even graduated yet. I, Duke Wen Sha, am also one of the empire's few experts. Although Mi Xiusa is powerful, he still isn't worth anything in my eyes. In terms of strength, I alone can defeat a hundred of him."

Hearing Duke Wen Sha's words, Suo Jia earnestly replied, "Duke Wen Sha's strength is something that everyone in the world knows about. However, what I am trying to say is that even if my next opponent was you, the Grand Duke, I still wouldn't shrink back!" While speaking, Suo Jia resolutely turned his body and walked towards the fighting area.

With Suo Jia's back turned, Duke Wen Sha could not help but feel bewildered. This young fellow... was really too crazy. Could it be that he really believed that he could defeat Duke Wen Sha?

“No way!” Wen Sha quickly discarded this thought. Suo Jia was not stupid; he was exactly the opposite. In fact, Suo Jia was awfully cunning. Thus, there was no way he thought that some form of miracle would occur if he fought with the Duke. Even if Suo Jia wore an entire set of Epic-ranked equipment, there would still be no chance of victory. The gap between the two of them was too big; nothing could possibly make up for it.

But in that case, why did Suo Jia still choose to challenge? After thinking for a long time, Duke Wen Sha suddenly understood and lifted his head while sighing in admiration to watch Suo Jia quietly walk off the platform. Duke Wen Sha knew that Suo Jia chose to challenge not because he had confidence in winning, but rather because he didn't allow himself to shrink or cower!

During a person's life, it is inevitable that the person will face countless challenges and difficulties. This fact is true no matter who it is. Even if it was Duke Wen Sha or the empire's Emperor, it would not be any different. The only difference would be the type of difficulties they would face.

The reason why Suo Jia was not willing to shrink back was because this represented his attitude towards how he lived his life, as well as his goals. Although Duke Wen Sha did not know what Suo Jia's goal was, it was quite clear that his goal did not allow him to cower in fear! No matter who his opponent was, he could only move forward! Move forward! And forward again!

Wen Sha knew that he was definitely right. Typically speaking, if people with Suo Jia's nature and habits did not die early, then they would become the strongest type of existences. And considering

Suo Jia's intelligence, it would be very hard for him to die.

Leaving aside Duke Wen Sha's thought, on the other side, Suo Jia had once again returned to the female lecturer's side to sincerely thank her. If it were not for her previous time-out, Suo Jia would have definitely been defeated for unknown reasons. Without knowing about the Divine Needles, there was no way he could have protected himself from them.

Now, he had won the match by taking advantage of the lecturer's advice. The meaning behind this was too significant; not only did he keep his nobility titles, but it had also allowed Suo Jia to acquire the Lightning Wind Warrior's nobility title. In addition, the most important part was that Suo Jia won that pair of Divine Needles, as well as the opportunity to continue challenging.

The female lecturer called him over to her side, and with a simple wave of his left hand, four crystal cards appeared on Suo Jia's left hand. Without any hesitation, he handed them over to the female lecturer as he sincerely said, "I thank the lecturer for her guidance. This is Suo Jia's kindness in return."

Dumbfoundedly looking at the Crystal Card in Suo Jia's hand, the female lecturer knew that each of these cards represented ten million gold coins. As a lecturer of Holy Light Academy, her monthly wage was only ten thousand gold coins. In one year, she could only earn one hundred thousand gold. These 40 million gold coins were sufficient for her to last for 400 years!

"You... what is this!" Seeing Suo Jia's actions, the female lecturer cried out in disbelief. She really wasn't sure if what was happening

was reality.

Suo Jia frowned. He had never really liked owing anyone. Without the lecturer's guidance, it would have been impossible for him to obtain victory, so he thought such actions were necessary. If he had more money right now, he would have also taken it out without any hesitation. However, he currently only had this 40 million.

He firmly placed the four crystal cards into the female lecturer's pocket, and earnestly said, "Since you helped me, I need to thank you. Although this amount of money is not a lot, but it is not just small change either."

Suo Jia continued, "There is an hour left before the next match. Let's not waste any time; help me analyze Mi Xiusa's specialties. I want to defeat him!"

"Gulp!" Looking at the crystal card in her hand, the female lecturer really wanted to refuse. However, she didn't have the power to resist. Such a large amount of money could buy so many beautiful clothes and good items!

Hesitating for only a slight moment, the female lecturer resolutely put away the four crystal cards and firmly looked at Suo Jia as she said, "Teacher will accept this money. Please don't worry, I will not just take it for free. From now on until you graduate, I will help you until I make up for this money's worth!"

The female lecturer did not waste time on anymore superfluous

words. She pulled Suo Jia to sit down and said softly, “Mi Xiusa’s first characteristic is his innate talent, ‘Flame Strengthening’. The raging inferno he releases, whether it is in terms of quantity or temperature, is two times higher than common people.”

“Heavens!” Hearing the lecturer’s words, Suo Jia could not help but inwardly sigh in admiration. This fellow was actually born with a divine weapon. With such innate talent, it wasn’t surprising that he could continuously obtain the championship. Even if he fought empty handed, he would already be the same as an ordinary person wearing magic equipment of the highest quality.

The female lecturer continued, “In addition, the Blazing Blade that he uses has an extremely high destructive power. It is a Legendary-ranked magic weapon that can raise the flame’s powers by 100%. Moreover, it can release the battle qi outside and discharge the Red Lotus Moon Slash. It can instantly obliterate anything within a ten meter radius!”

“Red Lotus Moon Slash!” Hearing the lecturer’s words, Suo Jia couldn’t help but be stunned.

What was the Red Lotus Moon Slash? It was actually quite simple. It used the transformation of the external battle qi shaped in a crescent-moon to slash the enemy. This was originally nothing much, even an elementary warrior could perform it. Although its power was formidable, Suo Jia was not afraid, as he could block it with Whirling Ice Protective Wall.

However, with Mi Xiusa’s innate talent and the assistance of the Blazing Blade, his power was increased by no less than 4 times!



With such formidable firepower, Suo Jia's ice wall would be completely incapable of resisting; it would just be instantly destroyed.

Basically, the opposing side was equal to an ordinary person wearing 3-4 Legendary-ranked equipment specialized in attack. That was not an opponent Suo Jia could face at the moment. Moreover, Suo Jia was convinced that it was impossible for the opponent to not have any other magic items and equipment if he had the Blazing Blade. In terms of overall strength, Suo Jia was afraid that his opponent's strength was double of what he initially thought!

As Suo Jia was secretly admiring the opponent, the female lecturer continued, "According to my analysis from your performance earlier, your probability of winning is absolutely zero! You must know that the opponent is from the fire department; he is not afraid of your ice. Although it is true that water can suppress fire, the opponent's innate talent can make up for this shortcoming. It is impossible for the power of your ice to be stronger than your opponent's fire no matter how cold it is. Trying to freeze Mi Xiusa is a stupid idea."

The female lecturer seriously continued, "Therefore, the smartest thing to do in my opinion is to forfeit the match. No matter how hard I think about it, I cannot come up with a method for you to win. There definitely isn't one!"

Suo Jia took a deep breath and nodded. In fact, he also knew that if freezing was impossible, then he wouldn't have any chance of winning against such a powerful opponent like Mi Xiusa. However,

there was absolutely no way he would ever admit defeat and back out of the challenge. Just as he had said before, no matter who his challenger was, he would never shrink back!

# Chapter 117: Opening A New Door (Part 1)

---

After thinking for a long time, Suo Jia's eyes suddenly lit up. He quickly lifted his head to look at the female lecturer while saying, "Right, now that I think about it, I just won those two Divine Needles. If I use the Battle Forbidding Divine Needle to seal his battle qi, is it possible for me to win?"

Looking at Suo Jia with a bitter smile, the female lecturer shook her head while saying, "Your thinking is too naive. If Mi Xiusa was scared of the Battle Forbidding Divine Needle, then he would not have been crowned as the champion for three consecutive years, but rather that Lightning Wind warrior would've. In reality, when Mi Xiusa fights, he wears an entire set of sealed off Legendary-ranked battle armor. Although the Divine Needles can pierce through magic, it is useless against physical defenses."

"Damn..." He slapped his forehead in distress. The opposing party didn't only have the Blazing Blade, he actually also had a set of overpowered battle armor. If he didn't even fear the two Divine Needles, things were going to be difficult. Suo Jia sat there, vexed. He had to think of a method to defeat his opponent within a short hour.

Seeing Suo Jia's strained expression, the female lecturer helplessly sighed, "It's not that I'm unwilling to help you; in reality, if there was a way, then Mi Xiusa would not be the three-years consecutive champion. Up until now, no one has been able to find Mi Xiusa's weakness, and within Holy Light Academy, he is unrivaled."

Time quickly flowed past. Under Suo Jia's wholehearted contemplation, an hour quickly passed. He blankly lifted his head; from start to finish, he hadn't been able to think of any method to defeat his opponent. However... Suo Jia refused to believe that the other party was so perfect that he didn't have a single weakness. Regardless, he'd have to figure something out on the field.

After waiting for an hour, finally... Suo Jia and Mi Xiusa were called up by the referee. They were divided into two sides on the arena, and both of them walked up at the same time. They stood still 50 meters from each other while looking at each other from the distance.

Suo Jia noticed that Mi Xiusa was indeed wearing a sealed set of battle armor around his body, and the entire set of armor emitted a scarlet luster. Red light was circulating the surface, and even his eyes were covered by a layer of red crystal. The handle of a war blade stuck out from behind his left shoulder, and a red piece of silk that hung from the handle floated in the wind.

Looking from top to bottom, and then from bottom to top again, Suo Jia really could not find a single crack in the armor. Even the joints were blocked by long covers. Unless he attacked with poisonous gas or broke the armor, there was no other way to harm the heavily protected Mi Xiusa.

Bitterly smiling while shaking his head, Suo Jia knew that even if the other person stood there and allowed him to attack, he might still not have the ability to harm the opposite party. This was practically an unrivaled tank.

While Suo Jia was thinking, the referee solemnly declared for the match to formally begin. Following the referee's voice, the opposing Mi Xiusa boldly stretched his hand towards his back and gripped the war blade's long handle. It whistled shrilly as he pulled it out and raised it in his hand.

The long blade was about 1.2 meters long, and a fiery red colored flame rose up from the wide blade. Under Mi Xiusa's urging, his battle qi made a 'Chi Chi' sound, and whistled intimidatingly.

Met with this scene, Suo Jia collected his scattered thoughts and focused on preparing for the battle. He activated several spells in succession, and then immediately retreated at full speed.

Indifferently glancing over at Suo Jia, Mi Xiusa lifted the war blade in his hands and walked slowly and steadily towards Suo Jia's direction. He followed Suo Jia closely, continuously changing his direction as he decreased the amount of space that Suo Jia could use to evade.

The competition arena was, after all, a normal field. Although the surface area was not small, it definitely could not be considered large either. Within a few seconds, Suo Jia was already forced into a corner of the arena. If he moved back any further, he would inevitably be blocked by Mi Xiusa. Faced with this situation, Suo Jia, and even the spectators, were so nervous they were holding their breaths.

Although everyone knew that Suo Jia wouldn't lose this next moment, none of them had ever imagined how Suo Jia would possibly attack the opposite party. Everyone clearly understood Mi

Xiusa's strength; it was not something any student from Holy Light Academy could resist.

“Bang....Bang.....” After two sounds rang out in succession, finally....Suo Jia and Mi Xiusa stood firm, and at that exact moment....Mi Xiusa hadn't yet unsheathed his blade, Suo Jia hadn't yet activated any magic, and the distance between the two was only 2 meters.

With a cruel laugh, Mi Xiusa slowly raised the Blazing Blade in his hand. Blazing flames began to lap on the surface of the sword. At the same time, Suo Jia slowly raised his left hand, and a crystal blue ice stream, much like a spirit snake, wrapped around his right hand. As if it had life of its own, it began to circle around Suo Jia's entire body.

“This....what does this brat want to do? Could it be....he wants to fight Mi Xiusa head on? God....this is too ridiculous! A mage actually wants to face a fire warrior head on!” Duke Wen Sha shouted in shock from the top of the platform.

Everyone, not just Duke Wen Sha, understood what Suo Jia planned to do based on the stance he had assumed. For a while, all of the audience present all stood up one after another. A mage had unexpectedly wanted to go against the strongest fire warrior. Something like this was rarely seen throughout all ages.

Under the ten thousand audience's gazes, Mi Xiusa darkly laughed and then suddenly slashed the Blazing Blade down. Immediately....a scarlet battle qi rippled forth in the shape of a half moon. It came out of the blade, and whizzed towards Suo Jia in the

form of a slash. At the same, Suo Jia's right hand suddenly waved. A thick ice stream whistled past, and like a legendary flood dragon leaving its cave, it began to leap towards Mi Xiusa.

Under everyone's gazes, the ice stream and the flames flew towards each other. In only an instant, the two attacks had a bitter encounter between the two people. Just as everyone thought that the ice stream would be split apart by the flames, the ice stream seemed to come to life. It twisted strangely, and maneuvered around the blazing slash, violently rushing towards Mi Xiusa from his side.

The ice stream's speed was extremely fast, almost as swift as the incoming blazing slash. When the blazing slash reached Suo Jia's body, the ice flow had also already reached Mi Xiusa's body. The two had practically faced each other's attacks at the same time; what would the result be?

Facing the fiercely burning blazing slash, Suo Jia's expression did not change in the slightest. His right hand controlled the ice stream to continue along its trajectory, attacking the evading Mi Xiusa over and over again. At the same time, he lightly waved his left hand at the blazing slash, as if he was chasing away a housefly.

'Peng!' Following Suo Jia's left hand gesture, a muffled noise rang out, and Mi Xiusa's blazing slash was extinguished momentarily. It disappeared without a trace, as if it had never existed.

At the same time, because Mi Xiusa wasn't a true expert at evasion, he was finally unable to dodge the ice stream. With a

heavy sound, the thick and solid ice stream shot out from the side and banged into Mi Xiusa's head. With dominating power, it forced Mi Xiusa's head to violently tilt to one side. He continuously stumbled a few steps back and almost fell down.

That's right, this was the tactic Suo Jia had thought up of to confront the enemy. Mi Xiusa, who was wearing heavy armor, was not afraid of any attacks from sharp weapons. However, it was not as useful against blunt weapons.

In general, if one wanted to use a sharp sword, the sharp end would have to puncture that set of armor. Although it wasn't impossible, what could be ascertained was that no such person in Holy Light Academy existed. Obviously, Suo Jia couldn't do it either.

Thus Suo Jia used the ice stream as a large iron hammer to violently bombard Mi Xiusa. Suo Jia knew that if he attacked the torso, then no matter how fierce his attack was, the effect would be limited. However, if Suo Jia attacked the warrior's head, then it was a different story; the body isn't afraid of being shaken, but the head is different. Moreover, getting hit on the head is extremely frightening!

Even if one wore a motorbike helmet, they still wouldn't be able to resist an iron hammer smashing towards the head. No matter how strong the helmet was, the amount of shock from the powerful attack would still permeate the head and neck. What Suo Jia was gambling on was exactly how many hits Mi Xiusa could take!



## Chapter 118: Opening A New Door (Part 2)

---

This was Suo Jia's sole plan. Using the Space Shield from the interspatial ring as defense and the ice stream as an attack, even if Suo Jia couldn't knock the opponent out, he could still exhaust the opponent. No matter how strong the opposite party was, there was no way he could be the same as Suo Jia and be able to enter the meditative state at any time. The two's recovery abilities definitely weren't comparable!

Of course, one couldn't be stuck in a deadlock forever. Currently, however, as long as the battle wasn't too fast paced, Suo Jia could activate the Space Shield 200 times in succession. The second reason he attacked Mi Xiusa head on was to retard the opponent's attacks. If the opposite party was given the chance to wildly slash around, then the recovery ability of his spirit power and his consumption would be incomparable to each other, and Suo Jia's spirit power would soon be exhausted. Thus, controlling the tempo of the battle was the crucial point in obtaining victory.

With the benefit of constantly maintaining meditation by using the Atlantis' Wisdom, the recovery of his spirit and magic power was extremely fast. As long as he didn't continuously use the Space Shield, he could almost infinitely continue on.

However, as soon as Mi Xiusa closed in to slash wildly, the results would change. Suo Jia had to continuously use the Space Shield; the higher the speed at which he deployed it, the faster the expenditure of his spirit power would be. If he used the fastest speed to deploy the Space Shield, then after roughly a dozen Space Shields, Suo Jia's spirit power would be in disorder.

Of course, only Suo Jia understood all of this. Currently, no other person knew about it; however, a warrior faced against a mage would still only think of ways to charge up to the mage, even if the warrior knew there were such circumstances. This was the only way a warrior would quickly end the battle.

Suo Jia understood this reasoning, so he knew that if he wanted to control the rhythm of the battle, then he couldn't get hit. He had to take the initiative to attack, since it's always the attacker that dictates control. Once he became weary from protecting his life, he'll fall into his opponent's tempo.

Taking advantage of the staggering Mi Xiusa, Suo Jia quickly waved his right hand, causing the thick and solid ice stream to wriggle around like a python. Its slender body jerked in the air, and lashed its powerful tail at Mi Xiusa.

In order to increase its blunt strength, the ice stream's tail was shaped so that it had a large triangular end, much like a snake's head. It was much thicker than the ice stream's body, and at first glance, one would think the entire ice stream was a triangular headed cobra. Not only was its body similar, but even its head was.

As everyone knows, a whip that is flayed at an extremely fast speed is very frightening. The tail is especially terrifying; it utilizes the pushing and pulling movements to generate a shockingly explosive force.

If Suo Jia threw a fist, it would contain about 50-100kg of power.

However, utilizing the whip-style attack to boost his power provided a different result. The current ice stream was like a large throwing hammer. After spinning around for a long time, the amount of force it contained was ten times more. 500-1000kg of power wasn't difficult to achieve at all.

The ice stream crazily twisted about in mid air, carrying the power of an ice hammer within it, and the ice stream blasted towards Mi Xiusa with a whizzing sound. Mi Xiusa, who had just regained his balance a moment ago, had no other choice but to receive this attack head on.

As mentioned earlier, the ice stream wasn't really magic, but rather one's control over water. Therefore, it didn't consume any magic power, and even the consumption of spiritual power was very low. Suo Jia could operate this ice stream for 24 hours a day and his spiritual power still wouldn't be exhausted. To Suo Jia, this was just a game that he had played everyday since he was small.

Facing the bombardment of the ice stream, Mi Xiusa couldn't help but burst out in anger. He faced the ice hammer without the slightest hint of fear and slashed wildly in a fit of rage. As a result of being too close to the opponent, Suo Jia didn't have enough time to dodge, and the core of the ice hammer got struck by Mi Xiusa's attack.

“Bang!” A sharp and clear sound rang out and the ice hammer as thick as a person's thigh was shattered by Mi Xiusa's strike. The ice stream burst into several pieces of ice and scattered everywhere, but Mi Xiusa was still in a pretty bad situation. Receiving such a

huge attack, he couldn't help but retreat 4-5 steps. Both of his hands shuddered from the shock of the attack.

“Waa!” Seeing this scene, the whole audience couldn't help but cry out in surprise. This time, even Duke Wen Sha was so shocked that he stood up from his chair. Nobody could understand just how Suo Jia's attack could be powerful enough to even push the strongest in Holy Light Academy, Fire Warrior Mi Xiusa, a few steps backward. Suo Jia was only a weak water mage apprentice. To be able to face a powerful fire warrior in close range was already a miracle. However just now, he'd been so overpowering that he had blasted Mi Xiusa backwards!

At the same time, Suo Jia was also in awe. Even he himself had never thought that this attack would be so powerful. The head of the ice stream was originally just like a sharp needle, therefore possessing penetrating power, but the effects of the explosion attack was very weak. However, he didn't expect that by turning the ice stream's tail into an ice hammer, the effects would undergo such a drastic change!

In reality, the ice stream was not controlled by Suo Jia's skill, but relied on the control of Suo Jia's water manipulation technique. The power of the water control was related to Suo Jia's training. Although the power of Suo Jia's water manipulation was not very powerful at the moment, it still possessed 250-300kg of power. This was absolutely not the power a mage should have possessed. In fact, Suo Jia's arm strength was not even 50kg.

Of course, even though the ice hammer was actually very sharp and powerful, Suo Jia was still unable to completely comprehend

the methods of utilizing a whip. At most, he could only increase the speed by two times. Even if the effects of the whip hammer could reach up to tenfold or higher, for Suo Jia who had just recently touched upon this field, he could only unleash 10-20% of its effect. The power unleashed by the ice hammer was only increased by twofold. If its power really increased by tenfold, Mi Xiusa would've been blasted to pieces.

It is impossible for a person to completely unleash the power of the whip just by picking it up. In order to bring out more power, a long period of practice was required to grasp the nature of the whip and the technique. However... even though Suo Jia could only unleash one tenth of the power and increase the power of the water control by twofold, Suo Jia had already entered this realm. With Suo Jia's wisdom, he was bound to gain all the necessary knowledge in future training sessions.

Furthermore, the whip hammer's power depended on multiple factors. What increased was the power of the water control, and that power was raised by Suo Jia's spirit power. The more spirit power Suo Jia possessed, the more powerful his water control became. Once Suo Jia grasped the whip technique, his attack power would be increased tenfold every time his spirit power grew as long as he stayed in the meditative state the whole time.

Feeling the ice stream wriggling under his control, Suo Jia was simply wild with joy. Originally... he had only thought of finding a means to defeat Mi Xiusa, but he hadn't expected that he would accidentally discover such a mysterious technique. If he relied on this technique, he would be able to challenge this powerful warrior upfront, and force the opponent to retreat!

This discovery cannot be underestimated. Suo Jia's biggest dream was to become a warriormage. In fact, this discovery made Suo Jia much happier than suddenly mastering a high level magic. With Suo Jia's wisdom, the profound implications of this technique were seen through in an instant.

The fundamental part of the ice hammer was water control, which was like breathing to Suo Jia. It had already become a part of him. Suo Jia doesn't even need to consider what kind of process to follow when controlling the water. With just a single thought, his hand would automatically move, and the ice stream would follow according to Suo Jia's imagination. Even describing it as how the arm moves the fingers was insufficient.

If the foundation of the ice hammer's power was water control, that meant the stronger the water control, the more water one could control. It also indicated that the stream's power would increase. The power of control originated from and was directly proportional to spirit power. In regards to the training of spiritual power, with the help of the Atlantis' Wisdom, he could maintain the meditative state 24 hours a day, 365 days a year. In this world, there was only one Atlantis' Wisdom. Therefore, the growth of Suo Jia's spiritual power was unparalleled.

Furthermore, the ice hammer's strength and hardness, as well as the cold air it carried, was decided by the Ice and Snow Pact. In this aspect, Suo Jia had the assistance of the Frost's Sigh, increasing his training speed by 100%. Not only that, the ice's power was increased by 100% whenever he activated the Ice and Snow Pact. Adding them together, this was equal to strengthening oneself by 200%.

To any other ice mage, this Frost's Sigh was just a Legendary-ranked magic item. However, it was different for Suo Jia; he wouldn't trade it even if one offered a divine artifact.

With the appearance of this ice hammer, Suo Jia's combat system was finally perfected. From now on, close combat would no longer be his weakness, but rather his greatest strength.

In regards to training, Suo Jia only needed to unleash the ice stream regularly. While training the hammer whip technique, he also cultivated the Ice and Snow Pact. As for the Meditation Technique, he was able to train it any time.

Other people could only choose one out of the three techniques: Meditation, Ice and Snow Pact, or the Whip Hammer Technique. However, Suo Jia was different; he could practice all three at the same time. Moreover, Faerie's Soul, Frost's Sigh and Atlantis' Wisdom all had effects that boosted his attacks by several fold. However strictly speaking, even using these techniques and items combined still might not be enough for him to defeat his opponent.

As matters stood, Suo Jia didn't care about the outcome of today's competition anymore. Regardless of victory or defeat, Suo Jia wouldn't mind. Even if he lost today, he would eventually surpass all the students in Holy Light Academy and become the strongest, not just in name only, but in reality as well!

But of course, Suo Jia was still reluctant to lose. He controlled the ice stream and once again formed the ice hammer. After a sharp turn, it blasted towards Mi Xiusa. Since the competition already started, he needed to persevere until the end, and strive

towards victory!



# Chapter 119: Future Route (Part 1)

---

Continuously blasted by Suo Jia's attacks and having been beaten back sorrowfully, Mi Xiusa finally grew angry. Mi Xiusa's body suddenly halted 10 meters away. Two scarlet red eyes looked at Suo Jia while his hands gripped the sword's hilt tightly. He first sent a swift, sharp attack at the incoming ice hammer, which smashed it into pieces. Immediately afterwards, a loud shout suddenly burst out as he began to attack in a frenzy.

Mi Xiusa's fury finally allowed Suo Jia to realize Mi Xiusa's formidable might. Within a short few seconds, Mi Xiusa had violently slashed his sword more than a dozen times. Over 10 crisscross sword chops covered with scarlet battle qi swarmed towards Suo Jia like a group of angry hornets.

Faced with this situation, Suo Jia could not help but laugh bitterly. With regards to defense, relying only on the interspatial ring was evidently not enough. Although the Space Shield could be deployed, it would still eventually be extinguished. No matter what attack it was, it would cause the shield to immediately disappear. Faced with these concentrated attacks, Suo Jia did not have enough time to once again summon the Space Shield.

Originally, these concentrated attacks were impossible for Suo Jia to defend against. Fortunately however, Mi Xiusa had lost his cool-headedness. Although the attacks were densely packed, they were a bit too concentrated, which allowed Suo Jia a chance to escape.

Quickly waving both of his hands, Suo Jia controlled the ice

stream to lay down layer after layer, forming a wall of defense. At the same time, Suo Jia's body moved at top speed to one side. As a result of Mi Xiusa's attacks being limited to one area, so as long as Suo Jia avoided that exact area, he would be safe.

Bang! Bang! Bang... Rumbling sounds caused by the concentrated attacks could be heard as streams of battle qi shot outwards, causing the long ice stream to explode into fragments, segment after segment. After only a second or two, the nine meter long ice stream had already been completely smashed into ice fragments. Soon after... five or six waves of scarlet battle qi violently crashed into the spot where Suo Jia had originally stood. With a violent sound, the area exploded, causing dust to fly everywhere.

Taking a deep breath after his fluke, Suo Jia used the power of his ice stream's defense to finally escape that area at the last moment. Although some of the fragments inevitably caused some wounds on his body, none of them affected Suo Jia's fighting strength.

Not daring to stay idle, Suo Jia spread out his two hands, and another azure ice stream silently rushed forth. Under the smoke's cover, he stuck close to the ground and leapt towards Mi Xiusa. As Mi Xiusa attacked with that blazing slash, Suo Jia violently charged from the ground, and attacked wildly at the belly of the completely unprepared Mi Xiusa.

Peng! Without any guard, Mi Xiusa was lifelessly sent flying. No matter how he thought about it, he couldn't figure out how the opposing party had countered amidst those concentrated explosions. The most important question was: Hadn't that ice

stream just been destroyed by his explosive attack just now?

Not only was Mi Xiusa confused, even the surrounding spectators, including Duke Wen Sha, had no idea exactly what happened. At this very moment, Suo Jia's body was still hidden within the smoke of the explosion. Everyone could only see an ice stream emerge from the smoke. Currently... Suo Jia had the ice hammer raised high up in the air. He had been the source of the explosion that had sent Mi Xiusa flying.

But things were far from finished. As Mi Xiusa was sent flying through the air, that ice stream once again moved, and rolled up sharply. That thick and solid ice snake instantly wrapped itself around Mi Xiusa's neck and suddenly pulled downwards, causing Mi Xiusa's body to fall. Under the ice stream's grip, Mi Xiusa's helmet fiercely hit the floor.

Under everyone's gazes, Mi Xiusa's head smashed into the floor so hard that the rocks from the ground flew in all directions. A strange angle formed between his head and his shoulders. At the same time, violet-black colored blood flowed out from a small crack in the helmet.

But this was still not the end. This ice stream was both overpowering and merciless, and it quickly coiled around Mi Xiusa's body. In that split second, the thick and solid ice stream had firmly secured itself around Mi Xiusa. From his head to his feet, he was completely covered by the ice stream.

After only a slight pause, Mi Xiusa had already awoken. Although he had been struck quite hard just now, enough to inflict some

internal injuries and make him spit out blood, he did not lose his fighting strength.

Under everyone's gazes, Mi Xiusa's body emitted a brilliant red light. Everyone knew that Mi Xiusa wanted to use his battle qi to explode, and with Mi Xiusa's strength, that ice stream was definitely not enough to restrict him.

The red light became more and more magnificent. Just as it appeared to reach the point of explosion, the ice stream that restricted Mi Xiusa's body once again lifted its head. It lifted the ice hammer high up in the air and soon after... it violently smashed towards Mi Xiusa's helmet-protected head.

Hong Ka! Following the sound of a violent explosion, the enormous ice hammer carrying unfathomable power fatally smashed down on Mi Xiusa's head. Immediately... the red light emitted from Mi Xiusa's body fluctuated, practically fading out on the spot.

No matter who it was, or how tough one's helmet was, when met with such a blunt strike, being shaken up was inevitable. Having suffered the ice hammer's bombardment, Mi Xiusa could only feel his mind fall into disarray. Not waiting for him to realize what was happening, another smash hammered down!

All the people watched attentively as the huge ice hammer that resembled a blacksmith's hammer unceasingly raised up high into the sky, and smashed downwards onto Mi Xiusa's head, as if his skull was a piece of iron. The hammer continued to wildly smash down and strike its target.....

Having been repeatedly smashed several times in a row, the red light outside Mi Xiusa's body finally began to slowly disperse. The movements of the body also gradually came to a halt. Mi Xiusa stood motionlessly, as if paralyzed in place, allowing the ice hammer to explosively smash down onto him. Despite the attacks, he showed no reaction.

However, despite this, Suo Jia was still reluctant to stop. As long as the match had not concluded, he would not stop attacking. Controlling the ice stream with full strength, he continued to wrap it around Mi Xiusa's body, and then separate the two right afterwards. This caused Mi Xiusa's body to whirl around wildly like a spinning top in midair.

Seeing the ice stream whirlwind toss Mi Xiusa into the air, Suo Jia suddenly closed his eyes. The instant Mi Xiusa separated from the ice stream, his body suddenly tensed. It was extremely obvious that Suo Jia's decision was correct. Just now, Mi Xiusa had only been pretending to be defeated, and if Suo Jia had decided to stop his attacks then, the conclusion might have been harder to foresee.

Laughing sinisterly, Suo Jia's two hands quickly danced about. Immediately... the ice stream began twisting about in a snake like manner, making it look like a python. After storing up a powerful amount of power, the thick and solid ice stream suddenly faced the sky and rose. It faced the spinning Mi Xiusa below, and brazenly attacked in that direction.

In actuality, Suo Jia's decision was completely correct. Although Mi Xiusa suffered from severe wounds, he had not completely lost

his fighting strength. The instant he had separated from the ice stream, he had planned on retaliating. However, he hadn't imagined that the ice stream would have caused his body to spin uncontrollably. Everything in front of his eyes was reeling, making it impossible for him to clearly see his surroundings.

Hong Ca! Finally... the ice hammer flipped bottom-up and accurately hit Mi Xiusa's body accompanied by the fiercest bang yet. As this heavy sound rang out, Mi Xiusa's body was instantly blasted into the distance like an artillery shell. Unable to gather any more strength, Mi Xiusa had absolutely no energy to resist.

## Chapter 120: Future Route (Part 2)

---

Under the attention of more than ten thousand spectators, Mi Xiusa's body was momentarily blasted off the elevated stage. Soon after, it flew another ten or so meters before finally smashing into the spectator stands. Fortunately, the spectators dodged in time, and so he only destroyed a chair and table. However, it was quite obvious that he had already been beaten off the competition area, and in this competition he was completely and thoroughly defeated.

Swaying while standing up, Mi Xiusa was gritting his teeth to bear the pain, and he resisted the pain covering his entire body with great difficulty. Up until now, he didn't even know that he had already lost. He stubbornly shook his head, and with effort searched for Suo Jia's figure. However, he soon discovered his surroundings...

“The victor of the inter-championship competition is, first year water system mage — Suo Jia!” Just as Mi Xiusa was dumbstruck, the head judge's voice clearly passed through his ears.

With a loud booming sound within his head, Mi Xiusa painfully closed his eyes. From beginning to defeat, he was completely confused. This was really the case, as he didn't even know how he was defeated!

Following the dispersing smoke on the elevated stage, Suo Jia lifted up his two fists high up in the air, and walked out with a firm and persistent expression; he won! He finally obtained victory, and stood at the peak of Holy Light Academy. In truth, he was only a

first grade new student. He was merely a water magic student!

Following Mi Xiusa's defeat, the inter-championship competition finally came to a satisfactory conclusion. After Suo Jia set a whole series of records, won a pair of Divine Needles, three nobility title promotions, as well as the one that he earned himself, in one day, Suo Jia's nobility title rose by four levels!

In this way, Suo Jia stepped over the seventh-rank nobility title grant, became a seventh-rank lord, was granted the sixth-rank nobility title, and became a sixth-rank lord. In one year's worth of time, Suo Jia madly entered the eight ranks, and from an ordinary person became a sixth-rank lord. This speed was completely unprecedented.

TL: I have no idea why he is a sixth-ranked lord instead of a fourth-ranked lord. The raw suggests that maybe you need two upgrades to go up a single rank.

Following the competition victory, Suo Jia's name was forever recorded in the annals. At the age of eight, not only did he grasp the Meditation Technique, he also learned the Ice Sphere Technique, Glacial Armor Technique, as well as the Frozen Revolving Gas. This allowed him to become a top-notch Mage Trainee.

Maybe ordinary people did not understand too well what this implied, but basically, Suo Jia who attended a year of school could already graduate. He used a year's worth of time to completely learn what others needed ten years for. This speed was already something that words could not describe.



Faced with this choice, Suo Jia did not know what he should do. Should he continue to attend school? Or should he graduate at this point and become a Mage Trainee, explore the world, and adventure for knowledge and experience? This really was a difficult decision to make.

Although, he already won the academy's championship, Suo Jia knew that he currently still didn't have sufficient strength to enter the Greater Trade Routes. Just as Duke Wen Sha had said, he could beat 100 individuals with Suo Jia's level of strength single-handedly!

After pondering for a while, Suo Jia finally decided not to graduate immediately. However, he would not go to the academy everyday to attend the classes anymore either. He wanted to retain his identity as a student but also the period of time he used to train. One must know..... after becoming a mage apprentice, studying is not as important as comprehending and understanding the magic.

The following month, Suo Jia entered closed doors training. He wanted to completely comprehend the Whip Hammer Technique he learned during the match. This will become Suo Jia's attacking method in close range and midrange from now on. As for long range, that was a magician's forte!

After Suo Jia secluded himself for about a week's time, he finally had a little success in comprehending the Whip Hammer Technique. Meanwhile, the end of the year finally arrived and Suo Jia was finally 9 years old. He came out from the closed doors and

celebrated New Year with his family before he secluded himself again. Without a single word nor seeing anyone, Suo Jia spent every single day in the underground training field. Nobody knew what he was doing, even when the fire wind girls came back a few times, he did not come out to meet them.

Half year's time passed in the blink of an eye, and the agreed time with the 10 big "Thief family" was finally here. Suo Jia came out from his closed doors training. He could ignore everything else, but the deal this time was of great importance. He had to personally witness it.

At the same time Suo Jia left the underwater training ground, the lord of the 10 influential thief families had already arrived. Pushing the door open, Suo Jia entered the tiny guest room and glanced at the 10 family lords who were sitting leisurely. Suo Jia couldn't help but smile; he knew for certain that these guys would have some of the things he needed.

Seeing Suo Jia pass through the door, the lords of the ten great families turned their heads over in succession. Under everyone's gaze, Suo Jia calmly sat at the host's position. At the same time, he waved his hand to indicate the dismissal of the maids.

After the door had been shut, Suo Jia smiled and said, "I wonder... did everyone finished their preparations? If possible, I think..... you guys may bring forth your conditions now."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the lords of the 10 great families pursed their brows in succession. At the same time, one of the lord opened his mouth and said, "Mister Suo Jia, even though your dagger is

precious..... after going back and comparing it with the list of materials you gave us, we helplessly found out that the value of those materials are too high. With just those materials, we can trade for more than 10 daggers like this!”

Remaining calm and collected, Suo Jia looked at the family lord who was talking. In fact, Suo Jia was already aware that those materials could produce approximately 40 legendary ranked battle armors. How could their value simply be described by a single word, expensive? It was fundamentally something you could see but can not touch.

However, Suo Jia didn't plan to shrink back at all. Looking at the 10 great family lords with a serene expression, Suo Jia dully said, “Indeed, I must admit that those materials are extremely precious. So much so that you can say it's something you could see but can not touch. I must admit, just by comparing the prices, you could purchase 10 of these daggers with those materials!”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the ten great family lords couldn't help but feel relieved. Even if the ten great family lords really wanted to have this dagger, they were not fond of being extorted by someone. A trade was possible; however, it had to be fair. They wouldn't permit anyone to seize an opportunity to bite them.

Just when all the family lords were nodding their heads silently, Suo Jia opened his mouth once more, “However, I wish everyone can understand, the dagger in my hand is the only one in the world, there are no duplicates in this world. Even if the other daggers for thieves are powerful, on what basis are they more amazing than this dagger?”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the lords of the ten great families couldn't help but darken their expression. That's right, if this was just a legendary ranked dagger, they wouldn't even care. No matter what, at least a legendary ranked equipment had value attached to them. Even if this dagger was not legendary ranked, it still possessed outstanding abilities. At this crucial moment, they couldn't bear to give up on this dagger no matter what.

While smiling, Suo Jia looked at the lords of the ten great families before he continued, "According to my knowledge, the competition between the thief families that occurs every 10 years is about to begin. I believe..... with the help of this dagger, getting the championship wouldn't be a problem. In other words, the importance of this dagger does not lie in itself. What it can provide everyone is the honor and benefits of the No. 1 thief family. I really wanted to know whether those materials are worthy of the honor and benefits you would gain from being the No. 1 thief family?"

"This....." Hearing Suo Jia's words, all the family lords couldn't help but respond vaguely. This was the most important point, no matter how valuable the dagger was by itself, it still had a limit. It was precisely as Suo Jia had said, the key point was the honor and benefits this dagger could bring about.

The ranking competition for the thieves was held once every decade. There was less than a month left until the next competition. Suo Jia's timing was a perfect opportunity for this transaction to take place; the arrangement was really accurately planned. Whoever received this dagger would most likely obtain the first place throne among all the other major thief families. This throne signified not only glory, but excessive wealth as well!

Would becoming the head of the thief families for a decade allow one to gain many benefits? If a magic item was placed in another family's commerce union, it could perhaps be sold for 100 gold. If it was placed in the head family's commerce union, even selling it for 200 gold wouldn't be overboard. Everyone would still scramble to buy it, as they all thought of the head thief family as one that's able to travel to more dangerous locations, and thus gain better items. The actual reality of the situation was pretty much as expected.

Seeing the ten great family lords immersed in silence, Suo Jia heavily said, "I hope that everyone take note that this time's transaction has a fair basis. If you're willing to buy it, then I'm willing to sell it. Nobody is being forced to purchase it. If anyone thinks it's expensive, then you may leave now. I definitely won't hold you back!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the ten great family lords couldn't help but bitterly scratch their heads. It was exactly because of this reason that they didn't have any choice. This was clearly extortion under false pretenses. However, they weren't able to break away. Whose fault was it that lacking this dagger would be unacceptable?

Seeing the ten great family lords' agonized expressions, Suo Jia smiled and said, "If you want to obtain this dagger, then you must pay up first. If you aren't willing to pay for it, you can't even discuss it. If everyone thinks that this dagger isn't worth so much money, then you should leave. I think....that there are others willing to buy this dagger aside from the ten great families."

Suo Jia's expression suddenly turned cold as he said, "Please

don't think of this as blackmail. Why don't you all think about it for a bit? If I sold this dagger to one of the top ten thief families, what kind of benefits would I gain? On the other hand, how much of a loss would you suffer?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the ten great family lords' expressions all became dumbstruck. Only now did they suddenly realize that Suo Jia didn't have to trade the dagger with them. There were over a thousand thief families in all of Holy Light Empire. If Suo Jia was carrying out this transaction for benefits, then he could randomly choose a middle-level thief family to trade it to. Either way, he would still gain a huge amount of profit. There were many things that the ten great families were currently unable to provide him anyways!

After some contemplation, a white-haired elder stood up and said in a dignified tone, "We have received Mister Suo Jia's camaraderie. We thank you dearly for granting this dagger to the ten great families and protecting the thief realm's stability. Based on this alone, we are willing to accept any price, no matter how high!"

The elder then turned around and said to the other lords, "Regardless, the relationships between the ten families are quite close. We all have connections to each other. This championship throne can only be born within the ten great families. Everyone, please bid your prices. No matter who obtains this dagger, it definitely won't have too great of an impact on us great ten!"

# Chapter 121: Selecting Treasures (Part 1)

---

Hearing the white-haired elder's words, the other family lords couldn't help but nod one after another. In the past few decades, the ten great families in the thief realm had been taking turns possessing the throne. They strengthened their relationships by marriage and other means. It could be said that after a few decades of engagement, the ten great families could even consider each other as relatives!

It was unlikely for the thief realm to be greatly influenced, regardless of who obtained the dagger among them. Just think about it, if a family outside of the ten great families became the number one thief family, then they would definitely suppress the remaining nine great families and establish their own partnership. It was also possible that once the ten great families' alliance was broken by other families, this alliance would be destroyed. Everyone knew that if they didn't destroy the ten great families, then they would be destroyed instead.

The other nine great family lords turned their gazes to the white-haired elder. They nodded their heads in succession to indicate that they were in favor of the elder's opinion. No matter what, this dagger had to remain within the ten great families. If that was not possible, then they would not hesitate to use force.

Of course, unless they really had no other choice, they absolutely would not resort to force. One of the reasons was that they do not wish to break the rules. As far as business was concerned, the most important aspect was honesty. This was all the more for a thief. Thieves could steal and fight over an item, but once they start doing business, they absolutely must not do these things anymore.

Otherwise, who would dare go buy things from them?

Furthermore, with Suo Jia's current position and status, stealing wasn't easy. Even if they did steal something, they wouldn't be able to use it. Once exposed, the only conclusion left for them would be the extermination of their entire family. Otherwise, Suo Jia would've had this dagger taken from him ages ago.

Seeing that everyone was in agreement, the white-haired elder turned around to face Suo Jia and said sincerely, "When we went back, we studied our options together several times. We understood that only after we collected all the materials would you be willing to trade. However..... "

Speaking until here, the elder hesitated for a moment and paused. Finally, he hardened himself and said, "However, you should know that those materials are extremely precious. It requires us to consume a great amount of money to gather all of them. Furthermore, it is too hard to gather all of them within half a year. Even if we did manage to gather all of them, honestly speaking, it would be very unlikely for us to trade with you anymore. By then, we really wouldn't be willing to let them go."

Hearing the elder's words, Suo Jia awkwardly scratched his head. He understood the elder's opinion; these materials were things that could only be found by chance. Even if one managed to use money to gather them, that would be an astronomical amount. Moreover..... who would be willing to use so many uncommon materials to trade for one dagger? Materials enough to forge 40 sets of armors surely wouldn't be little.



The elder continued, “This is why we, the top ten family masters, held several small meetings together. Everyone kept looking for ways to deal with this issue, and did not spend a single coin to purchase anything outside. We divided the list of materials you gave us into ten parts, and each family tried to settle a single portion of it. The ones that could not take care of it did not have the privilege to attend this trade meeting. Otherwise, the other nine families would act together to punish them!”

Speaking up to here, the white haired elder enviously gave Suo Jia a glance before saying, “It is still your good fortune. With our ten families combined together, we were barely able to collect all the materials on this list. We did not skip out on a single one. However, as a result, the resources that we had spent millennia accumulating were pretty much completely exhausted. Although we still have quite a bit of ordinary materials in stock, the precious ones have completely been brought out.”

“What!” Hearing the white haired elder’s words, Suo Jia stood up in shock. He looked at the white haired elder in disbelief; it was exactly as how the elder described, the materials on the list was this trade meeting’s main objective. Suo Jia also knew that by depending on a single family, it was impossible to completely gather the materials. According to Suo Jia’s original expectations, gathering 40 materials would already have met his requirements. However, contrary to his expectations, the ten big families worked together and gathered all of the materials, without a single one missing!

Seeing Suo Jia’s excited expression, the white haired elder smiled while saying, “Although each of our families all contributed part of the materials, because we equally distributed the burden, the

pressure was not too large. To us, using these materials to trade for that dagger was still worth it. However...”

Slightly pausing for a moment, the white haired elder resolutely continued, “Lord Suo Jia should understand that the dagger is not worth that much. Because of that... besides the materials, our families have also decided to each take out a piece of magical equipment. If you take interest in that item, then you can exchange with the respective family. What does Lord Suo Jia think about this?”

Faced with the white haired elder’s question, Suo Jia did not hesitate at all to give a thumbs up in reply. He looked at the white haired elder in admiration; this old fellow’s ability to handle affairs was formidable. He really was worthy of being called the master with the most prestige within the ten great families. When he took care of matters, the results were impeccable.

Firstly, the man had been able to collect the materials on the list. On this point alone, Suo Jia was unable to reject this exchange proposal. The elder didn’t even need to add in anything else into the transaction. The materials for the dagger alone were already good enough to trade.

Secondly, this old fellow prevented the families from suffering from too much of a loss. If each of the ten great families all tried to collect the materials themselves, then how much money would they have had to spend? In addition, there were 60-70 different types of materials on that list. Every single one of them were expensive and rare materials, and required a great amount of money to buy. However, the elder’s suggestion instead allowed

everyone to only take out a portion of the materials that they already possessed. This didn't require them to pay anything extra, and allowed them to have equal opportunities to compete.

In the end, the elder had prevented free competition. Whoever the dagger belonged to would definitely claim the number one throne in the thief families for the next decade. Any amount of cost for this dagger was worth it. If it was free competition, then the price tag would most likely be rise beyond proportion. It was possible that a family would have to use half their entire wealth to obtain the dagger.

Now, however, each of the families only needed to provide a small portion of the materials to obtain the qualifications to participate in this transaction. Following that, they would only need to take out a piece of magical equipment. It was uncomplicated and pleasant, and definitely did not affect the family's strength in the slightest. They only took out an insignificant amount of items from their family treasuries.

Although Suo Jia knew perfectly well that by doing this he would be losing out on a lot, Suo Jia knew even more so that if he did not do things this way, then it would be even more impossible to collect the listed materials. If the ten great families together could barely manage to procure all of the materials, how could a single family gather that much? Just as the white haired elder had said, even if he did manage to collect it in this way, there wouldn't be anyone willing to trade with him afterwards. If they used the materials to make several dozen armors and weapons, it would definitely increase their family's power substantially. It definitely would not be much less than obtaining this dagger.

In addition, because there were ten great families, each family was only allowed to put up a single treasure to compete with each other. Because of this, the treasure's quality, capability, and results would definitely all be high. Just imagine, if these families have thousands of years of history behind them, which of them wouldn't have any treasures left behind by their ancestors? This was related to becoming the number one thief family; who would dare be stingy? No one dared to not put their best effort!

## Chapter 122: Selecting Treasures (Part 2)

---

Nodding his head in admiration, Suo Jia smiled while saying, “This young one is sincerely convinced by the venerable elder’s ability to handle affairs. Your ability is at the peak of perfection, and under such business conditions, this young one is unable to refuse. Venerable elder has made this young one’s mind completely clear. Even if I wanted to refuse, it would be impossible.”

“Hahahaha...” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the master of the ten great thief families also began to laugh out loud. The foundation of this business transaction was based on the cooperation of them all, and each family’s consumption was quite low. All that was left to do now was to obtain that dagger. This was equal to the collected strength of the ten great families’ powers as a whole.

After a short pause, the white haired elder continued, “Alright, we have already brought the listed materials with us, and not a single item is missing. Now everyone should take them out and let Lord Suo Jia look them over.”

Hearing the white clothed elder’s words, all of the family masters operated their own interspatial rings, suddenly... many wooden boxes roughly one meter squared in size appeared one by one in the small room. There were a total of ten wooden boxes, and within them were the materials that Suo Jia needed.

“Hehe.....” Seeing this scene, Suo Jia couldn’t help but chuckle. He slowly stepped forward and opened the boxes one after another to examine the items. If it was just as the white-haired elder had

said; all the materials were here, and not a single one missing. Ores, animal hides, wood..... everything that should've be there was there.

Closing the lid of the boxes lightly, Suo Jia stood up as he smiled, "Alright everyone, let us go to the big assembly hall to continue our business transaction. I will let the maids handle the goods." While speaking, Suo Jia tossed the dagger towards the white-haired elder. With the dagger as the collateral, they wouldn't fear Suo Jia playing any tricks on them.

Soon after, the ten great family lords walked out of the living room one by one under the white haired elder's lead. As they all began to head towards the villa's big assembly hall, Suo Jia waved his palm and stored the ten boxes of materials into his interspatial ring. He'd already planned it out; after the transaction was completed, he would go to the dwarf blacksmith. The dwarf had long since swore to Suo Jia that after collecting all of the materials, he would help Suo Jia create the weapons and armor for free.

The ten great family lords were restless, pacing back and forth in the meeting room. In the head seat sat Suo Jia, who was currently focusing his gaze on the table in front of him. On top of the shining, clean table were 10 open boxes. What Suo Jia was currently examining were the treasures that the ten boxes contained.

These boxes contained the magic artifacts that the ten great family lords had brought. Since each one of them could only present one item, every one of these artifacts were undoubtedly Legendary-ranked and above. Each box also contained a booklet

that clearly introduced the magic item's characteristics, its effects, and its advantages. This was because the lords were afraid that Suo Jia's knowledge and experience weren't enough to recognize these magic artifacts.

Although the ten great family lords all had a lot of confidence in their own treasures, they also knew that all the other major families had advanced items as well. Even if these other items were not as good as their own, there wouldn't be that great of a difference. The final decision would definitely depend on Suo Jia's tastes.

Leaving aside the expressions of the ten family lords, Suo Jia was currently on the other side, staring at the magic items within those large boxes in front of him with a racing heart. He really wanted to just take everything. However, Suo Jia knew that this was unfortunately impossible.

Among the ten boxes, 6 of them contained peak-grade Legendary-ranked magic items, while the other 4 unexpectedly contained Epic-ranked items. As Suo Jia examined these items, he really didn't want to give up a single one of them, but he knew that he would have to choose only one.

If he could possess all the treasures in the boxes and wear them, Suo Jia believed that his strength would definitely increase by several-fold. However, this kind of situation could only happen in his dreams. Right now he could only select one out of ten.

Suo Jia greedily glanced at the equipment one after another. In the end..... Suo Jia helplessly sighed and painfully shut his eyes as

he pushed the other boxes back. He closed the lid of the remaining box and tightly embraced it before he said resolutely, “I have made my decision. This is my selection!”

Seeing that Suo Jia had already made his decision, certain people among the ten family lords were pleased, while others were grieving. Anxiously waiting for the other nine family leaders to take the boxes back into their possessions, Suo Jia almost stretched his hands and snatch it back. However, Suo Jia knew that if he really went and did it, that would be equal to throwing his life away.

Suo Jia trembled as he tightly embraced the box, “Everyone, it is already time for lunch. We have already prepared food downstairs. We should all go together.....”

Apart from that lucky guy who had obtained the dagger, how could the other family lords be in the mood to stay behind and eat? Not waiting for Suo Jia to finish what he was saying, the white haired old man bitterly said, “No need! We are not going to trouble Lord Suo Jia.”

Suo Jia wasn't one who didn't recognize face. He simply expressed warm hospitality to his customers, and then allowed the ten great family lords to leave. Suo Jia really wanted to carefully study these new treasures, and find out exactly how formidable they were!

Quickly, the ten great family lords left one after another. Meanwhile, Suo Jia excitedly embraced the case as he directly ran towards the secret underwater training room. Honestly speaking,



obtaining this treasure was really beyond Suo Jia's expectations.

Although there were a total of ten treasures for Suo Jia to choose from, in reality, Suo Jia had instantly chosen one the second the boxes were placed in front of him, before he had even opened any of them. No matter how amazing the other items were, Suo Jia definitely wouldn't have hesitated in choosing this one.

That instant the ten boxes had been placed in front of him, Suo Jia had clearly sensed an awe-inspiring feeling leaking out from one of the boxes. The slightest perception of it had allowed Suo Jia to discover that the treasure within the box actually contained something that formed a mysterious connection with the Atlantis' Wisdom on his head. In that instant, Suo Jia was able to sense that the magic item within this box was clearly an Epic-ranked magic item!

Suo Jia took a deep breath and gently opened the box. What he saw was an unusual ear ornament. What was important to notice was that there was only one of them, not a pair. In reality, only one of these had ever existed.

Although it was only a single ear ornament, it was actually comprised of seven blue earrings. Each of the rings had mysterious writings written on their surfaces. If Suo Jia hadn't been well versed in this ear ornament's exact properties, he definitely would've worn 3 on each ear, and then stare blankly in confusion at the extra ring.

Unable to deal with the pain after puncturing seven holes in succession on his left ear, and then inserting each of those fine and

exquisite earrings into the holes, Suo Jia used a few Moisture Techniques on his ear wounds.

Suo Jia lightly shook his head. As expected....just as the epic records had stated, a sharp and clear feeling, like the flowing of spring water, could be heard flowing from Suo Jia's heart. Under Suo Jia's perception, he could tell that this sound was indeed spreading from his heart as its origin, and not from his ear.

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia took out the books he had purchased and quickly flipped through the pages to where the Atlantis set was discussed. After some close examination of the text, he discovered that indeed....his current earrings were exactly the same as the ones drawn in the book.

The name of this set of earrings was Atlantis' Whispers, and it had the ability to allow one to hear the whispers/murmurs/words of the water elements to increase one's understanding of them. Through listening, one could raise their familiarity with the water elements. At the same time, once the earrings connected with Atlantis' Wisdom, they would boost the might of any water elemental magics.

Based on the words, these earrings didn't seem to have many functions, making it hard to see where they got their famous reputation from. However, in reality, these earrings were definitely worthy of their fame as being part of the most powerful Epic-ranked set. Their formidability wasn't one that could be physically felt, and definitely was impossible to understand.

Being able to hear the water elements' whispers meant being able

to increase one's understanding of the water elements. The deeper the understanding, the more one can fully utilize the water's capabilities. Even if Suo Jia didn't have much experience and hadn't trained enough in magic, simply relying on understanding the water elements was enough to make his water stream's power much stronger.

At the same time, as a result of hearing the water elements' whispers, one's familiarity with them would continuously deepen as well. The deeper one's familiarity, the easier it is to control the water. It could be said that these earrings could improve Suo Jia's water manipulation! It could increase the total amount of water that Suo Jia could control. This was really important, especially to Suo Jia, who had come up with the Whip-Hammer Technique.

Finally, because Suo Jia was now wearing two parts of the equipment set, they had gained the ability to interconnect with each other to raise Suo Jia's overall comprehension of the water elements.

Understanding gained from Atlantis' Whispers in addition to the knowledge gained from Atlantis' Wisdom gave rise to a deeper understanding of the water elements. The more this understanding increased, the mightier one's water magic would become. Moreover, this included all water magics, not just a few.

Of course, just like the magic items that Suo Jia currently possessed, Atlantis' Whispers wouldn't instantly increase Suo Jia's strength. The effects were originally imperceptible, and would gradually appear as time flowed on. As he advanced in his training, the effects would appear bit by bit. The overall benefits were not

present on itself, but were left inside the user's body and would become the user's own abilities. This was the effect of an Epic-ranked item.

The epic ranked equipment was renowned because the historic person was well-known. They were the hero that brought about the fame of the epic ranked equipment and vice versa. Only an epic ranked equipment could possibly bring up an epic ranked hero.

Happily shaking his head, the seven earrings momentarily made contact with each other and made a clear ringing noise. The sound gently flowed out from Suo Jia's heart. He closed his eyes in excitement and silently listened to it, trying to understand it.....

Immersed in listening to the water elements' whispers, Suo Jia sat there for an entire week. Aside from eating meals and carrying out any other life necessities, Suo Jia didn't stop for a single moment, and used his entire being to listen and come to understand the whispers.

Finally, after a week had passed, news was delivered from the outside. The fire wind warriors had returned. Only after hearing this did Suo Jia remember that there was still a huge pile of precious, priceless materials within his interspatial ring. Right now....he could go find the dwarf blacksmith. After all, the dwarf had already agreed to create equipment for Suo Jia for free if he gathered and presented these materials!

# Chapter 123: Fighting With The One's Entire Body (Part 1)

---

Under Suo Jia's orders, the 36 fire wind warriors entered the underwater training area one after another. It has already been 3 months since they had last returned. Seeing the familiar environment of the training area, as well as the serious-faced Suo Jia, all the girls could feel their noses smart, and they almost began to cry.

To the fire wind warriors, this place was their roots, their home. Aside from their own sisters, Suo Jia was the only close relationship that the girls had. He was like a father or mother figure to them. Suo Jia had given these girls new lives, and genuine freedom. Moreover, he had always cared for them, and organized all of their actions, just like a parent would.

Unfortunately, although the girls felt this way, whenever they saw Suo Jia's childish appearance and his solemn face, it was impossible to label him as a father.

As the group of girls was evaluating Suo Jia, Suo Jia was also evaluating them. Seven months had already passed since the inter-championship competition. During this time, they had only met a few times in rushed passing. Suo Jia couldn't even remember anymore when the last time everyone had sat down without any rush to actually chat, and when he had last actually properly looked at the girls.

It had already been a year since the fire wind warriors had broken away from the Holy Light Empire. During this period, the

girls had gone through quite a lot of changes. During the beginning half of the year, they had all been running all over the place to deliver certain merchandise. However, in the most recent half year, they had been continuously fighting against powerful magical beasts. The past year had made the originally young and immature girls grow quite a bit. Suo Jia could now see the murderous aura from them; a very profound murderous aura!

Some people might find it strange that killing magical beast could generate a murderous aura. This is true...if one only killed normal magical beasts, no murderous aura would appear. However, the ones that the girls had faced were far more formidable, and the 36 sisters had to rely on their teamwork to tire the magical beast to death.

It could be said that every battle had been fought with the feeling of embracing death. Hovering at the brink of death each of the girls had experienced countless life or death trials. They had felt the death god brush past their shoulders numerous times. Although they hadn't personally killed a person yet, they'd let out the same murderous aura as if they were. The only thing was...this murderous aura wasn't sinister or cold. Rather, it was as fiery as a raging inferno! This was the murderous aura akin to the raging flames that a phoenix bathes in that the fire wind warriors had gained after discarding their thoughts of life and death away!

Gazing intently at the 36 girls that he had long since become familiar with, Suo Jia knew that he could now advance to the second step of his plans. For the sake of turning these girls into battle goddesses not only in name, but in reality, Suo Jia, as a warrior, knew that he couldn't avoid staining his own hands red, even if he didn't want to.

While thinking, Suo Jia said in a heavy voice, “I believe that everyone has gained a lot from the recent fights in the past half year. This is something that I can tell from reading everyone’s expressions and postures.”

After a slight pause, he continued, “For the following period of time, I think everyone should just stay here for a while. Don’t go anywhere, and properly organize, absorb, and digest through what you have gained the past year. Afterwards—I have a new task to give you girls!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, all the girls curled their hands into fists in excitement. During the past year, they spent the entire time wandering around outside. Although they weren’t destitute or homeless, they had been aimlessly drifting about like leaves in the wind; they hadn’t stopped for a single moment. They were currently so weary of this wandering lifestyle that they really needed to properly rest for a bit, and recover the fatigue that they could feel down to their bones.

They sighed in admiration at Suo Jia. These plans really couldn’t be any better. If Suo Jia continued to sent them outside to do tasks, they definitely wouldn’t reject. However, they would’ve felt extremely vexed. It was not only extremely easy to get into accidents, but more importantly, they were at the point where they could no longer gain much from the experiences anymore. Moreover, the things they had gained earlier could easily be forgotten by this point.

Under Suo Jia’s urging, the girls all left to start their one month

of closed door training. After experiencing so much during the past year, they had to organize, digest and absorb it. According to Suo Jia's arrangements, they all had to come out once a week and discuss and share what they learned with each other. They needed to help each other with their confusions and difficult problems. Only this type of environment would help them the most.

After finishing his arrangements for the girls, Suo Jia left the White Villa and went straight to find Emma so that they could rush over to the dwarf blacksmith's shop. With Emma as a witness, the dwarf that valued promises even more important than his life wouldn't be able to take back his words even if he died.

It had been half a year since they had met, but Emma was still as lively and adorable, youthful and pretty, as before. This was really all thanks to Suo Jia's skill. However....recently, Suo Jia had been engrossed in training, so Emma had already gone over 3 months without any touch up treatments. Although she was still beautiful, it was clear that she had grown slightly chubbier. If any more time passed, the Shar Pei lady would most likely make her appearance once more.

That's why Emma had been happy to death after learning that Suo Jia had come to find her. She immediately agreed with his request. No matter what, that dwarf would have to honor his word. However, as compensation, Suo Jia would have to help Emma touch up her appearance after the matter was over.

Something like this was as easy as lifting a finger, so Suo Jia had no reason to reject her request. At the moment....Suo Jia and Emma were rushing over to the dwarf's blacksmith shop, and they



were able to find the perspiring master smoothly without a hitch.

Hearing that Suo Jia unexpectedly managed to gather all of the materials, the perspiring master could not help but be dumbstruck. There was no way he would believe such a thing; you have to understand, even if it was an entire country using its strength to find these materials, it would still be extremely difficult. However, within the timespan of only half a year, Suo Jia had managed to completely gather the materials. Wasn't this simply an impossible task?

Confronted by the perspiring master who was currently in disbelief, Suo Jia decided not to say too much. He directly took out ten cases from his interspatial ring and allowed the perspiring master to inspect it. At this point, the perspiring master was finally without words.

TL: In the raws, the author just calls him "falling sweat".

After confirming that everything was there, the perspiring master in the end really did live up to his title as the dwarf race's most outstanding master. Overjoyed, he promised Suo Jia that not only would he make the 40 armor sets, the most important thing was that he was willing to take measurements and make them into an all new half Epic-ranked set!

# Chapter 124: Fighting With The One's Entire Body (Part 2)

---

In the following month, the perspiring master did not actually begin forging, but rather stayed with Suo Jia and gathered all the materials needed for the fire wind warriors and even personally saw a few of the fire wind warriors display their fighting styles and skills. After determining their characteristics, he had an even harder time with just the history of the materials. For the sake of creating this set of armor, the old perspiring master decided to create it at all costs.

According to the perspiring master, either he wasn't going to do it, or he was going to do his best. Otherwise, these valuable materials would be wasted and he would be punished by the dwarf god. For a dwarf, the value of these materials was something completely different. It was enough to make his name known for all eternity!

After an entire month, the process was still not finished. Even when the girls all came out of their closed door training, the perspiring master still had not finished making a draft, finally... the perspiring master shouted in a blunt manner for the fire wind warriors to use their entire bodies to fight. The perspiring master sat down on the side and observed while recording with a pen and a piece of paper.

Originally, the purpose of this was simply to allow him to observe the specialties and strategies in combat. However, he did not expect that once the fights broke out, none of them were able to hold back to the point where it looked like magical beasts fighting!

It's important to understand that all of the girls were fire wind warriors, and all of their specialties were the same. However, they were not exactly the same, and all of them had their unique skills. Within their fights, everyone learned that although they had the same types of bodies, they all began to gain understanding of new skills and enlightenment. Almost every day, they were all gaining new insights!

It was not just limited to this, and as the fights between them were carried out, everyone continued to mutually understand and deepen day after day. This was greatly beneficial to them in terms of understanding and nurturing. It had an insurmountable benefit to their teamwork, and at the same time increased their individual strengths as well. The strength of the entire team increased overall!

Finally, as well as being the most important, through the battles, everyone gained real combat experience. It could even be said that they gained crazy upgrades, after all... fighting with magical beasts and fighting with a real person was two different things. Human's greatest enemy will forever be humanity itself; it was not the magical beasts, but rather, the more formidable enemy could only be humanity, and could not be the magical beasts!

Within the battles, they had to face attacks from every direction, and had to resist attacks from enemies of all directions. They had to deal with all types of methods and difficult challenges. Towards one's maturity, there were not enough words to describe the benefits.

When it first started, Suo Jia was only standing on the side with a smile on his face as he watched. However in the end, Suo Jia was unable to resist; after watching everyone fight so excitedly in full swing, Suo Jia finally charged in as well. He summoned his water stream and began to attack all the girls indiscriminately.

At first, none of the girls dared to heavily attack Suo Jia. After all...he was only a 9 and a half year old child. If an accident occurred, what would they do then?

Although Suo Jia was only 9 years old, he was already seen as a father to the girls. Even though he wasn't a father in a real sense, the words that Suo Jia spoke and the words a father spoke weren't very different from each other.

When they were young, they had to listen to their father's words. Whatever their father told them to do, they had to do it. Just as they had grown older and become more independent, Suo Jia had taken the father position, and given them new lives, as well we genuine freedom. Therefore, Suo Jia was the main pillar for these girls. His arrangements were the criteria for their actions!

If, for example, Suo Jia suddenly died, then the girls wouldn't know how they could possibly live the rest of their lives. Although physically, they were already mature women, they were mentally still children that had to listen to their father. In reality, no matter how a girl was, who wouldn't listen to their father's words? Even if one lived for a hundred years, as long as one's father was still living, one would still be obedient to him!

“Father, leader, master, boss, friend, brother, benefactor,

protector of freedom, preserver of life....” All of these titles combined described the figure and position that Suo Jia was in the girls’ hearts. It was an extremely complicated feeling that one couldn’t clearly describe in words. It could also be said that the girls would willingly sacrifice themselves to protect Suo Jia.

As a result of these complicated emotions, none of the girls dared to seriously attack Suo Jia. If they could block, they’d block; if they could dodge, they’d dodge. They completely acted as if Suo Jia was just a younger brother playing around. In their opinions, how could the 9 year old Suo Jia possibly be their opponent? If they exerted even the slightest amount of strength, they’d injure him!

However soon afterwards, the girls became more alert. It wasn’t their acute senses that had alerted them, but the teachings that had been engraved into them, which was much more useful than teaching by words. When the girls began to sustain nearly fatal attacks one after another from Suo Jia, how could they possibly dare to not be alert?

Underneath the enormous underwater training session, the ice stream snaked around, whizzing back and forth. Under Suo Jia’s control, all the girls that were within a 10m radius from him were all indiscriminately attacked. Moreover, Suo Jia had no intention of holding back. If he was to fight, he’d make an all-out effort! Otherwise, the meaning of this exercise would be lost.

“Clang....rumble!” With a loud bang, the thick and solid ice stream first smashed one fire wind warrior’s weapon into pieces, and then fiercely crashed into her abdomen, causing her to fly backwards. Only after colliding into a sturdy pillar did she fall to

the ground, as blood wildly spurt out from her mouth. Although she hadn't lost her ability to fight, her injuries weren't light either.

In quick succession, all of the fire wind warriors finally realized that although Suo Jia was still young, he was not inferior to those powerful magical beasts. They were both equally dangerous. Holding back even a tiny bit would be digging their own graves!

After a while, all of the fire wind warriors nearby had no choice but to gather their energy and abandon their current opponents. Instead, they concentrated completely on attacking Suo Jia. Otherwise, they'd end up being blasted away by him!

In but a moment, the pressure around Suo Jia grew. He frequently suffered from the coordinated attacks of a few of the girls working together. With Suo Jia's current strength, he was not afraid of going against any of the fire wind warriors 1v1. However, when it was 1v2, Suo Jia could only persist in blocking. If it were 1v3, then Suo Jia would be forced to flee.

The entire battle situation had become a lot more complicated after Suo Jia had joined. All of the girls had gradually built up their fire qi, and had subconsciously started to use all of their efforts to attack. In an instant, the entire underwater training ground had become utter chaos. If anyone had walked in without knowing the situation, they would've thought that they had just entered a battleground between enemies.

Time unknowingly passed by. Elder Sister walked up to Suo Jia amidst the chaos to inform him that Suo Jia had to attend the school's annual challenge competition. Only then did Suo Jia

suddenly realize that a year had just flown by like that.

This time, the competition a year later had no highlights worth mentioning. Suo Jia didn't even attend the inter-grade competition. Only Aimi and Aila had gone out, and they had even earned the championship trophy cup. The past year, Aila and Aimi had been using the Exhaustion Training Method to boost their magics, and had long since become mage trainees. The combination of Heaven's One Holy Water and the Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons was unrivaled.

Although he hadn't participated in the inter-grade competition, Suo Jia was still the captain, and so he had the qualifications to enter the inter-championship. Aimi and Aila still chose to forfeit this right as they had before. Putting other reasons aside, they knew clearly that Suo Jia alone wasn't someone they could surpass. Entering the inter-championship was equivalent to giving away their noble ranks to Suo Jia.

After a year, even Suo Jia was unsure of exactly what kind of realm he had reached. Only the 36 fire wind warriors had gained a deep understanding of how terrifying he was. This was something that had left impressions in their bodies, and was definitely not something they could easily forget.

The inter-championship competition wasn't any interesting either. Aside from the 17-18 year groups that were forced to enter the competition, the other age groups all forfeited. Suo Jia had only spent 5 minutes to win 2 rounds, and was able to smoothly advance two more ranks and become a fifth ranked lord!

After the competition ended, New Year's began. The perspiring master had finally completed his count, so he bid farewell to Suo Jia and went back to the holy land of the dwarves with all of the materials. There, he was able to use the lava and whole-heartedly concentrate on creating the 40 sets of armor. According to legends, the dwarf god had used that exact same lava to create divine artifacts.

Other people spent the New Year's gathering with their families and enjoying celebrations. However, Suo Jia spent the New Year immersing himself with battles. Although the perspiring master had just left, none of them had felt that they had fought enough yet, so they continued the free fights through days and nights.

The month after New Year's, everyone was finally satisfied with their work and stopped. Although they would still be able to collect benefits from continuing the free fights, everyone knew that if they continued, the results wouldn't be as evident anymore.

Though these free fights, everyone was able to organize, digest, and absorb the skills they had gained the past year. Most importantly, they were able to understand more uses of the fire and wind arts, skills, and methods from each other. Each one of them could clearly sense that their strength had exponentially increased.

In addition, the battle experience they had gained had also increased by a substantial margin. It could be said with certainty that this return trip had allowed every one of the girls to clearly boost their strength by leaps and bounds. They were able to perfect their battle systems, raise their battle experience, and strengthen



their appreciation and understandings of fire and wind. Most importantly, from going against their comrades, their coordination as a team had already reached a realm that they previously hadn't even been able to dream of.

Everyone deeply understood each of their comrade's skills, traits, and habits. Majority of the battles didn't require any communication between each other. They could understand what their comrade was going to do next and how they were going to do it. It was exactly like the saying: "the person that understands you the most isn't your friend, but your rival!" Without fighting each other, two people will never be able to understand each other at such a level.

A month of the new year had already passed, and Suo Jia was now 10. Although the past few months with the girls had been very fun and substantial, he knew that for the sake of his objective, he couldn't stay by these girls' sides. They would have to go experience nature's storms for themselves. Only then would they be able to grow further!

The commerce union's methods would continue as they had been. Since they had already started it, they naturally had to do their best for it. In addition....Suo Jia's second level of plans depended on the commerce union.

After a bit over a year, Suo Jia's White Villa and the fire wind warriors had earned Suo Jia a massive amount of gold. Suo Jia's wealth had already reached 2.4 billion. However, Suo Jia knew that this money would be spent very quickly.

First he had to find Duke Wen Sha, and as a merchant, he'd have to donate 1000 million. Among this amount....according to the Empire's new regulations, payments of 1mil, 10mil, 100mil, 1000mil, could be used to raise Suo Jia's noble rank. A contribution of 1000mil would raise Suo Jia from a fifth ranked lord to a third ranked lord.

Afterwards, Suo Jia would continuously contribute 100mil. This money would be used to raise their Golden Flames Commerce Union from Rank E to Rank B. That way, they'd be certified to transport larger amounts of merchandise. In addition, the 36 fire wind warriors would be able to escort large groups of 100 people. They'd be able to use 10 freight wagons to transport the large groups for them to begin businesses in Holy Light City!

# Chapter 125: A Confusing And Mysterious Method (Part 1)

---

For the sake of thoroughly eliminating the fire wind warrior's past, they changed their commerce union's name to the Golden Flame Corps. The 36 fire wind warrior's names were also differentiated into the Golden Flame number 1, Golden Flame number 2...

The Golden Flame Commerce Union was represented by a rising Golden Flame. Each and every Golden Flame Chamber of Commerce member all had to wear this badge at the sleeve of their right arms. All of the freight wagons used by the Golden Flame Commerce Union had the Golden Flame insignia as well. Although the Golden Flame Commerce Union had already been established for a bit more than a year, it had not actually dealt with any large scale business operations yet. Strictly speaking, they were simply the White Villa's supplier, and the world doesn't even know the existence of this Commerce Union.

However, now it was different. After investing a billion gold, the Commerce Union was directly promoted to Rank B. They were allowed to take on many large scale business operations within Holy Light Empire, and only from then on would the Golden Flame Commerce Union really emerge in front of the rest of the world.

The Golden Flame Commerce Union was currently composed of the 36 Golden Flame warriors. Under their control were ten large freight wagons, and each of the freight wagons had ten staff members that were in charge of the cargo transport and supervising of the goods. As for the Golden Flame warriors, they

were the original fire wind warriors, and they were in charge of the escorting.

As for the remaining 100 million from the the 400 million gold, they gave it to Golden Flame number 1. The Golden Flame caravan set out according to a pre-determined business route, and the second part of Suo Jia's plan also officially began.

After sending off the girls, Suo Jia did not immediately start his closed door training. He returned to the academy to gather information in the library instead. There were many doubts within his mind that he had to carefully investigate.

It had almost been a year since he obtained the Atlantis' Wisdom, as well as the Faerie's Soul and Frost's Sigh. If the effects of these magic items were genuine, then Suo Jia's meditation right now should have broken through a boundary layer, or maybe even reached the third layer or higher. However in truth, Suo Jia was still stuck at the first layer!

Each layer of meditation had a clear difference. Not only would there be a significant increase in the cultivation speed of Magic and Spirit Power, the most important thing was the upper limit of the Magic and Spirit Power!

Recently, Suo Jia could clearly feel that although he was constantly maintaining the state of meditation, the growth of his Magic and Spirit Power were slowing down. Although he could not say that he was stuck, he still could not break through to the second layer.

Formidable mages could emit powerful and oppressive Magic Power from their entire body at any given time. Especially during a fight, one could completely rely on Magic Power to create a Magic Field to confuse their opponents and disable them during a fight.

Magic Power was a mage's energy. By relying on Spirit Power to start a spell, once they entered combat, a formidable mage could cause the elements within 10 meters of their surrounding to vibrate. One could tell it possessed an imposing force with just a quick glance, and in order to achieve this goal, one had to raise their meditation to a higher layer.

The foundation of a mage was meditation; mage is a combat occupation that is established by meditation. The higher the layer of one's meditation, the greater the might of the mage. If one was stuck at the first layer forever, then it was impossible to become formidable.

Meditation had a total of ten layers, and correspondingly separated like the ten ranks of magic. However, although it was divided into ten layers, the last layer was without a limit. Even if both mages were at the tenth rank, their formidability might be worlds apart. It was possible that this disparity might even be greater than between that of a rank 1 mage and a rank 10 mage. A Rank 10 mage was not the end, but rather the beginning!

With the assistance of the librarian, Suo Jia quickly found some books regarding meditation and grabbed the books with both hands. Suo Jia carefully read the books, and unexpectedly, it was better not to look. After looking, Suo Jia almost cried out.

Relying on external things! That's right... Suo Jia was overwhelmed to find that even though he always tried to avoid relying on external items, in actuality, he still relied excessively on external items. He had excessively relied on the Atlantis's Wisdom!

Although the Atlantis' Wisdom could help Suo Jia preserve meditation indefinitely, was it really that simple? No... this was merely the base. The most important part of meditation was to realize and comprehend the magical elements, as well as communicating with the elements.

Although Suo Jia always maintained the meditative state, he never took the initiative to absorb and communicate with the received information. If this happens, other than an increase in Magic and Spirit Power, it was impossible for him to break through into the second layer.

Regarding this, Suo Jia's subconscious mind had already interacted with the water elements for more than a year under the assistance of Atlantis' Wisdom. He had accumulated a huge volume of information, but this information was completely stored within the dormant parts of Suo Jia's consciousness. His subjective consciousness had not proficiently understood it yet, and to breakthrough the second layer, Suo Jia still had to take the initiative to enter the meditative boundary and extract these valuable information hidden within his consciousness.

After he understood everything, Suo Jia impatiently returned home and extended his closed door training to three months. Except for when he came out to have his meal or use the restroom,

he spent most of his time in the state of meditation and extract the information from his subconscious mind.

Suo Jia took no less than 3 months to absorb the information that had accumulated for an entire year. Within those 3 months, Suo Jia's magic and spiritual power were growing like crazy. Three months later, after Suo Jia came out from the closed doors training, he had already successfully promoted to the 2nd layer of meditation!

Softly opening his eyes, Suo Jia couldn't help but laugh bitterly, because the information accumulated for a year was sufficient for him to promote to the 3rd layer of meditation. However, in reality, too much time had passed and the information was concealed too deep. It was impossible to draw out the information in a short period of time. Although he would not lose anything, his promotion speed had been drastically reduced.

After pondering for a little while, Suo Jia knew that from now on, he had to spend at least 6 hours everyday to conduct meditation and extract the information regarding the water elements in his subconscious mind. Otherwise, his promotion speed would continue to reduce.

After a short while, Suo Jia flipped through a thick magic book that was covered with a thick layer of dust. At that moment..... Suo Jia was already an Elementary Mage since he broke through the 2nd level of meditation. It was finally the time for him to start practicing the real Ice Sphere Technique!

Even though what the so-called genuine Ice Sphere Technique

discharged was still an ice sphere, its strength was incomparable. What the genuine Ice Sphere Technique discharged was an ice sphere that resembles a hedgehog. Its surface was covered with sharp ice thorns, so enemies not only had to brace themselves for the impact of the ice sphere but also the jab of the ice thorns!

That was not all, the core of a genuine Ice Sphere was hollow and cold air was stored up within it that would detonate upon contact. Once the Ice Sphere touched the target, the ice thorns would penetrate the receiving party's body and then the entire Ice Sphere would explode like a bomb, forming an icy fog around 2 meters in diameter. The icy fog had an extremely low temperature that could instantly freeze the enemy!



## Chapter 126: A Confusing And Mysterious Method (Part 2)

---

It can be said, that the true Ice Sphere's greatest characteristic was its ability to create sharp thorns, and secondly increase the freezing effect. Even if you used a weapon, armor, or shield to block the Ice Sphere's sharp thorn attack, it was still impossible to avoid the freezing icy fog. Other than gritting your teeth and resisting the attack, there was no alternative; this was the true Ice Sphere technique, the frightening Ice Sphere technique!

Other than the Ice Sphere Technique, an Elementary Mage gains another defensive spell. That spell was precisely the Icy Thorn Protection. The surface of the Glacial Armor would be covered with icy thorns, and they were not merely for the sake of stabbing and injuring enemies. The instant anyone made contact with these spikes, an eroding and freezing cold air would start its erosion!

On the aspect of auxiliary magic, the Revolving Frozen Gas' next stage was the Freezing Touch. This was a typical auxiliary ice system spell where one would be frozen immediately upon being touched by Suo Jia. Once his strength, Magic Power and Spirit Power were increased and he mastered this technique, the moment he touched his opponent, they would instantly turn into an ice cube!

However, even now, Suo Jia who had just learned the spell could already display a certain amount of strength. With just a single touch, the other party's body surface would already be immediately covered by a layer of ice and temporarily lose the ability to move, unless they depended on brute force to break out.

Otherwise, they would definitely become ice sculptures!

An Elementary Mage's three main magic spells included the True Ice Sphere and Icy Thorn Protection. These three spells possessed thorns and freezing effects, as well as the auxiliary magic with the most powerful freezing capability, the Freezing Touch! They would only be considered a qualified Elementary Mage and gain the rights to get a certificate from the Magic Hall by mastering these three spells.

It was worth mentioning that the Freezing Touch, True Ice Sphere and Icy Thorn Protection were not the same. The genuine Ice Sphere and Icy Thorn Protection only had a fixed probability to freeze the opponent. Most of the time, it only resulted in making the receiving party's movement become sluggish.

However, the Freezing Touch was different, the opponent was guaranteed to freeze once it was activated. Even if they were not frozen, their body's surface would inevitably be covered by a layer of thick ice. The only method to escape this was by using brute force to break the ice layer. Otherwise, only death awaits.

The True Ice Sphere and the Icy Thorn Protection were both good techniques, and they made Suo Jia's eyes shine with a clear light. However, what made Suo Jia genuinely excited was the Freezing Touch. That was simply a magic made just for Suo Jia. The only problem was whether Suo Jia's concept could be achieved or not.

In reality, the Freezing Touch had always been denounced as a useless magic. Even though its effects were outstanding, the

condition to activate it required the caster to touch the opponent, making it practically useless. As a mage, how was it possible for them to touch their opponent's body? They would already be turned into a mincemeat before they even had a chance to touch their opponent.

However, it was different for Suo Jia. After taking a quick glance at the Freezing Touch, the first thing that emerged in Suo Jia's mind was his very own ice stream. If he treated the ice stream as his own extended arm, would it still have the same effects if he activated the Freezing Touch after the ice stream touched the opponent?

Suo Jia immediately put his thoughts into action. He spread out both of his arms and pulled that long ice stream out, however..... the ice stream today seemed very different from before. He was speechless as he looked at the huge guy wriggling in the air. Suo Jia completely lost his ability to think.

Before he entered the closed door training, Suo Jia's ice stream was only about as thick as an arm. However, the ice stream was already as thick as a thigh after 3 months. Its length had also extended from 9 meters to 20 meters. As the huge ice stream was wriggling continuously in the warehouse, a wonderful feeling sprouted from within Suo Jia.

After thinking about it briefly, Suo Jia quickly understood. The first reason for this transformation was due to the Atlantis' Whisper, and the second reason was because he himself broke through the second layer of meditation and increased his Spirit Power by a large amount. However, even though he knew the

reason, after seeing this ridiculous result, Suo Jia still could not believe it.

“Wu... “ While he was thinking deeply, the huge ice stream began to turn and wriggle around. Each movement made by the huge ice stream exhibited strength and power, and as it teared through the air, it unexpectedly emitted a gloomy whimpering sound. Simply from listening to this noise, one could already see the terrifying power this ice stream contained.

“Frightening! Too frightening!” Looking at the imposing and spectacular ice flow currently under his control, Suo Jia excitedly cried out. If he continued to develop this, then the ice stream would turn into a monster! Deeply thinking, Suo Jia imagined a five or six meters thick, several meters long gigantic ice steam wriggling and turning about. Just by simply turning about, it could crush an enemy; it would simply be unrivaled.

After thinking for a long time, Suo Jia finally stopped and looked at the long ice stream. Suo Jia smiled and shook his head. It was too long, and it was too thick. Although its power was enormous, it was only useful in certain environments. If he were to use it in this underwater training area, then he would probably destroy everything!

After thinking about it for a long time, Suo Jia silently closed his eyes. By relying on the information obtained from communicating with the water elements, he began to silently converse with the ice and snow spirits. In that instant, the enormous ice stream rapidly changed again and became slender and short. After a moment of effort, he had already returned its appearance to the thickness of a

wrist and the length of about nine meters.

Compressed! That's right... by relying on his familiarity with the water element and the ice and snow spirits, Suo Jia strengthened the ice stream by compressing it. He compressed the thigh thick 20 meter long ice stream into a wrist thick nine meter long ice stream. The ice stream's strength and toughness all increased by five or six folds. The toughness of the stream had already far surpassed that of common steel.

After concentrating his attention, Suo Jia rapidly waved the ice stream around. By using the body of the ice stream, he drew the diagram for the Freezing Touch in midair. Soon after... the Freezing Touch's diagram was finished, and at the same time, Suo Jia's wrist thick ice stream immediately shot out.

Peng! With a violent booming sound, the ice stream immediately struck the surface of the stone pillar. Rocks flew everywhere, and huge ice-cold pillar was instantly frozen as it was covered by a thick layer of ice.

Excitedly walking to the stone pillar, when Suo Jia carefully examined the results, the thick icy covering had already condensed to two centimeters. If it was not a stone pillar but was instead a person, then most likely that person would already be covered in a layer of ice.

Faced with this result, Suo Jia felt satisfied and also felt a bit dissatisfied. He was satisfied because of the result, but was dissatisfied by the course of events. After all, drawing out the diagram with the ice stream was too inconvenient. Not only did

the crazy motions make his arm tired, it also made it extremely obvious to the opposing party what you were going to do.

After thinking for a long period of time, Suo Jia looked at the the ice stream whip within his hand. A new and bold idea could not help but emerge into his mind. If the ice stream was considered a water system crystal, and then afterwards casted the spell through the ice stream, would that work?

While thinking, Suo Jia began to test this out without the slightest hesitation. While experimenting, Suo Jia was grieved to find that he had failed. Ice and crystal was after all different. Ice condensed completely out of the ice element was extremely unstable unless it had been active for a long time. It was completely incapable of casting magic, as right when the spell diagram is draw out, it would immediately disappear.

Slightly lifting up his right hand, Suo Jia knew that as of right now, the only remaining method was to embed a water crystal on the palm section of the glove he was wearing. Only like this would it not affect his control of the ice stream and allow him to activate the ice system magic. With the help of the ice stream, he would be able to achieve the long-distance Freezing Touch!

While thinking, Suo jia could not help but be a bit curious. This glove, exactly what kind of material was it made out of? It was as soft as cotton and did not have any defensive capabilities, but it somehow had the magical property of instantly restoring itself. It was just one thin layer, and you couldn't feel its existence at all.

Subconsciously, Suo Jia suddenly thought of a new idea. If he

used this glove as a medium for the spell, would that work? What Suo Jia knew for sure was that this was not crystal, but it definitely was not made out of an elemental body!

While thinking, Suo Jia assembled his Spirit Power, and began to put thought to the test. Soon after, under Suo Jia's gaze, a thin blue streak rapidly shot out, and in that instant, a Six-Pointed Array appeared!

After violently trembling, Suo Jia yelled in shock. You have to understand, that what happened just now went exactly as how he had conceived it within his heart. In other words, using his glove as an intermediate, his plan was completely feasible!

Breathing in a breath of cold air, Suo jia tried really hard to calm himself down, soon after... Suo Jia once again opened up his right palm. Using the blue glove like the crystal inside of a magic staff, he could cast the Freezing Touch at full speed!

How fast he could think of it was how fast the speed was. It was almost as if as soon as he finished thinking about it, the Freezing Touch's spell diagram would have already finished. Along with the a big blast of blue light from his palm, Suo Jia knew that the freezing spell was already in effect!

Casually touching the stone pillar next to him, immediately... a thick layer of ice instantly covered the surface of the stone pillar. Although the result wasn't bad, Suo Jia was not in the mood to understand why. He could only dumbly look at his right hand.

From ancient times, there was once a type of blue spirit that came from the ocean's abyss. They could instantly cast any type of water system magic, and in order to be respectful to these powerful organisms, humanity had decided to name the magic that they used the Mysterious Method, with the idea that their magic was profound and mysterious.

Looking at the glove on his hand, Suo Jia suddenly thought that this glove might be made from the skin of these blue spirits, as these blue spirits could instantly cast any type of technique. It was highly likely that this glove was related to the skin of the blue spirits!

How fast could a person think? That's right... in this world, the fastest thing in the world was thought. The speed of thought was faster than the speed of light by 10,000 times. In regards to Suo Jia, after obtaining this glove, he also had the ability to instantly cast any water system spell!



## Chapter 127: All-Around Assault (Part 1)

---

Using his brain to think of an image only needed an instant. However, in order to portray the image, it might need an entire day. With this blue glove in his possession, Suo Jia could skip the process of portraying the image. Anything he imagined could be accomplished! This..... this was just too frightening!

While pondering, Suo Jia try it out, but unfortunately..... he was awfully disappointed to find out that this blue glove only work on the Freezing Touch. As for the Ice Sphere, True Ice Sphere and the rest of the ice magic, he would still need to slowly draw out the spell formation like usual!

After analyzing until here, Suo Jia finally figured out the origin of this glove. If he was not wrong, then this was one of the the Atlantis set! The Atlantis' Might!

Suo Jia turned his head hastily and looked at the pillar besides him. As expected..... the ice layer on top of the pillar was not only 2 centimeters thick, it reached 4 centimeters instead. The effects of the Freezing Touch was doubled!

As one of the Atlantis' set, the name of this glove was Atlantis' Might. Its ability was to instantly activate the Freezing Touch and increase its effect by 100%. Furthermore, this glove made out of the skin of the blue spirits' queen could accelerate the activation speed of the magic by 100%!

Doubtfully looking at the blue glove on his hand, Suo Jia was

deeply moved. He never expected that the glove he obtained before was actually part of the Atlantis set. That was really too ridiculous, he didn't even spend any effort to get this. The only unfortunate thing was that..... he still haven't found the part that was interlinked with this glove. As a result, he could only bring out the ability of this glove by itself.

Suo Jia took a deep breath while he was thinking. He controlled the ice stream at his side by waving his right hand and it whizzed by as it swept by the stone pillar beside him. Immediately..... the rocks scattered all around and the huge stone pillar was instantly frozen!

Suo Jia walked to the side of the stone pillar lightly and rubbed the surface of the thick layer of ice that had reached 4 centimeters. Suo Jia knew his fighting strength would be increased by an entire level with this glove. Although the Freezing Touch couldn't be casted through the ice stream, it could still instantly freeze any opponent. This was way too important for a mage who was regarded as comparatively weak in close combat.

Furthermore, even if Suo Jia couldn't use the glove to instantly activate any spell other than the Freezing Touch, that was its only limitation. He could still use it to draw the magic spell formation. Henceforth, Suo Jia didn't need to exhaust himself by waving his arm rapidly to draw the magic pattern anymore. All he needed to do was to concentrate and portray the image in his mind. In addition..... the activation speed would be increased by 100%!

After thinking for a while, Suo Jia lifted his hand. The blue light radiated from the heart of his palm and then three bright blue

streaks formed a Six Pointed Star Array on his palm as fast as lightning. Soon after..... a few strange symbols appeared within various positions of the Six Pointed Star Array. Then an Ice Sphere covered in thorns all over its surface appeared on top of Suo Jia's palm.

Looking at the True Ice Sphere that was slowly rotating on top of his palm, Suo Jia shook his head while sighing in admiration. Suo Jia pushed his palm slightly as the True Ice Sphere whizzed towards the stone pillar, turning it into a rubble!

Nodding his head satisfyingly, Suo Jia once again activated another spell rapidly. As his right hand waved, the Glacial Armor began spreading from Suo Jia's two legs until his entire body was covered. With a bit of effort, a set of valiant Glacial Armor completely covered the surface of Suo Jia's body.

“Clang! Clang! Clang!” A chain of violent noise resounded as the sharp ice thorns shot out from all over the Glacial Armor. They were pointing towards the front and attempted to assault any enemy.

Suo Jia who was ten and a half years old finally became an Elementary Mage. However, the path he had chosen was still very long. An Elementary Mage couldn't rely on closed door training to raise their strength anymore. He had to go on a journey to increase his knowledge and grow as he gained more experience.

Despite knowing all this, Suo Jia still could not drop everything to go on a journey and learn through experience. Even though the White Villa was already on the right track, Suo Jia was still unable

to be at ease.

Just when Suo Jia was in agony choosing between the two, the Golden Flame Commerce Union's female warrior returned. Without their helmets and armor, they came back covered in cuts and bruises all over their body. Suo Jia was startled as he looked at the crestfallen female warriors who were sitting within the underwater training ground, just how did that come about? How did it become like this?

After carefully looking around for a long time and making sure that not a single fire wind warrior was missing, Suo Jia slightly exhaled and said in a gloomy voice, “#1, tell me, what exactly happened? How did you guys end up in such a terrible state?”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, #1 emotionlessly lifted up her head and blankly spoke, “In the beginning, everything went quite smoothly and we were able to buy and sell many things as well as having a successful transport. However, along with our rise in reputation came an increased amount of people taking notice of us.”

Slightly pausing for a bit, #1 continued. “At first, we merely suffered a small robbery attack, and by relying on our strength, it was still not difficult to defeat them. However afterwards, one bandit corps after another emerged in large numbers and endlessly attacked our caravan. Our losses were huge, and the original staff sent out with the vehicles perished.

“Xi!” Listening up to here, Suo Jia could not help but uncomfortably inhaling a breath of cold air. Those hundred transport staff members were all dead? Only three months had

passed, how could such a thing happen!

While Suo Jia was still in shock, #1 continued, “Although things became like this, we still did not back off and continued to face the enemies’ cruel attacks. We employed another group of staff and continued to move forward!”

“En...” Sighing while nodding in praise, this was precisely what Suo Jia planned for. Not being attacked by any bandits along the way was impossible. Suo Jia’s purpose was to demand that they underwent the blood and fire baptism. The only thing was, Suo Jia could not have possibly have thought that within three months, they would have been defeated to the point of losing their helmets and armor and forced to run away.

While in doubt, Suo jia wrinkled his eyebrows and said, “Since the situation ended that way, how did you guys end up like this?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, #1’s two eyes gradually became hazy and tears began to flow down. “Because our protection was not satisfactory under the enemy’s attack, watching the transport staff get attack made us feel a lot of suffering. Sooner or later, we all released our killing intent and confronted all the killers and did not let a single one of them off. However, although it was like this, within these three months, we still lost 600 companions!”

## Chapter 128: All-Around Assault (Part 2)

---

Hearing #1's words, Suo Jia's pupils ferociously shrank. This was simply too frightening; they had an unexpected loss of more than 600 companions! From this, one could infer that these girls had experienced the cruelty of life!

#1 continued to mutter, "We were numb and lost ourselves. Gradually, we turned hysterical. Whenever we saw a thief appear before us, we would immediately charge at them. Before they could harm our companions, we'd drain all of their blood! However even so, we were still unable to protect our friends. The thieves rushed outwards from all directions, instantly killing all of the people with us, and then stole all of our merchandise!"

Although Suo Jia had an exceptionally strong expression of resentment and grief on his face, Suo Jia had actually expected such circumstances to happen a while ago. This didn't mean that Suo Jia was very experienced, as all of these things had been told to him by Eldest Sister. Everything had been planned with Eldest Sister's help. The bitter experiences that these fire wind warriors had encountered had also been within their expectations.

#1 suddenly raised her voice and shouted in anger, "However, despite all this, we never retreated. Instead, we used all of our power to persevere in the situation. What we hadn't anticipated was that...."

At this point, all of the girls had begun to cry in grievance. #1 continued through clenched teeth, "But what we hadn't possibly imagined was that other Commerce Unions like us would join

hands with the thieves to go against us after they had stolen our life goods! Having joined forces, we were unable to go against them. After 3 months, that was the first time we had ever been forced into defeat....”

Seeing the grieved girls, Suo Jia sighed as he shook his head. It seemed that....everything really had gone exactly as Eldest Sister had planned. After these girls had experienced so much, they would finally begin to grow. This growth was not only with respect to strength, but also in spirit! Without going through a baptism of blood and fire, one of crafty plots and conspiracies, a warrior would never be able to actually mature!

As a merchant from a Commerce Union, the Golden Flames girls could receive the thieves’ attacks. Even if they suffered great losses, they would still be able to clench their teeth and endure it. However....when the “black blade” had appeared behind them, they had been at loss. Their spirits had already been crushed, and they were unable to resist the attacks.

If one tried to interfere with competitors of the same profession from obtaining their wealth, a “black blade” would inevitably appear to back stab them. Within this world, this was common sense, and these girls had yet to learn about the rules of this world.

Seeing the expressions of despair on the Golden Flame girls, Suo Jia said with a heavy voice, “Alright, I’ve pretty much understood the bitter encounters you girls have experienced. Right now, I only want to ask one question: Do you girls want to punish those immoral merchants? Do you want to discipline those rotten thieves?”

All of the girls abruptly raised their heads, and their eyes glowed. They shouted in unison — Yes!

Hearing the girls' resounding replies echo together, Suo Jia smiled in satisfaction and nodded. He knew that although he was still worried, it seemed that he would have to leave the place. If he stayed in the White Villa, there would be no way he could mature.

Thinking up to this point, Suo Jia's expression suddenly hardened as he said resolutely, "Alright. Now that you all have the determination for revenge, then you girls should tend to your injuries as quickly as possible. Leave everything else to me!"

While speaking, Suo Jia turned around and strode out of the underwater training area. According to Eldest Sister's plans, they would be entering stage three of their plans. After these three stages finished, the Golden Flame warriors would have truly matured.

Maybe some people would ask in confusion: Why would the country support bandits? In fact this was something that nobody could do anything about. A merchant had the freedom to do what they wanted, and this was not something that could be controlled. With such great amounts of money in their hands, they held large amounts of power as well. Since ancient times, many merchants had rebelled, and the amount of times they had succeeded was too great to count.

In order to suppress the merchants and control their



development, the government officially issued the Personal Plundering Law. All of the merchants were allowed to trade freely, but they would also be excused for any plundering as long as they passed 100 kilometers outside of the city walls. As long as they weren't caught, it was perfectly lawful for any selfish plundering personnel to rob the commerce unions.

However, plundering also had to be authorized, and any unauthorized plundering was called robbery. Although being authorized to private plundering was still robbery, it was nevertheless lawful.

The appearance of these thieves made it difficult for merchants to rise up in power, and in the last thousand years, there hadn't been any other merchant rebellions. At the same time, each thief family had gradually begun to rise. Now, even if the government wanted to stop supporting personal plundering, they would not dare to rashly abolish the Personal Plundering Law. The thief families might not necessarily be held back, and if all the thieves came together to rebel, then the government would certainly be overthrown!

According to the rules, a private plundering group had to have their own banner, and the items they stole could still be pulled into the city to sell. Of all their profits, 20% of it had to be given over to the government. In actuality, the government was secretly raising its income. They could increase their treasuries by a tremendous amount every year from plundering. Since the times of the emperor that had issued this law, there had not been any thoughts of abolishing private plundering.

In order to restrict private plundering, they were required to pay the private plundering fee. The commerce unions that were robbed had to report to their superiors, and the people who committed the private plundering would also have to report to their superiors their income. If any of the plunderers dared to conceal that information, once they were found out, not only would their qualifications be taken away, they would also be chased and killed no matter where they hid!

Since then... Suo Jia alone had formed the three great organizations: Golden Flame Commerce Union, Golden Shield Mercenary Group, as well as the Golden Blade Private Plundering Corps. This was precisely the third stage of his plan!

After applying for the other two great groups, Suo Jia had returned to the White Villa and brought out his mother. He had delivered her to the home of the city lord, and placed her under Wen Ya's care. With her there, it was absolutely safe, and no one would dare disturb the city lord's residence.

As for Eldest Sister and the other sisters, Suo Jia was completely not worried about them. They were under both Wen Ya's and Emma's care, and even without it, the six sisters' upbringings had definitely taught them how to advance and retreat. Leaving the White Villa to them was something that Suo Jia was completely at ease about. Suo Jia had explained everything: If there was any danger, then they would have to immediately abandon the White Villa, as their safety was the most important!

After arranging everything, Suo Jia guided the 36 Golden Flame warriors out of the Holy Light City walls. They headed for the

dwarf assembly area. Based on calculations, by the time they got there, the weapons and armor would have already been finished!

They moved swiftly, and after half a month, the group finally reached the Dwarf Canyon. After stating their identities, Suo Jia's party received an enthusiastic welcome. When Suo Jia inquired where Master Han Sa was, they unexpectedly found out that he was forging behind closed doors!

Helpless, Suo Jia could only stay temporarily at the Great Dwarf Canyon for a while. During the daytime, they practiced by fighting amongst themselves, and during the evening, if Suo Jia didn't practice the Ice and Snow Pact, then he was in the meditative state extracting information.

After continuously waiting for half a month, finally... the dwarves sent some news. Master Han Sa had come out! After carefully counting the amount of time spent, every month, Master Han Sa could only forge ten battle armors. This was something that was only possible with the cooperation of the other dwarf masters. In actuality, a dwarf master had to spend an entire month to complete a set of battle armor, and Master Han Sa was in charge of this large operation.

Under the Dwarves' guidance, Suo Jia hurried towards the Dwarves' holy forging land — Volcanic Island. Right as they entered the island, Suo Jia saw the red faced Han Sa. Although he looked thin and pallid, his spirit was extraordinarily good.

Seeing Suo Jia personally come over, Master Han Sa laughed heartily before saying, "Little brother, this Master Han Sa's

promise has already been honored. There are 40 battle armors; not a single one is missing. In addition, the armors are also half Epic-ranked level sets, hahahaha...”

While speaking, Master Han Sa hugged Suo Jia, and enthusiastically said, “Come come come... quickly follow me and take a look. Within these four months, we were working without stopping to sleep!”

While speaking, the two entered the forging area. Immediately... a layer of golden red lights flickered and almost blinded Suo Jia’s eyes. He looked around; forty sets of battle armor were displayed on the forging models!

Excitedly looking at the result of his work, Master Han Sa said in a loud voice, “I’ll first introduce these Golden Flame armors sets. They are separated into the breastplate, abdomen armor, buttock armor, leg armor, battle boots, arm armor, gloves, helmet, and cloak. These nine parts are part of each other, and each part all have a unique function. They completely fit the Golden Flame warriors’ fighting specialties and tactics!”

Speaking up to here, Master Han Sa proudly led Suo Jia towards a row of shelves and easily removed a battle sword from the shelf and introduced it. “This is a battle sword designed according to the Holy Cross Blade. Since the Golden Flame warriors do not use Holy Force, and since they pay more attention on attack rather than defense, I removed the cruciform hand protection!”

Hearing Master Han Sa’s explanation, Suo Jia gasped and looked at that battle sword. Within Master Han Sa’s hands was a flowing

curve. It was full of power and it had a beautiful long blade. There were many indentations from the forging, making it so that the user would not lose their grip during battle. The entire battle sword appeared to be one entity, and it seemed like a naturally formed object.

Sighing in praise as he stroked the long sword in his hand, Master Han Sa chattered about the benefits of the battle sword and the battle armor. Unfortunately, Suo Jia's two eyes had already been engrossed in the sword and armor. Either way, these items were not going to be used by him. It was better for the Golden Flame warriors to understand their functions, right?

Looking at Suo Jia's absent-minded expression, Master Han Sa could not help but sigh. Stopping his jabbering, he forced a smile and said, "Essentially, after wearing this set of battle armor while matched with this battle sword, the girls' strength will double at the very least!"

"Ah! That little..." Hearing Master Han Sa's words, Suo Jia could not help but yell out. He was used to the power of Legendary and Epic-ranked magical equipment, and increasing one's power by twofold was already quite little in his eyes.

Angrily looking at Suo Jia, Master Han Sa shouted with fury, "While I was explaining carefully, you did not listen. Now you are carelessly speaking. You really infuriate me!"

Seeing Suo Jia's innocent expression, Master Han Sa helplessly let out a sigh, and said weakly, "Alright, I'll summarize again and try to be a bit more brief. However, you need to listen carefully this

time, and don't give such immature evaluations. Otherwise, I will really explode from anger!"

# Chapter 129: Strong And Courageous (Part 1)

---

After sorting out his train of thoughts, Han Sa tried to summarize as much as possible, “Lord Suo Jia, perhaps you do not understand thoroughly. In reality... the best feature of an Epic ranked magic equipment isn’t its ability to boost power, but rather its ability to supplement training. It allows the user to save half his efforts and gain two times the effects! This is the greatest advantage that Epic ranked equipment provides!”

Speaking until here, Han Sa caressed the battle sword within his hand, “In fact, an Epic-ranked magic equipment cannot even be compared to the might of a Legendary-ranked magic equipment by itself. However, I can confirm once you wear an Epic-ranked magic equipment for a long time, you can prevail in any fight as long as the opponent does not wear any Legendary-ranked equipment. The most crucial point is the user’s personal strength!”

This set of Golden Flame Battle Armor could increase the user’s power by twofold, and this power was not only the attacking and defending power. In fact, this power refers to the synergy of the 8 main stats for a warrior. This battle armor can increase strength, movement speed, attacking speed, Spirit Power, Magic Power, Fire Wind Battle Qi, Physical Defense and Magic Defense by 100%!

“My god!” Hearing Han Sa’s words, Suo Jia couldn’t help but feel flabbergasted. That was just too exaggerated. So it turns out that this power doesn’t indicate a single item’s capability but rather, all 8 parts of the set. Every different parts could increase the Golden Flame Warrior’s one ability by 100%! Just based on this one

point alone, although it still couldn't be compared to a Legendary-ranked equipment, it was still comparable to half of a Legendary-ranked equipment.

Looking at Suo Jia's appalled expression, Han Sa finally gained some face as he proudly said, "Furthermore, since this is a semi-Epic ranked set, then naturally, this battle armor's main feature is to boost your training speed. Wearing these Golden Flame Battle Clothes while raising the abilities of the 8 main stats can increase the training speed of the Fire Wind Battle Qi by 100%. Thus, it will speed up the training speed of the 8 main stats as well!"

Sighing in praise while looking at set of battle armor in front of him, Suo Jia finally understood why it was called a semi epic-ranked battle armor. In actuality, this set of battle armor's status was in between that of epic-ranked equipment and legendary-ranked equipment. Its supplementary effects were more than half that of a Legendary ranked-set, and its boosting effects were more than half that of an epic ranked set. Summing up all the benefits given by each parts of the set, its strength already exceeded that of a Legendary set, and it possessed more than half the might of an epic-ranked set. Strictly speaking, this set of armor should be called "Greater than half Epic-ranked" set instead of semi Epic-ranked.

Right when Suo Jia was thinking, the battle sword in Han Sa's hands lit up and he gasped in admiration while saying, "As for this battle sword, not only can it raise the power of fire and wind battle qi by 100%, it also doubles the user's attack speed and attack power. Pity, there isn't much of an effect on cultivation, however, I can guarantee that once you use it for a long time, there wouldn't be anyone willing to part from it!"



While speaking, Han Sa reluctantly returned the weapon to the shelf and laughed mysteriously towards Suo Jia. “Hehe, alright. Basically, I have already completely introduced this Golden Flame battle armor, only... there is still one last feature that I did not introduce yet. Can you guess what that is?”

“This... “ Grabbing his head awkwardly. Suo Jia giggled, “This is embarrassing, I am not too proficient in this field, it’s not... it is not that I cannot speak proficiently on this, but in fact, I have never even touched this field, therefore...”

Seeing Suo Jia’s awkward appearance, Han Sa had a slightly distracted look before immediately laughing heartily; only now did he remember that Suo Jia was only a 10 year-old child. No matter how talented he was, he had only lived for those few years after all. It was impossible for him to know everything.

After slightly thinking for a moment, Han Sa said, “That’s not important. Even if you don’t understand, you can still guess. Let me give you a hint, why do you think people wear armor?”

Doubtfully looking at Han Sa, Suo Jia could not understand where he was going with this. “What else could it be? Naturally it is for the sake of protecting oneself? Otherwise, who would have nothing better to do but wear such heavy coverings!”

“Pa!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Han Sa excitedly clapped his hands together, “That’s right! It’s exactly so. I told you that you would be able to guess it. Hehe....I can tell you now, the greatest

features of the Golden Flames armors and war blades, aside from the fact that their ranks surpass Legendary and Epic ranked equipment, is their indestructibility, as well as its self-repairing ability!”

“Indestructibility? Self-repairing ability?” Suo Jia was totally baffled by Han Sa’s words.

Seeing Suo Jia’s confused expression, Han Sa’s eyes lit up as he replied, “That’s right, indestructibility means that these armors and war blades basically cannot be destroyed. They were all forged through an alloy of Spatial Meteorite Steel. When we created them, we pursued this kind of hardness. Currently, nothing harder than this armor exists in this world! That’s why they are indestructible.”

“As for its self-repairing ability, it is based on the metal’s memory. Whenever it receives an attack that deformed the equipment, it will automatically perform self-repair and restore it to its original shape. That’s why I can audaciously say that this equipment will last even after thousands of years. Hehehehehe....”

Indestructibility and self-repair were the two major features that all Legendary and Epic ranked equipments had. However, the reasons for its indestructibility were different. For example, Suo Jia’s Atlantis glove was also indestructible, but it wasn’t because of its hardness, but its powerful self restoration ability. No matter how it was pierced, the glove would instantly return to its original form. Thus, it was also ‘indestructible’. However, in regards to the user, it could still be destroyed.

Depending on extreme hardness and intensity to achieve indestructibility was something Suo Jia had never heard of before. To a warrior, this was equivalent to wearing a turtle shell. No matter how much one hammered it, it still wouldn't break!

Naturally, not breaking did not mean that it was unrivaled. Physical attacks and bombardments of battle qi could cause shaking and vibration, and elemental spells could easily pass through armor. Once the attack struck the Golden Flame warrior within the armor, it would not shatter the armor, but it would be similar to a jar. Although the jar would not shatter, it did not mean that the person inside was not injured from the attack.

In addition, there was the Golden Flame warriors' blade. With its indestructible property, the Golden Flame warriors could rumble wildly and not have to worry about the blade being damaged from a tremendous force. Even if the blade was rolled up and its appearance was deformed, it would rapidly restore itself!

"Formidable! Truly formidable!" Looking at the reddish-gold battle sword and armor, Suo Jia did not hold back his words of praise.

Looking at Suo Jia's satisfied expression, Han Sa giggled and said, "Furthermore, according to the fire wind warrior's battling styles, I added 6 sets of two meter long cloaks and combined them to form a reddish-gold cloak. Upon fighting, it could unfold into three at the left and three at the right. It was sewed together using the skin of the wind dragon as well as the fire dragon. By coordinating the Golden Flame warrior's wind battle qi with these 6 cloaks, it could allow them to glide over a kilometer in the air. In addition, as their

strength increases, there will be a day when they could soar in the sky!”

Faced with Han Sa’s explanation, Suo Jia already did not know what to say. Until now, these female warriors’ magical equipments had finally surpassed Suo Jia who possessed the three epic-ranked equipment. Even if it was Suo Jia, he could not help but feel a bit jealous.

However, it was a pity that this battle armor and sword could only be operated by fire and wind battle qi. In this whole world, other than them, no one else could use them. Even if they used it, it was impossible for them to display its full potential. Therefore, no matter how they admire it, other than licking their lips, they couldn’t do anything else about it.

Luckily, this set of equipment was prepared for the Golden Flame warriors, and they were equivalent to Suo Jia’s personal soldiers. They were young warriors, so Suo Jia did not feel reluctant at all to hand it over to them. Although it was still a bit hard to avoid jealousy, it would soon be in the past. Even if he could not wear it himself, the result was better than if Suo Jia wore it himself.

While pondering, Suo Jia turned around and faced the doorway as he waved at the girls who were already so happy that they clasped both their hands at the chest. He hinted for them to come in, and seeing Suo Jia’s gesture, the Golden Flame warriors who were already feeling impatient immediately rushed in.

## Chapter 130: Strong And Courageous (Part 2)

---

Seeing the neatly lined up girls, Suo Jia said with a heavy tone, “Everyone heard Master Han Sa’s words just now, right?”

As soon as they heard Suo Jia’s words, the girls all nodded their heads like chicks feeding on rice. Originally...they had only wanted a Marshal’s Armor and a Holy Cross Blade each. However, the current results had far surpassed their expectations. This was practically equivalent to more than half of an Epic-ranked equipment set. Its might was on the same level, and its training effects were only slightly inferior to those of an Epic-ranked equipment set. It could be said that this armor was even more powerful than a Legendary ranked magic equipment!

Just a single piece of Legendary ranked magic equipment could be sold for 100 million or higher. Right now, a single set was composed of 8 pieces of armor and a single weapon. Don’t even think about buying it if you don’t have 2 billion, as this battle armor was not Legendary-ranked but rather a semi-epic ranked one. Only with regard to value, let alone 2 billion, don’t even think about 10 billion. In fact, they were priceless, and any set would be sufficient to pass on through generations as a family heirloom. These sets of armor were made out of the materials that the 10 great thief families accumulated over a millennium, it was impossible for a 2nd batch to emerge within a millennia.

The reason why it was impossible for a second batch to emerge was actually because many valuable materials and creatures had already been extinguished over the millennia. Even if one searched

the entire world, they also wouldn't be able to find many! Many species had simply become extinct, it was unlikely that any more will appear in the future.

To be able to possess this kind of battle armor as a warrior, it was unnecessary for them to search for upgrades throughout their life. Apart from the sets possessed by the 7 great experts, in the present age, it was impossible for there to be any sets more powerful than these to exist. In addition..... these battle armors were different from the ones possessed by the 7 great experts, they were completely designed according to the characteristic of the girls. The girls would be able to exhibit the armor's full potential!

One must never overlook this one point, in fact, an epic ranked set could only exhibit its full potential when it's in the hands of the user it was made for. The reason was because those equipment sets were designed in accordance with their characteristics. The epic ranked sets produced the epic ranked Heroes, and conversely, the epic ranked Heroes also produced the epic ranked sets.

“Fwoosh!” Just when Suo Jia was contemplating, one of the Golden Flame warriors excitedly unfolded the golden cloak on her back. Immediately..... a reddish-gold belt unfolded from both sides and the rear in a flash. Along with the reddish-gold radiance, the Golden Flame warrior's entire body actually started to float!

Seeing this magical and magnificent scene, Suo Jia was flabbergasted. He couldn't even form a proper sentence for a very long time. Meanwhile, the other 35 Golden Flame warriors unfolded the Cloud Stream Cloak at their backs and floated up in succession. Momentarily, in the sky of the tall and spacious forging

room was completely covered by the reddish-gold radiance!

Suo Jia stood there, sighing in admiration as he looked up at the 36 figures in the sky. At the moment....a powerful gold and red battle qi had already covered their faces. The only thing he could see was a round gold and red glow in the shape of human figures, and extending outwards from the figures were the six bright phoenix wings!

Shaking his head in admiration, Suo Jia bitterly said, “It seems like we’ll have to change names again. The title “Golden Flame warriors” is no longer appropriate. But....exactly what name would?”

Hearing Suo Jia mutter this to himself, Han Sa chuckled, “What’s so hard about that? Typically speaking, they would be named after their appearances. Based on their current appearances, they look like a combination of a phoenix and a six winged angel. When you combine the words phoenix and six winged angel, you get ‘Angelic Six Winged Phoenix’!”

“My god!” Suo Jia looked at Han Sa in astonishment. He hadn’t imagined that this coarse fellow would actually be delicate enough to think of such a unique name!

The six wings were definitely the most beneficial feature, and it was definitely an irreplaceable part of their name. Although their appearances were like an angel’s, their colors were like a phoenix’. When combined, they were definitely phoenix angels. The name was both flashy and appropriate; there wasn’t a better name than this!

Raising his head, Suo Jia shouted, “Did you girls hear that? From now on, your previous name will be cast aside. You will all become the Angelic Six Winged Phoenix instead, and our mercenary group will be the Angelic Six Winged Phoenix Battle Group!

Hearing Suo Jia’s voice, the girls stared blankly. After a while, as if planned in advance, they began to descend back to the ground, wordlessly landing on one knee. Despite remaining silent, everyone understood that they had all accepted this name.

Seeing this scene, Han San couldn’t help but be stunned. He had never thought that these girls were Suo Jia’s subordinates. After all....when Han Sa first met Suo Jia, the boy had only been 8 years old.

However, based on the current situation, these girls weren’t simply subordinates. They were people willing to die for him! After all, even subordinates would normally say a word of gratitude after receiving such amazing gifts. However, those willing to die for their leader would never say anything, since they had already seen themselves as their master’s personal assets. If the master presented them anything, they needn’t thank him, because regardless of what they got, they’d always serve their master. Thus, thanks was completely unnecessary!

Han Sa stared in a daze at Suo Jia. He knew that although the girls’ current strength and power were still very weak, they had unfathomable and immeasurable futures ahead of them with the new set of 36 armors. With the 36 semi Epic-ranked equipment sets, once those youngsters matured, they would have such great



power. It was to the extent that even three or four of them would have enough power to eliminate an entire party! Han Sa really couldn't imagine exactly how Suo Jia had managed to gather such formidable powers!

Gently shaking his head, Han Sa finally returned from his thoughts. He deeply looked at Suo Jia, and said in an overcast tone, "Lord Suo Jia, although you ordered 40 sets of battle armor, in actuality, I only made 36 sets of the Angelic Six Winged Phoenix Armor. After all... they were indestructible and had self-restoration properties, so I decided that they was no need for replacements. In addition, I was convinced that it was difficult to find other warriors like them."

Pa! Hearing Han Sa's words, Suo Jia violently smacked his forehead, and suddenly said, "Right, right! I also do not want to increase personnel, and everyone has already gotten used to each other. If I get any more people, it would influence the relationship and teamwork between everyone. Since it's like this, then there really is no need to forge the other four sets of armors like this. After all... other than them, no one else could display the power of this set of battle armor!

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Han Sa could not help but chuckle. He nodded his head and said, "That's right, that's why I acted on my own. As for the remaining four portions materials, I purified it and combined it to one portion. With the remaining portion, I used your measurements to create the Monarch battle armor!"

"What! A battle armor for me!" Hearing Han Sa's words, Suo Jia could not help but become dumbstruck.

Slightly nodding his head, Han Sa smiled and said, “That’s right, this set of battle armor is a set worthy of being used by a monarch. This is also this world’s highest standard, and highest grade battle armor. Normally, only the monarch could use such an armor, however, since there was excess materials, then naturally I had to make you, the master, a set!”

While speaking, Han Sa walked towards a large cabinet and gently opened the cabinet doors. Immediately... a set of dark light flickered, however, a set of armor that was as thin as paper appeared in front of Suo Jia.

Just looking at its external appearances, this set when compared to the Angelic Six Winged Phoenix Armor, was a completely different grade. This armor was a dark jet-black, and looked as if it was worn out. The entire set of armor was made fastened together in a circular design, and under this armor created through circular designs was a layer of black scales that thoroughly protected all-around.

One could say that outside of the head area, all the other positions were tightly protected. Gloves, boots, as well as everywhere else, only... such a weak thing, was it really useful?

Looking at Suo Jia’s questionable expression, Han Sa smiled and said, “You absolutely must not look down on this set of armor! All of these circular patterns are the same as the Angelic Six Winged Phoenix set. They are indestructible, and the scales under those circular patterns were formed completely from the scales of a black dragon. These scales are exceptionally soft, and although its

defense is slightly inferior, but it completely nullifies magic!”

While speaking, Han Sa pointed towards his head, and smiled while saying, “Basically, as long as you protect your head well, then it was impossible for you to die. This chainmail armor could block physical attacks, and the black scales provides magical immunity. Both of these are indestructible.”

# Chapter 131: Young Frost Wyrn (Part 1)

---

Suo Jia gently extended his hand to softly caress the inner armor, completely infatuated with it. He hadn't imagined that Han Sa would actually make a combat armor for him. Back when he had been mock fighting with the girls, Han Sa hadn't overlooked Suo Jia. Otherwise, there was no way this Monarch Armor would have been made.

Despite being a mage, Suo Jia enjoyed charging into a group of people to initiate free fights with rivals. It was probably this exact trait that had been the reason for Han Sa's creation of the Monarch Armor. Otherwise, the Black Dragon Mage Robe was already enough!

In reality, this set of armor was something new. It used the combination of the warrior's chain armor and the mage's black dragon robe. Thus, it had a powerful resistance to both physical and magical attacks. Just as Han Sa had stated, as long as Suo Jia protected his head properly, he would pretty much be invulnerable!

Of course, Suo Jia still couldn't defend against blunt attacks, such as those from hammers, axes, rods, and clubs....these weren't weapons that relied on a sharp point to inflict wounds, so even chain armor was unable to defend against them. Although it was immune to magic attacks, like the freezing powers of the Ice Sphere, Suo Jia would still be unable to resist the Ice Sphere's blunt force. It could still easily break his bones!

Earth-type strikes, water-type attacks, fire-type explosions, and

wind-type vortexes were all things that one couldn't defend against. The things that the armor could defend against were effects like freezing or burning.

Although this armor set was far from being called unrivaled, as Suo Jia could still be harmed by a warrior or a mage with it on, it had the ability to negate all magic effects. He would never be frostbitten or burned. Perhaps normal people wouldn't be able to understand the implications behind this, but if one thinks more closely, they'd realize that if Suo Jia's magic attacks lost their freezing traits, could they still be called ice spells?

Seeing the enamored Suo Jia, Han Sa laughed and said, "Lord Suo Jia, you must not underestimate this armor. In reality, the Monarch armor is made to protect a monarch from assassinations. Because monarchs all have to wear royal robes, this armor is only a skin-tight armor that is used as a final protective screen to save their lives!"

"Huh?" Suo Jia looked at Han Sa and asked in confusion, "And so what? What exactly are you trying to say?"

Helplessly shaking his head, Han Sa gave a bitter smile and replied, "You don't even understand this? My meaning is quite clear. This armor is only a skin-tight layer that one wears close to their body. In other words, it's pretty much your second skin. Aside from this, you can still wear the typical armor and mage robes!"

"That..." Suo Jia finally understood. However....wasn't this a bit too extreme?

Suo Jia gave Han Sa a puzzled look and asked, “In that case, why didn’t you give everyone a set each?”

“What! One set per person!” Han Sa let out a strangled cry, “Man! To guarantee the chain armor’s power, it has to be well-purified. Four sets of armor must be purified as material for a single inner armor. In addition....there are 3 materials needed that are exceptionally rare and precious, like the Black Dragon Scales. Do you think there are a lot of them?”

Exasperatedly rolling his eyes at Suo Jia, Han Sa continued, “Basically, if you wanted to give every person an inner armor, you’d have to gather 4x the materials for me. That means that you’d have to gather 40x more of those three rarer materials. If you can do that, then go gather them. Just as I said before, if you can gather them all, I’ll do it free of.....”

“Wait!” Before Han Sa had finished his sentence, Suo Jia quickly extended his hand to stop Han Sa. One couldn’t possibly gather 40x the amount of the rarer materials even after searching the entire world for thousands of years.

Hm...actually, it could be achieved. For example, the Black Dragon Scales could be gathered; as long as all the currently existing Black Dragons were killed, one could pretty much get enough scales. However....if one could really kill all of the Black Dragons, one wouldn’t even need the inner armor anymore, as they’d already be unrivaled.

Seeing that Suo Jia had finally understood, Han Sa couldn't help but say, "Youngster, you shouldn't deny the truth. Think about it; could a country's emperor possibly use ordinary things? Epic-ranked equipment sets aren't even uncommon for them. Actually, this Monarch Armor is much more amazing than an Epic-ranked set. Even though it isn't as famous, its practical strength is far more superior. In addition...in terms of the materials and labor put into it, your armor there definitely surpasses other Monarch Armors!"

"En...." Suo Jia nodded. He knew what Han Sa had said was absolutely true. If even Duke Wen Sha's Economic Master had a piece of Epic-ranked equipment, then how could a country's emperor not? They had tons of amazing items. Even under such circumstances, they still insisted on wearing the Monarch Armor; that was enough to prove the Monarch Armor's might.

Happily taking out the Monarch Armor from its case, Suo Jia stored it into his interspatial ring and laughed, "Master Han Sa, although you had already previously promised to do this, we still can't simply take it all for free."

Suo Jia paused for a bit before sincerely continuing, "I won't give you money, because I can't afford it. This is not longer as simple as just forging something; it has already entered the domain of art, and is absolutely priceless!"

Han Sa smiled in satisfaction at Suo Jia's flattery, continuously stroking his beard. His expression made him look like a toad that had drank exquisite wine, an expression of incomparable contentment.

Deeply gazing at Master Han Sa, Suo Jia continued, “However, our friendship is something that I have remembered. From now on, as long as you need me, just say the word. As long as it’s within my abilities, I will definitely accept it as my responsibility!”

Master Han Sa couldn’t stop his body from trembling at Suo Jia’s promise. If anyone else had said this, he would’ve just snorted in disdain. However, Suo Jia was a different story. He possessed the qualifications to say such things. If he was really willing to help someone without any regards for the cost of doing so, there would be nothing beyond his capabilities.

Suo Jia abruptly bowed respectfully and said firmly, “Alright, Master Han Sa. It’s quite late already, so we won’t disturb you any longer. Keep my words in mind. If you ever need help, remember to tell me! I definitely won’t disappoint you!” After saying these words, Suo Jia turned around and began to walk away. At the same time, the 36 fire wind warriors quietly stood up from the ground to follow Suo Jia, and all of them left the forging room.

After leaving Dwarf Canyon, Suo Jia commanded the girls to tie 6 cloaks together and create a red and gold mantle. Before they swiftly left Holy Light City, Suo Jia took advantage of the moment when everyone was gathered together, and began to give a speech.

Looking at the 36 Angelic Six Winged Phoenix sitting in a circle in front of him, Suo Jia heavily said, “Alright, you girls don’t need to enter the city. For the next half a year, you all should continue to gain more experience. Before the New Year’s, I hope that you will make the best of your time, and quickly familiarize yourselves with



the Angelic Six Winged Phoenix clothes. After New Year's passes, the plan's third step will begin!"

None of the girls questioned Suo Jia's order. They all respectfully gestured at Suo Jia, then turned around and raced towards the distance. Soon, the 36 beautiful figures had completely disappeared from Suo Jia's line of vision.

Letting out a sigh, Suo Jia reluctantly withdrew his gaze. Although he was unwilling to separate from everyone, he knew that if he did not do things this way, everyone would not quickly get stronger. In addition, Suo Jia's goal required that they became as strong as possible.

Returning to Holy Light City alone, beside cultivating with great effort, Suo Jia also reserved some time everyday to browse through the markets. After half a year, he had to go out and learn through real experiences, which meant that he had to acquire and arm himself with some magical equipment that could increase his fighting strength. Although one shouldn't be relying on magical equipment, it was still not good to "not eat due to fear of choking", as it was still essential.

Outside of fishing for treasures, each time there was an auction, Suo Jia would also participate. The only thing was that there hadn't been any items that moved Suo Jia's heart. When one finally appeared, its price was too high, making Suo Jia realize that he had to earn more money.

Typically, to be a martial artist, they had to first increase their strength and then use their strength to make money. However,

Suo Jia had actually did it in reverse, and first earned a great amount of money and afterwards used the money to arm himself and increase his cultivation speed. Although he was only an Elementary Mage, he had already acquired three parts of the top-notch Atlantis Set. Although he was still lacking many parts before completing the set, to be able to have so many Epic-ranked magical equipment at his age was already something that had never been seen before.

During the evening, Suo Jia once again empty-handedly returned to the White Villa. When he had just entered through the door, Eldest Sister walked over and said with an anxious expression, “Bad news Suo Jia, something bad happened to your little dragon!”

## Chapter 132: Young Frost Wyrms (Part 2)

---

“What?” Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia could not help but furrow his eyebrows as he looked at Eldest Sister in confusion.

Quite a while ago, the little Frost Wyrms had left Suo Jia’s side. It was probably because it had been scared off by Suo Jia’s oppressive behavior. It had hidden at the academy and did not want to return. How great was it over there; if it was not sleeping in the girls’ embrace everyday, then it would be receiving the moisturizing rain, oh how comfortable that was. At Suo Jia’s side however, that was not the case, as it was treated horribly every day.

That’s why for a year or so, the little Frost Wyrms hadn’t returned to the White Villa at all. It had followed Xue Er everyday; that is to say, it had been at Aimi’s side for more than a year. Normally, it would’ve slept to raise its spirit, and then afterwards, it would have received the moisturizing rain three times from morning, afternoon, and night times. The little pet had passed its days comfortably!

Now that he suddenly heard that something had happened to the little Frost Wyrms, Suo Jia couldn’t help but worry. Without saying a second word, he quickly sped to Holy Light Academy, completely disregarding the darkening sky.

Soon afterwards, Suo Jia arrived at Holy Light Academy. Just as he passed through the gate of the training field, Suo Jia saw over a hundred girls encircled together with a worried expression and seemingly looking at something.

A few girls with sharp eyes noticed Suo Jia, and they began to get out of the way one after another. They allowed Suo Jia to enter the inner circle, soon after...Suo Jia finally saw the Frost Wurm.

At this moment, the Frost Wurm had both of its eyes closed and was lying on its side over there. Its body was trembling, and its little body was emitting waves of frigid aura constantly. From the looks of it, the little pet appeared to be suffering!

Furrowing his eyebrows anxiously, Suo Jia asked, "Can someone explain to me what's going on here? How did it become like this?"

Hearing Suo Jia's inquiry, Aimi took the lead and began to speak, "We also have no idea. This evening, everyone had worked together to perform the Hydration Technique, but the little pet suddenly started convulsing. It was perfectly fine before, why did it end up like this?"

Hearing Aimi's anxious and worried voice, Suo Jia could not help but frown. While pondering over this matter, a faintly discernible sound came from the little pet, and a thin layer of ice began to form over its body!

Seeing this scene, Suo Jia couldn't help but be overwhelmed with shock. There was only one explanation for the current circumstances: After three or so years, this little pet had unexpectedly ended its newborn state, prematurely entering its adolescent state!

Originally, according to how things usually turned out, a Frost

Wyrms needed ten years worth of time before it could shed its baby form and mature into its adolescent form. However now, it had clearly only been 3 and a half years, how was it able to enter its adolescent stage so fast?

The difference between the newborn form and the adolescent form was quite huge...The newborn form of the Frost Wyrms did not possess any strength, and was inferior to even a bat. However, once it entered the adolescent phase, its body would begin to grow bigger. In addition, it also gained the ability to control frost, and the adolescent Great Frost Wyrms was comparable to that of a middle-rank beast!

In order to check if his suspicions were correct, Suo Jia concentrated his attention on the Frost Wyrms. Under Suo Jia's gaze, the thin layer of ice on its body grew thicker and thicker. In only a moment, the little pet's body was thoroughly encased in a football-sized ice sphere.

"Hu....." Suo Jia slightly let out a breath as he loosened his shoulders, he was pleasantly surprised. This little pet had actually entered its adolescent form 7 years in advance. Could it be the effect of the Moisture Technique? In these past 3 years, the number of Moisture Techniques this little pet had received couldn't be counted anymore, perhaps it had already reached the point of countless millions!

"Hold on!" While he was pondering, Suo Jia's eyes suddenly lit up. Don't tell me that the Frost Wyrms could break through the adolescent stage if it continuously received ten millions of Moisture Techniques? If that was really true!

While thinking, Suo Jia couldn't help but come to a conclusion. He easily loaded the Frost Wurm into his interspatial ring, then he turned his head around, and said to Aimi and Aila, "The two of you, come with me. As for the rest of you, please go back. The little Wurm is fine, it will recover in a few days' time." After he finished speaking, Suo Jia took Aimi and Aila away from the training ground.

During the night, Suo Jia, Aimi and Aila assembled in the underwater training ground. After thinking for a long time, Suo Jia said to the two girls in a heavy tone, "I asked the both of you to come with me today because there is something I wanted to confirm."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the two girls were looking at Suo Jia doubtfully as they exposed an inquisitive expression on their face. Seeing the innocent and lovely girls, Suo Jia said in a deep and low voice, "I want to know if both of you are willing to become my partners for a lifetime!"

"What! You?" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the faces of the girls blushed red immediately. They were very bashful and could only respond evasively, they couldn't even form a complete sentence properly.

After a while, Xue Er was the first to say, "That is impossible, I cannot promise you. You can only choose one among us. How can you woo two girls at the same time!"

“Wooing?” Hearing Xue Er’s words, Suo Jia couldn’t help but feel puzzled. However, Suo Jia quickly came to an understanding. He didn’t know whether to laugh or cry as he looked at Aimi. This girl was truly mischievous, that thought had never crossed Suo Jia’s mind, not even a little bit.

Seeing Suo Jia’s expression, the intelligent Aila who remained cool-headed understood immediately. Lightly pulling Aimi, she approached the side of her ear and whispered, “What kind of silly act are you trying to pull, Suo Jia did not mean that kind of partner. He was referring to battle companion, the kind that work together in battle.”

“Oops!” Hearing Aila’s words, Aimi’s face turned pale and soon after, it turned deep red in a flash. She was so ashamed and unable to show her face. Just what was she thinking!

Seeing the bashful Aimi, Suo Jia understood for the first time the cuteness of a girl. He laughed bitterly and shook his head, he couldn’t help but exclaim gloomily. What Eldest Sister said was right, he really had to pay attention to the matter on this field. Being romantic was not wrong but it was a sin to be lecherous.

Girls usually mature faster than boys. When the girls had a first awakening of love, the boys were still playing with mud. When Suo Jia was still not aware of anything, Aimi had already known about a lot of things. In fact, as far as ‘play house’ was concerned, the girls were more devoted than the boys.

However, in regards to the present time, Suo Jia was not fond of girls. In fact, he had already seen the bodies of all the girls in his

class. He had to see it every week and he didn't think there's anything good about their bodies.

Every Sunday evening, after an entire day of hard work, they must assemble in the underwater training ground to bathe in the Hydration Technique. Suo Jia also had to participate in the activity. Only the people who had bathed in the Hydration Technique know how comfortable it is.

The Hydration Technique was not the same thing as the Moisture Technique. The Moisture Technique was a water mist, while the Hydration Technique was a rain. This was why you couldn't wear clothes, otherwise, the clothes would get soaked. Because of this, everyone completely stripped naked before enjoying themselves.

Ever since Suo Jia was eight, he had already been mixed with a large heap of women. Actually... it should actually be a large heap of girls. To Suo Jia, the only thing different about girls was that their hair was a bit longer and they were missing a bit down there. Other than that, their skin was a bit whiter, softer and glossier. Their voices were a bit more tapered, and in addition, they also liked to get angry at little things and throw tantrums; there wasn't anything great about them.

It was perfectly alright to say that Suo Jia was incomparably familiar with all of the bodies of the girls in his class. He knew clearly where someone had a mole or a birthmark, and although he often played house with everyone, to this day, Suo Jia still did not understand why a male had to marry a woman and take her as his wife. He also did not think that playing together with girls was more fun.



While thinking, Suo Jia smiled while saying, “Pursuing you girls is a future matter, right now I am too young. To be honest, I want to train you girls and make you into the most powerful mages. However, you all should know that if this happens, a lot of money needs to be invested. That’s why I want to know what you girls think...”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Aimi and Aila glanced at each other with a bit of doubt before asking in confusion, “Does this even need to be asked? Our parents had already handed us over and told us to listen to you. Whatever you decide is best, and that is what we will do since we don’t know better anyway.”

Damn... Hearing the two girls’ words, Suo Jia could not help but slap his forehead. That’s right... these two girls were only 10 years old, how could they make decisions in regards to their futures. It was likely that even thinking about two things at once would make them confused. It seemed like...influencing them into action was an impossible task. He could only try and convince their parents.

# Chapter 133: The Innocent Three (Part 1)

---

Suo Jia didn't personally go to handle the affair; instead, he entrusted the situation to Eldest Sister. Suo Jia only said a single sentence to her: If they wanted money, then give them money; if they wanted power, give them power. No matter what, the two girls had to end up being his. After all....both the Heaven's One Holy Water and Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons were both amazing; these two were super-gifted users that only appeared once every century.

A week later, Eldest Sister had easily managed to settle the matter. The two girls had already attended two of the annual competitions and gained two chances to raise their noble ranks, so they were already about to become eight ranked lords. On the other hand, Suo Jia was a third ranked lord, which was 11 ranks higher than the girls! When compared to the girls, Suo Jia was a high level aristocrat, while the girls were still low level aristocrats.

With the help of the Fourth Prince, the first title was directly used to assign the two girls to be Suo Jia's attendants. Since they were nobles of the empire, they naturally had to obey the empire's regulations. Besides, the relationship between Suo Jia and the girls was not something that average people could compare to. They were classmates, teacher-student, and very good friends. They were also teammates that had participated in 2 competitions together; their relationship couldn't be any more solid.

As for the girls' families, everything had already been properly communicated. Aimi's father was a rich and powerful person, and he longed to gain a promotion in ranks the most. Thus, Suo Jia had offered him a chance to increase his noble rank. On the other hand, Aila's father was an extremely ruthless warrior. Suo Jia had

decided to send some Legendary-ranked weapons to him, and everything was OK!

Of course, the two parties' parents had also sought their daughters' consent. In addition....it was also because it was the empire's orders that they were unable to violate the demands. Otherwise, they could possibly be hunted down by the empire.

Seeing the two title documents in his hand, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile. Using these two title documents, Suo Jia could successfully turn the girls to become his, and he even gave them each an opportunity to raise their noble ranks so that they could take the final step and become eighth ranked lords.

After cultivating for the past 2 years, the two girls had already completed the Exhaustion Training Method 20 times, 17 more than Suo Jia had used it. Actually, their strength had also increased by three or fourfold, and they were currently already elementary mages. The True Ice Sphere, Icy Thorn Protection, and Freezing Touch, had all been completely grasped. In terms of strength, they had caught up to Suo Jia!

Seeing that the girls had caught up to him so quickly, Suo Jia was extremely envious of them. He really wanted to just forget everything else and continue training with the Exhaustion Training Method again. However, Suo Jia knew that if he wasn't able to resist this temptation, it'd end up turning into a major issue later on. It was true that he might be happy now, but the extent to which he'd reach in the future would be restricted!

In addition, although everyone was an elementary mage, if they

actually went up against each other, Suo Jia would be able to completely defeat dozens of them. A mage's formidability wasn't simply based on what spells one knew.

The power of a mage depended on many factors. The first was the level of meditation. The higher the level of meditation one reached, the deeper one could comprehend and understand the elements, thus increasing one's power. Suo Jia had reached the third realm of meditation already, while the two girls were only at the first realm.

The second was one's familiarity with contacting the special elements. For example, water magic was cultivated with the Ice and Snow Pact. The more one cultivated, the more powerful they'd become. Aimi and Aila had never come into contact with a magic like the Ice and Snow Pact, while Suo Jia had already been cultivating in the Ice and Snow Pact for two years. Every day, he had extracted a large amount of energy to cultivate, and after two years of doing so, he had reached the peak amount of cultivation time a person would normally complete after 4-5 years.

The third was how well one knew the magic, as well as how much one practiced it. 'Practice makes perfect': if the same magic was activated multiple times, its might would increase more and more. After one practiced it to a certain extent, they would cleverly realize that the magic's frequency, one's attractive resonance to magic, as well as the might of one's magic were all increased this way.

Basically, magic power was like an internal energy. The deeper one's magic power was, the greater the area and volume the spell

could released. The Fireball was the same; a great magic scholar could hyper-compress a 2 meter wide Fireball, while a normal mage trainee fire mage would only be able to release a Fireball the size of one's fist.

Meditation determined the growth speed of magic power. Based on one's magic power capacity, one could reach higher and higher layers of meditation. The magic power one possessed and used would increase. What should be pointed out was that the magic power was stored in the mind within a space of nothingness. As one's meditation level increased, this space would grow larger and larger, and the magic power contained within would also increase.

If meditation was said to decide the volume of magic one could possess, then the Ice and Snow Pact determined the magic's might. The lower the temperature of the magic, the firmer the ice would be. How powerful the freezing effects were depended on these factors.

In general, if one paid a price, they'd gain an appropriate compensation as well. With the aid of a few Epic-ranked equipment, Suo Jia's cultivation speed was really too crazy. The difference between him and the two girls continued to increase larger and larger. What Suo Jia needed to do now wasn't to continue pulling the gap wider, but rather the opposite; he wanted to quickly shrink the gap between them.

Suo Jia summoned the two girls to the White Villa and warned them that no matter what, without Suo Jia's permission, they wouldn't be allowed to use the Exhaustion Training Method anymore. Overusing it was equivalent to spoiling their futures, and

would be disadvantageous for their activation speeds in the long run.

Face with Suo Jia's demand, although the girls were exceptionally unwilling to part with the Exhaustion Training Method that had wildly boosting effects, they could only obediently nod their heads. Their fathers had sent letters, telling them that they had to do as they were told, and make sure not to rub Suo Jia the wrong way. In addition, they were to try their best to make him like them, and keep him happy.

Seeing the two girls agree, Suo Jia couldn't help but let loose a breath. The Exhaustion Training Method was really too addictive; anyone that had witnessed the crazy speed at which it boosts someone would be unable to stop using it. Back then, Suo Jia had spent a lot of effort to abolish it.

As he looked at the two girls in front of him, Suo Jia pondered for a bit, hesitating as he considered whether or not to teach them the activation method he had developed. After thinking about it for a while, Suo Jia finally decided that since they had already become his left and right hands, he naturally had to increase their strength as much as possible. The stronger they were, the more helpful they'd be. If they were too weak, they'd be useless.

Suo Jia gave level glances at the two girls as he said, "Aimi, Aila....it's already been almost 3 years since you entered Holy Light, right? How proficient do you think you two are at magic?"

Aimi immediately raised her forehead with pride as she replied, "You still need to ask? We haven't slacked off for even a single day.

Although I may not be able to say anything else, I can confidently declare that no one our age would dare to say that they're more proficient in magic than I am!"

Smiling, Suo Jia didn't respond and instead turned to look at Aila. Meeting Suo Jia's gaze, Aila nodded her head and coldly responded, "That's right. In reality....we've never slacked off once. In terms of magic proficiency level, even if we aren't stronger than others our age, we are at the very least not any inferior to them."

"Oh?" Suo Jia casually said with a smile, "Since you girls are so sure of yourselves, we should compete. All three of us are the same age too. We should go against each other and see exactly who is the most proficient at magic!"

Faced with Suo Jia's challenge, the two girls cheerfully agreed. Although Suo Jia was powerful, he hadn't really even released many magics in front of his classmates before. The two girls really wanted to know exactly how formidable he was.

## Chapter 134: The Innocent Three (Part 2)

---

Smiling at the two girls, Suo Jia continued, “You two should still go first. Activate the Moisture Technique with me as your target. We can get someone else to be in charge of timing!” As he said this, Suo Jia made a gesture to signal a maid walk over from the distance.

Aimi and Aila grew serious at Suo Jia’s words. They both pulled out their staffs and quietly waited. Eventually....the maid took out a timer and clearly announced, “Ready...set...go!”

Following the maid’s command, Aimi and Aila closed their eyes at the same time and exerted all their efforts in drawing the diagram. The staffs they each carried burst out a warm, blue light.

1 second...2 seconds...3 seconds....finally, after a bit more than 3 seconds and the instant before the 4th second, the two girls almost simultaneously opened their eyes. Their staffs lit up, and two Moisture Techniques activated together!

Contently enjoying the moisturizing from the mist, Suo Jia smiled at the girls and shook his head as he said, “Not good enough, it’s still far from where it should be. You guys still have the nerve to say you’re proficient at a speed like this?”

“Eh!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the two girls that had been brimming with confidence were stunned into a daze.

Suo Jia watched the two girls as he waved his right hand twice in



succession without informing the maid tracking the time. In that moment....a blue mist of moisture appeared above Aimi's and Aila's head. The time that had elapsed was barely even a second!

“What!” The girls jumped up in shock at the scene before them. This was really unbelievable. What kind of speed was this! No... this wasn't even quantified by speed anymore. This was definitely an instant activation!

Seeing the girls' shocked expressions, Suo Jia couldn't help but laugh. In reality, even before he had started using the blue glove, Suo Jia only needed 2 seconds to activate the Moisture Technique. Now with the help of the blue glove, the magic could be instantly activated!

Although the spell formation couldn't be instantly formed by the glove like that of Freezing Touch, the Moisture Technique diagram was one that Suo Jia could actually use his spirit power to draw out on his palm. However, his hand movement transformed into a mental thought, raising the speed by twofold. After all....one's hand could never be as fast as one's mind. This was just one of the miraculous effects of the Atlantis set's abilities, which boosted the activation speed by 100%!

The two girls doubtfully looked at Suo Jia, unconvinced that Suo Jia could activate techniques so quickly. They stuck to their previous statement: Suo Jia was definitely using the power of some magic equipment to be so fast. Historically, no one had ever activated the Moisture Technique that quickly.

In response to the girls' requests, Suo Jia once again activated a

series of ice magics: Ice Sphere Technique, Swamp Technique, Revolving Frozen Gas, Glacial Armor, True Ice Sphere Technique, Icy Thorn Protection, and Freezing Touch. It was fine if he hadn't tried it, but now that he had, although he couldn't activate them instantly, the difference between Suo Jia and the two girls was growing larger. The original twofold difference between their Moisture Techniques had eventually become a five or sixfold difference!

The girls found it even harder to believe this time. Suo Jia's activation speed had broken all the records they knew. Thus....they were even more sure that Suo Jia was definitely using the aid of some type of magic equipment to reach such a miraculous level.

[NSFW Content below]

Under the girls' coercion, Suo Jia could only take off all his clothes with a wronged expression. He activated magic once more, this time completely naked to the point where his swaying p\*\*\*\* was visible. Although the activation speed had decreased, it was still fast enough to shock the girls into a speechless daze!

Seeing the girls' stupefied faces, Suo Jia smiled and said, "Truthfully speaking, the reason I can activate magic so quickly is because I created my own unique method of activating magic. As long as you two master this method as well, you can be as fast as me!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the two girls immediately each grabbed one of his arms to seize him, trying to force him into teaching

them. Faced with the girls' threats, Suo Jia only laughed, but didn't respond. Although he had long since decided that he'd teach this knowledge to them, Suo Jia liked seeing them demand things from him. He wouldn't agree until he'd enjoyed himself for a bit.

Just as Suo Jia was happily enjoying himself, Eldest Sister walked into the room. Seeing Suo Jia tussling with the two girls while completely naked, her pretty face couldn't help but sink, "Young Master, how could you go naked in front of these girls and show your indecent part? This is damaging your image and dignity!"

"Indecent part?" At Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila all simultaneously frowned. Puzzled, they began to inspect Suo Jia's body, but they were completely unable to figure out what part was indecent!

After searching for a while, Aimi doubtfully reached her hand out to grab Suo Jia's fleshy thing. She turned around to ask Eldest Sister, "Is it this thing?"

"Ah!" Seeing Aimi rub the little thing, Eldest Sister was completely stunned. It was indeed that thing, but it wasn't something that one could just play around with like that!

On the other side, the originally indifferent Suo Jia suddenly changed expressions. Aimi's small hands weren't very innocent; it would've been fine if she had just grabbed, but she had even gone as far as to start kneading it. A stimulating current seemed to run through his small thing like lightning with her movements. It traveled directly to Suo Jia's head. In that instant, Suo Jia had even begun to feel a bit dizzy.

Although everyone had often bathed together in the past, and had seen each other naked, they were just children. Seeing each other was fine. None of them would have any other thoughts. They all shared a bath not only at home, but even at school. After their daily training, they'd always go and cool off together, so it could even be said that they saw each other naked every day.

Despite this, nobody had ever played with Suo Jia's p\*\*\*\* before. Even the audacious Aimi hadn't dared to act because she had faintly felt some shame. Now that they had the chance, why not properly study it a bit more?

On the other side, the expressionless Aila was finally unable to suppress her curiosity and she coldly said, "I want to touch it as well...." Her white tender hands stretched out, immediately causing Suo Jia to inhale sharply!

Although he was not yet 11 years old and hadn't gone through puberty or matured in any way yet....Suo Jia already had everything men were supposed to have. Even though he was still unable to get an erection, the feelings he sensed weren't false. Moreover, this made him even more sensitive, and thus more excited.

"Pa! Pa!" Finally unable to stand the girls violating him, Suo Jia waved his palm and slapped their hands away. He angrily shouted, "What are you two doing? Your rubbing is making me uncomfortable. Careful, or I'll hit you!"

Completely disregarding Suo Jia's anger, Aimi sighed in admiration, "It's really fun. It's fleshy and really soft."

Coldly nodding in agreement, Aila said, "Very soft...."

"Pfft..." Seeing this scene, Eldest Sister finally burst out in laughter. Only now did she finally realize that they were only children. Although their actions were indecent, it wasn't really anything big. When they grew a bit older, they'd naturally understand that what they were doing wasn't good. Right now, she couldn't be too strict. On the contrary, it would end up polluting their pure hearts.

On the other side, Suo Jia seemed at loss. Following his swatting away of the girls' soft, tender, and moist hands, an uncontrollable, strong feeling of disappointment arose in him. In that instant, Suo Jia almost reached his hand out to drag the girls back and let them continue touching him.

Suo Jia recalled what he had previously felt. He was unsure of exactly what it was; it was both comfortable and uncomfortable. However, he couldn't deny that the induced current had caused him to feel lightheaded. This completely captivated Suo Jia, and he very much wanted to try to experience that sensation again.

Perhaps some people would question why 10 year old children wouldn't even know these basic things. In reality....in this world, ten year old children really don't know these things yet. In Suo Jia's case, it had never been convenient for his mother to explain such things. In addition, Suo Jia doesn't have a single shred of lecherous desires, and books related to these things weren't

available on the street either, so there was absolutely no way he would've ever had a chance to learn about these things.

It was only because of this nature that the two girls could faintly feel shame and know they were supposed to feel embarrassed. However, they were unaware of the actual result of their actions. They spent the entire year studying, and thus had never had the chance to learn about such things. The academy also didn't have any so called health and physiology classes, so they remained ignorant the entire time.

Eldest Sister swept a glance at Suo Jia and the two girls, but didn't say a word. Instead, she simply turned around and left the underwater training ground. At the same time, Suo Jia turned to face the two girls and say, "Alright, I can teach the unique magic activation method that I developed. However, you two must agree that you won't pass this knowledge on to anyone else!"

The two girls immediately agreed to Suo Jia's words. Under Suo Jia's forceful request, the two girls made a heavy oath. Afterwards...Suo Jia took out the sketch that he had drawn earlier, and began to carefully explain it.

Suo Jia sharply inhaled. He hadn't gotten far in his explanation before he felt a pair of ice-cold hands reach out from below and grab onto his soft little thing, gently kneading it. This set off waves of electric currents that rushed up into Suo Jia's head, as fast as lightning.

Holding his breath, Suo Jia turned around. It turned out that it was the naughty Aimi. Currently....she was looking at the sketch

that Suo Jia had drawn while subconsciously holding Suo Jia's small thing.

This time, Suo Jia didn't stop her; instead, he closed his eyes. His entire body felt that indescribable stimulation. Not long after, an icy voice said, "Each person gets 5 minutes." Following these words, Xue Er's small hands were pushed aside and....a pair of colder hands instantly took Aimi's place.

# Chapter 135: The Mysterious Book (Part 1)

---

Waves of powerful and pleasurable sensation rushed through Suo Jia's head. After a moment, Suo Jia felt himself float upwards, higher and higher, until his mind entered a realm of nothingness and went completely blank. He could still feel a pulsing current repeatedly pierce his brain, but as this occurred, Suo Jia's spirit surprisingly rose to higher limits!

As his body gave a violent shudder, Suo Jia felt his entire self loosen. At that moment, the third checkpoint of meditation that he had been firmly stuck at the entire time finally gave way, and along with the rushing current.....Suo Jia successfully broke through the third level of meditation and reached the fourth realm in that instant!

Suo Jia abruptly opened his eyes and in that instant....two cold rays of light shot out from his eyes, which then disappeared in a flash. After closely examining the condition of his inner body, he discovered that his magic power and spirit power had doubled in that instant. Feeling the surge of magic power in his mind, as well as the vigorous amount of spirit power, Suo Jia knew that he had already become an intermediate mage. Everything had changed so quickly!

As he took a deep breath, Suo Jia discovered that even his breathing sounded shaky. When he opened his eyes, he saw that one of the girls was holding his flabby little thing, while the other was lightly rubbing the fleshy balls underneath his little thing. A pleasurable sensation that rushed through him like a tide almost made Suo Jia faint.



“Hm?” Hearing Suo Jia’s shaking breaths, the two girls simultaneously turned to face him to look at Suo Jia with unwavering glances. Aimi asked in confusion, “What’s wrong with you? Is our pinching you like this making you uncomfortable?”

Suo Jia nodded as he gasped for breath. However soon after, he shook his head and said while at loss, “I don’t even know if I’m uncomfortable or comfortable. It just feels really weird!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Aimi curiously looked at the little thing she was currently rubbing in her hands and said doubtfully, “You’re so strange. Why did you grow such a thing? What’s it used for?”

“That....” After stalling for a bit, Suo Jia awkwardly replied, “What else would it be used for? Obviously it’s used to pee.”

After hearing Suo Jia’s words, Aimi looked down suspiciously at the little thing she was holding, lowered her head, and lightly gave Suo Jia’s little thing a sniff. She immediately knit her brows and said, “Why didn’t you say so earlier?! No wonder it smells!” With that, Aimi immediately retracted her white and tender hand.

Just as Suo Jia thought that Aimi wasn’t going to move anymore, the next moment.....Aimi quickly activated a Moisture Technique. In that instant....a screen of mist enveloped the air above Suo Jia’s small thing. At the same time, Aimi cheerfully helped Suo Jia cleanse it, rubbing it until it was shiny and clean, forcing Suo Jia to automatically moan out loud.

Suo Jia didn't really remember what he did for the rest of the time. After numerous stimulations, Suo Jia was completely spent. Finally....unable to deal with so many stimulations, Suo Jia slapped the two girls' hands away. He dizzily put his clothes back on. If the girls played with him any longer, he'd die.

After fixing his clothes, Suo Jia carefully taught the activation method he had invented to the two girls. In reality, this wasn't that complicated; it was only differentiating the spell formation and the symbols from each other, and then drawing the diagram first before sequentially drawing the symbols in. This explanation only took a few sentences to complete.

While Suo Jia was telling them this, Eldest Sister once again entered the underwater training ground. She walked up to Suo Jia and said to him in a low voice, "Just now, the auction sent a card to invite you to attend tonight."

"Oh!" Suo Jia's eyes lit up in excitement. He knew that today's auction was different from the previous ones. This was the grand auction held semi-annually. The magical artifacts present in this auction would definitely make it worth attending.

However, the auction would be held at 8pm sharp. Right now, it was only afternoon; there was still quite a bit of time. After sending Eldest Sister away, Suo Jia took out his magic book. Now that he had already broken through to the fourth level of meditation, he was now able to start cultivating rank 4 magics.

The representative magic of the intermediate mages was the Ice Arrow. Its full name was the Mysterious Ice Arrow, which was an extremely sharp ice arrow that was shot at one's enemy to critically wound them. This was the most powerful, singular attack of the ice magics!

Simply put, the Ice Sphere Technique actually used magic to induce physical attacks. On the other hand, the True Ice Sphere Technique maintained the Ice Sphere Technique's physical attack while also relying on its freezing ability to wound the opponent.

As for the Mysterious Ice Arrow, it exhibited the profound essence of physical attacks as well as magic attack to their ultimate limits; it not only injured the target physically, but also froze them to an extreme degree. It used the sharp end of the arrow to pierce through the enemy, and the freezing gas within the Mysterious Ice Arrow would instantly induce frostbite. This was the perfect state of the Ice Sphere Technique and the True Ice Sphere Technique!

Although the True Ice Sphere could also freeze the opponent, it was actually only able to do so on the surface. It essentially only formed a layer of ice, but couldn't really injure the enemy directly. On the other hand, the Mysterious Ice Arrow could directly enter the enemy's body to attack. From the outside, no changes were visible, but once one was struck, their entire body would immediately freeze into an ice cube that could shatter with a single strike.

Of course, both the True Ice Sphere's and Mysterious Ice Arrow's effects changed depending on both their enemy and their own strength. If the opponent was strong enough, they could easily

negate the freezing power. Regardless of whether it was the ice layer formed by the True Ice Sphere or the freezing effect of the Mysterious Ice Arrow, neither would gain the chance to even begin showing effect.

Basically, the True Ice Sphere Technique was the evolution of the Ice Sphere Technique, while the Mysterious Ice Arrow was the entirety of both the Ice Sphere Technique and the True Ice Sphere Technique, the highest profound essence. Even if one managed to become a mage deity, the strongest singular magic that they could use would still be the Mysterious Ice Arrow. This would never change.

To a water mage, although the Mysterious Ice Arrow was a rank 4 magic, it was really the same as the rank 1 Ice Sphere Technique and the rank 2 True Ice Sphere Technique. Even though the Mysterious Ice Arrow completely superseded these two magics, its cultivation was actually accumulated bit by bit as time passed. Nothing was wasted; the experience gained from the Ice Sphere Technique and the True Ice Sphere Technique all transferred to learning the Mysterious Ice Arrow.

Starting from the elementary mage rank, every time one's rank increased, they could only learn one specific ice magic. For example, the rank 3 Freezing Touch and the rank 4 Mysterious Ice Arrow were representative of an ice system's profound essence! Out of all of the rank 3 and rank 4 magics, a person could only learn one. If one wanted to learn more, one would have to gather various magic books by oneself.

The Freezing Touch was the final ice system's profound essence,

as was the Mysterious Ice Arrow. After learning these, one could use them throughout their entire life. One wouldn't have to replace it with some other magic, as no similar higher ranked magics existed. Thus, the degree of cultivation one reached in these two magics was an indication of one's strength.

The Mysterious Ice Arrow's spell formation was pretty much the same as the True Ice Sphere's. There was only a single symbol difference between the two spell formations, as well as their skills in water manipulation and some other capabilities.

That's why, in reality, the Ice Sphere, True Ice Sphere, and Mysterious Ice Arrow were all pretty much based on the Water Sphere Technique, which was derived from water manipulation. Once magic reached the high level realm, it became more closely related to control!

As someone who had extremely formidable water manipulation skills, Suo Jia pretty much learned the Mysterious Ice Arrow instantly. With a wave of his hand, Suo Jia quickly activated it....

"Whoosh!" The crystal blue ice arrow that was about the same thickness as a chopstick instantly whizzed out, directly crashing into the magic target in the distance. The Mysterious Ice Arrow instantly pierced into the sturdy target, leaving only the tail of the arrow quivering outside.

Suo Jia sighed as he shook his head in admiration. He couldn't help but praise the might of the Mysterious Ice Arrow. It far surpassed the True Ice Sphere in every way, whether it was in terms of speed or fatality. However....what made Suo Jia even

happier was that he could instantly activate it!

He had originally thought that the mysterious glove he wore could only instantly activate the Freezing Touch. However, just now, Suo Jia had realized that while activating the Ice Arrow, with a slight mental push, the entire spell formation for the Mysterious Ice Arrow had instantly materialized in the palm of his hand. Right afterwards, the sharp Ice Arrow had leapt forwards with a burst; it had clearly been instantaneous!

Incredulous, Suo Jia found the book introducing the Atlantis set and began to search through it. After flipping through the pages for a long time, Suo Jia finally smiled bitterly as he discovered that....originally, this glove had actually long since completed its link.

Originally, Suo Jia had always assumed that the parts necessary for the linkage hadn't yet been completely gathered. Only now did Suo Jia suddenly realize that the glove had actually linked a long time ago.

The glove's linkage with the crown allowed him to instantly activate Freezing Touch, while the glove's linkage with the earrings instantly allowed him to activate the Mysterious Ice Arrow. Every time he gained another part of the Atlantis set, the glove would be able to instantly activate another magic. The entire Atlantis set had 13 parts in total. In other words, it could instantly activate a total of 12 magics!

Although he had already entered the fourth level of meditation, Suo Jia's current magic power was still a bit lacking for a rank 4

magic. After activating only 10 Ice Arrows, Suo Jia's vision began to blur as his magic power and spirit power were completely exhausted. A mage's magic power and spirit power levels were never enough.

At 8pm, Suo Jia and Eldest Sister met up with Emma and Wen Ya outside of the auction entrance. They then entered Wen Ya's Box #1 at the same time. After some idle chat, the auction finally began.

## Chapter 136: The Mysterious Book (Part 2)

---

This auction was rather important as it was only held semi-annually. Moreover....it was the year-end auction; during the year, this second auction was the most grand. Every year, this auction would prepare a large amount of rare and precious treasures to be sold. Only at times like these would many wealthy nobles gather.

The auction progressed in a lively manner, however Suo Jia's party did not appear too interested. No matter what, Suo Jia and Emma were still calm, as they had participated in too many auctions already. The things that were brought out first were all small things, and it was impossible for them to attract the attention of influential people.

As Suo Jia chatted with them, he also helped revise the two girls' appearances once more. After chatting for a while, the auction finally began to bring out the rare magic equipment one by one. The three people stopped talking and began to solely focus on watching the auction stand.

It is worth mentioning that neither Emma and Wen Ya were warriors. Although they were also here to buy things for personal collections, they couldn't actually use any of them.

Expensive magical equipment came out one after another, and were sold off in succession and delivered in an ordinary manner. Most of the items sold for double of what they would normally be sold for, and looking at the auctioning atmosphere, Suo Jia could not help but be amazed. In this world, there were simply too many people with a lot of money. When could he become like these



people where taking out a few 100 million wasn't even a big deal!

Although 100 units of currency in Holy Light Empire was only worth about 1 unit of currency outside the empire and the value of that money was worth a lot more, even if it was like this, 100 million was still not a small amount of money. At the very least, it was still worth 1 million outside this empire.

While he was thinking, the auction proceeded smoothly, and he watched disappointingly as magical equipment got sold off one after another. Suo felt extremely gloomy, as the first reason was that the prices were too high, and the second reason was that none of these equipment were what Suo Jia needed.

Typically, all the precious and rare items were the equipment belonged to the elements that were more popular. Fire system held the majority, while wind system came in second. As for the water system items that Suo Jia needed, there simply weren't that many.

While he was in his gloomy mood, he saw the auctioning items decrease little by little, finally... Suo Jia could not bear it any longer and wanted to take action. At the very least, he didn't want to have come here for nothing. Although Suo Jia bought a Water Spirit Crown that could improve the effects of meditation by 80 percent and a Water Spirit Ring that could improve the cultivation results of the Ice and Snow Pact by 80 percent after spending 200 million, he still wanted to continue buying.

After returning to the White Villa, the two girls who were currently studying new spells called him over, and he put the two Ideal-ranked magical equipment in front of them.

Although there were only two items, it was enough for them to use. As one girl meditated, the other could cultivate in the Ice and Snow Pact. The one meditating would wear the Water Spirit Crown, and the one cultivating the Ice and Snow Pact would wear the Water Spirit Ring. By sharing it, it was enough, after all... Other than Suo Jia, it was impossible to meditate and cultivate the Ice and Snow Pact at the same time, as “one heart can not be used for two purposes.”

For the sake of quickly promoting the strength of the two girls, Suo Jia went to the academy and requested for their leave of absence. Every day... the two girls both spent eight hours on meditation, eight hours on the Ice and Snow Pact, as well as cultivating the magic casting method for another eight hours. Their schedules were tightly packed, as otherwise, they could not meet Suo Jia's requirements.

After doing the planning for the two girls, Suo Jia forgot about all of his worries. After another year or two of training, these girls would finally be useful. The Heaven's One Holy Water and the Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons were both extraordinarily powerful innate skills, and they definitely could help in Suo Jia's plans.

However, Suo Jia felt a sense of crisis. He understood clearly that if he did not work hard and cultivate, a single slip up would cause him to fall behind these two girls. This was something that he definitely would not tolerate, and as he was already aided by the most powerful Epic-ranked outfit. Although his innate talent was average, he was not inferior to those two girls. Since it was like this, there was no reason for him to be overtaken, to the point where he could not even allow them to close the gap by a bit. The

distance between them could only grow larger, otherwise, it would prove that Suo Jia's efforts were in vain. After all, Aimi and Aila did not have the help of the Epic-ranked set, and did not even own any Legendary-ranked items.

While thinking, Suo Jia felt his heart slightly move, and with a slight wave of his right-hand, two perfectly round ice spheres immediately appeared in Suo Jia's right hand. As if he was an old grandpa on the street, Suo Jia gently began to rotate the two ice spheres as if they were juggling balls.

One should not look down on these two small Ice Spheres, as one of them was practiced using the water controlling method, and the other was training the Ice and Snow Pact. With the Atlantis' Wisdom allowing him to stay in a meditative state, this allowed Suo Jia to practice three important techniques. Water control, meditation, Ice and Snow Pact; although it looked like he was doing one thing, he was practicing three different things! It was like that saying, using one to attack three.

As a result of developing a new cultivating technique, Suo Jia only needed to meditate at night for six hours to extract information, and then afterwards spend six hours practicing the Mysterious Ice Arrow, Freezing Touch and the Whip Hammer Technique. The 12 hours of daylight were completely emptied.

Moving around the sparkling crystal-like Ice Spheres in his hand, Suo Jia often loitered around the bazaar and attempted to obtain some treasure from within. You have to understand that the first time he tried to fish out some treasures, he tasted great success. After that time, he always thought of the bazaar like a treasure

trove.

With the Vulcan's Roar as well as four million, Suo Jia was able to acquire the Atlantis' Glove, 44 interspatial rings, as well a dagger. In fact, that dagger was exchanged for the Atlantis' Earring as well as 36 Semi Epic-ranked armors and a Monarch Battle Armor.

Roughly estimating, the profits of that time equalled to a million times his current income. This was why Suo Jia was rather biased about the market. Suo Jia visited the bazaar day after day for an entire month to the point where everyone there recognized the little guy who walked about with two little swirling spheres.

After a while, Suo Jia had already spent over a billion gold inside of the bazaar, however, he wasn't able to acquire a single treasure. It is worth mentioning, however, that Suo Jia fished out quite a few ordinary goods. Adding up the value of all the items, not only did he not suffer any deficits, he rather increased by more than ten fold!

In Suo Jia's eyes, Ideal-ranked items were good things, Excellent-ranked items were not bad, and anything under Excellent-rank had similar strength. To him, they were just ordinary magical equipment and might as well have been trash. Even if someone gave it away he would not want it.

As a result, Suo Jia decided to open a large scale mixed shop in the White Villa front courtyard. All of the treasures that he came home with, he placed it there to sell. Business turned out to be excellent, and gold continuously flowed in. They had already made

a name for themselves in Holy Light City.

Early in the morning each day after a night of cultivation, his hands would call forth the ice spheres. While they were swirling about, he would rush towards the bazaar. After coming back with a day's worth of goods, he would come home in the dark. After eating, he would continue to cultivate an entire night. He felt that the days were extremely fulfilling and incomparably happy; he did not feel that it was repetitive at all.

As long as he paid something, he would receive a profit, finally... after doing this for an entire month, Suo Jia once again discovered treasure. While squatting down near a shabby and remote vendor's booth, Suo Jia concentrated his gaze on a magical book in poor condition and was carefully trying to analyze its authenticity.

Magical items could also be fake, and there were many counterfeits. There were people who especially made new things look old, and then afterwards they would claim that they dug it up out of an old tomb. Suo Jia fell for these tricks quite a few times, however now, after gaining a bountiful amount of experience, Suo Jia could no longer be tricked so easily. At the very least, he wouldn't be cheated by such underhanded methods.

Gently picking up the spell book, he carefully browsed through it. After carefully inspecting it, finally, Suo Jia decided that this magical text was definitely not new. This was definitely an ancient text, and looking at its current condition, it was already existed for a long time. Although the book was still rather intact, it was still rather shabby. The traces of time were evident, and it was not something that a counterfeit could replicate.

After analyzing for a long time, Suo Jia finally lifted up his head and looked at a new vendor that Suo Jia had previously never seen before before saying, “How much is this book? I want to buy...”

Coldly glaring at Suo Jia, the vendor obviously did not believe that such a small child had money and indifferently said, “Kid, if you want to buy it, then go back and find your family head. Although this book isn’t worth much, it would at the very least sell for several dozen thousand gold. It’s impossible for you to take out that much money.”

Suo Jia was already used to such attitude. Almost every stall owner treated him in the same way, and so Suo Jia did not explain too much and simply took out a ten thousand gold crystal card and threw it towards the vendor. Afterwards, he did not say a single words and hugged the spell book and walked away. Looking at Suo Jia who was walking into the distance and then looking at the crystal card, the stall owner could not help but stare blankly. This little child really had money!

# Chapter 137: Enchanted Zhiyao (Part 1)

---

Although he was confident that this book had existed for over a thousand years, and was certain that it was a magical book — a water system magic book to be exact— Suo Jia hadn't actually looked carefully at its contents. Although the current Suo Jia could not be compared to those wealthy people, eight or ten thousand was still nothing.

Deep into the night, Suo Jia finished his meditation and began to relax on his recliner. His two hands began to flip through the magic book, and with great interest, he began to ponder its contents. After going through a majority of the book, his notes ended up all being ordinary magics; the Moisture Technique, Ice Sphere Technique, True Ice Sphere Technique, Mysterious Ice Arrow... these wasn't any different from what Suo Jia was currently studying. At that moment, Suo Jia felt as if he had gotten ripped off.

Even after browsing a bit further until he reached the Rank 10 Absolute Zero, everything was still exactly the same. At that moment, Suo Jia sighed in disappointment. However, he did not care too much about 10,000 gold, as something like eight or ten thousand was something that the White Villa could earn from selling a single dish. It was a small matter. However, to fail while searching for treasure was still disappointing.

“Wait!” In the middle of his depression, Suo Jia's eyes suddenly lit up. Holy Light Academy's standard magical texts ended right up to here; Absolute Zero was recorded on the very last page of the standard texts. However, this book he had just bought still had quite a few pages left. This...

Precision Strike — a common Internal system magic. It allowed one to use the heart's eye to create a spirit crucifix that focused in on a target and hit it precisely!

Spirit Lock — a common spirit system shared magic. It allowed one to create spirit chains that followed moving enemies. The guided chains would latch on the target and exert its control.

Acceleration Drive — a common thought system shared magic. It allowed one to use their thought power to accelerate one's casting speed. The activation speed would be tremendously increased, as well as the magic's flight speed!

Berserk Impact — a common control system shared magic. It allowed one to use the elements to increase the attack power of a magic. This made the magic go berserk in power, and inflict even more damage on the opponent!

Enchantment Zhiyao – It combined the Hydration Technique's moisturizing rain and unique methods and processes to store the magic into the form of a portable potion. It could be used to heal wounds at any time!

Magic Zhiyao – It combined Magic Spring and unique methods and processes to store the magic into the form of a portable potion. It could be used to restore the user's magic power and battle qi at any time!

Spirit Zhiyao – It used the Sweet Spirit Dew and unique methods



and processes to store the magic into the form of a portable potion. It could be used to restore the user's spirit power at any time!

Strength Zhiyao – It used the Origin of Endurance and unique methods and processes to store the magic into the form of a portable potion. It could be used to restore the user's physical strength at any time!

“Holy crap...” Suo Jia wildly shouted as he jumped up, his fists waving around in the air.

Treasure! What was a real treasure? That's right... this is what a treasure really was. After obtaining this knowledge, weren't things like money, wealth and privileges all easy to take away?

The things that Suo Jia could immediately comprehend were Precision Strike, Spirit Lock, Acceleration Drive, and Berserk Impact. However, he couldn't yet train in the Zhiyao techniques that could recover magic power and battle qi, spirit power, and physical strength. After all... the Magic Spring, Sweet Spirit Dew, and the Origin of Endurance were the three great magics that had long since vanished from existence.

What made Suo Jia the happiest was that the Precision Strike, Spirit Lock and Acceleration Drive were three great auxiliary passive magics that cultivated one's internal, mental, and thought states. Once learned, they wouldn't need to be purposely activated, as the subconscious mind could automatically use them. In fact, they would work as long as they were imprinted into one's internal, mental, and thought states.

This is just like eating, as one does not command their hands to move their chopsticks, open their chopsticks, grab their food, lift their hand, and bring it towards their mouth. In reality, all one needed to do was to think about eating, and the rest would be automatic. It would not require any more energy to be wasted. These three great magics worked with the same reasoning.

As for the Berserk Impact, it also functioned on similar logic, only it required Suo Jia to learn the method required for activation. Previously, the magics were all dependent on oneself for activation; however, after learning the Berserk Impact, Suo Jia could use the power of water manipulation together with his magic in order to give his magics more destructive power.

Precise Strike allowed Suo Jia's magics to have a certain degree of accuracy. If the nose was indicated, then the eyes would not be hit. If he said he would hit the left eye, then the right eye definitely would not be hit. This was absolute precision!

Spirit Lock allowed Suo Jia's magics to not fail. Paired up with Precision Strike, it would grant him incredible control over the magic. Unless it was blocked or destroyed, the magic would definitely hit its target.

Acceleration Drive allowed Suo Jia's magics to continuously gain speed. Not much explanation is needed to explain the importance of the magic's speed. Without speed, even an idiot could cut down the magic, so how could a slow magic possibly even injure someone?

Berserk Impact allowed Suo Jia's magics to gain more destructive force, and allowed him to release greater offensive power. Under the influence of Berserk Impact, the Mysterious Ice Arrow would have even greater penetrating power, as well as greater attack power.

Once learned, these four great auxiliary magics would automatically activate. The process of learning these would all be within one's mind, and once these four magics were sealed within one's consciousness, they could automatically be activated at any time. In addition... these four great magics' proficiency would gradually increase each time Suo Jia activated a magic.

After spending only four minutes, Suo Jia had already accomplished everything; it was so ridiculously easy. In actuality... although these four magics were all quite awesome, they were still internal, spirit, thought and control system's most basic magics; it was just that these four magics had long disappeared from existence. Now there were only earth, water, fire and wind system magics prevalent in this world.

After grasping these four great magics, Suo Jia was so happy that he stood up and directly ripped up the pages of those four magics before tossing them into the fireplace to burn them. Suo Jia did not want too many people learning these magics. Even if others did use them, Suo Jia wanted to make sure that they had learned them from him personally.

After seeing the four pages burned into ashes, Suo Jia happily walked towards the magic targets. Now he had to test the magics out and see exactly what kind of results these four auxiliary magics

produced.

## Chapter 138: Enchanted Zhiyao (Part 2)

---

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia waved his right hand and quickly activated the Mysterious Ice Arrow. At the same time, a strange, transparent, blue halo appeared in front of Suo Jia. The halo was covered with odd symbols, and a few mysterious lines as well. In the center of the halo was a cross-shaped front sight. At closer inspection, it was clearly a reverse cross!

Not daring to delay any longer, Suo Jia quickly locked onto the magic target. At the same time, the Mysterious Ice Arrow instantly activated. With a whistle, a sharp arrow of ice with the thickness of a chopstick rapidly advanced, flashing past like a mirage with the help of a sharp push.

“Chi....” There was a sharp, ear-piercing whistle as it hit the target, but the target didn’t move at all. Doubtful, Suo Jia walked up to the target and examined it more closely. The next instant....Suo Jia’s jaw dropped in shock.

Before learning the four major auxiliary magics, the Ice Arrow could only pierce through 10 cm. But now, the 20 cm long Ice Arrow had completely disappeared from sight. The only thing remaining in sight was the end of its tail that poked out.

Suo Jia nodded to himself in excitement. He knew that rapidly pushing the Ice Arrow forwards could double its speed, as well as attack explosively. It could also double the Mysterious Ice Arrow’s impact force and penetrability. Although this was still only a rank 4 spell, with the support of the four major auxiliary magics, the Mysterious Ice Arrow would most likely surpass several ranked

magics in terms of formidability!

Regardless of whether we were talking about how accurate, how controlled, or how fast its flying speed, or its attack level was at, it far surpassed that of others. Moreover, no matter whether it was the four major auxiliary magics or the Mysterious Ice Arrow, Suo Jia had only just learned them. As he continuously used it, his level of familiarity would also increase. Everything would continue to improve, and continue to reach even more extreme levels!

Among the different systems of magic, the ones that had healing effects were the water and light elements. In terms of just healing effects alone, the two were completely equivalent. Both could recover the injured area to its perfect state. However, in terms of healing speed, the difference between the two was too great.

The light element could instantly heal any injury, regardless of its size. As soon as light magic was used, the wound would immediately recover to a state as perfect as it was before. However, the water element magic wouldn't be the same. In comparison, its speed was extremely slow. The smallest wound would still take at least 2-3 seconds to recover. Any larger wounds would require around a dozen seconds of time.

Of course, in terms of daily life, the light element and water element weren't very different, as both could heal wounds. But if one was in the middle of battle, the light element was much more dominant. No matter what injury it was, it would instantly recover perfectly. But the water element couldn't do the same. Once one was injured, it couldn't be healed within 8-10 seconds.

Typically speaking, while healing, people would normally use the light element, not the water element. The water element just couldn't be compared to the light element in terms of healing!

However, although the light element did indeed excel at healing, the water element also had irreplaceable advantages. Special tricks could be used, such as gathering the Hydration Technique, and then storing it into a bottle for one to carry. Once one was injured, they could directly use the Hydration Technique in the bottle to heal themselves. Once the Hydration Technique was sprayed onto the wound, everything would be ok. There was absolutely no need for a mage to be by one's side.

The light element couldn't do such a thing. Think about it, how could light be gathered? How would it be stored? Such a thing could be seen, but couldn't be touched. It wasn't a substance like water, and was completely vague and unknown; it was nothingness. This was how the water element was stronger than the light element.

Magical Alchemy was the combination of Hydration Techniques. With the special method and equipment, the Hydration Technique could be gathered and stored. This substance that was brimming with vitality could be used to heal one's wounds at any point in time. Turning magic into potion was the so-called magical alchemy!

During the next few days, Suo Jia didn't continue to blindly look around bazaars. Instead, he handed this task to Sixth Sister. This whole time, Sixth Sister had always accompanied Suo Jia whenever he went out, so she knew what Suo Jia knew. In terms of

choosing treasures, they each had their own merits, and both had bountiful experience in it. Moreover, Sixth Sister was naturally cautious, and so comparatively speaking, her chances of success were higher.

Suo Jia first went to the dwarf's blacksmithery and placed an order for a set of special equipment. He then went to the carpenter to order some small accessories. Afterwards, he spent a large amount of money to gather a huge pile of high-ranked water elemental magic crystals.

Finally, Suo Jia hired some construction workers to completely change the underwater training area into a magical alchemy factory. Then....Suo Jia rushed over to the City Government building and applied for a shop in front of the White Villa, changing it into a place that sold all sorts of goods! This project operation was really a shop of miscellaneous goods as it had everything from magical artifacts to all types of merchandise.

Because of Suo Jia's relationship with Wen Ya, such a minor thing was as easy as simply saying a sentence. Even the cost of the alterations was excused. After all....such a small amount of money wasn't even enough to buy a dish. Even if Suo Jia wanted to pay Wen Ya back, Wen Ya would find it embarrassing to accept it.

Afterwards, Suo Jia rushed over to Emma's household and asked Emma to use her family's propaganda system to help advertise his store. Emma's father didn't reject this request. To him, Suo Jia's request was so small-scale that Emma's father didn't care about it in the slightest. In addition, the project operation was different because it didn't give rise to any competition issues. Therefore,



Emma's father obviously wouldn't reject this proposal.

After finishing all this, Suo Jia gathered all of the girls in his class and began to advance in magical alchemy. After all, they could only sell things for a decent amount of money if they had merchandise.

The large steel machines within the underwater training area stood in the middle for a long time. The topmost part of the machine was assembled by 200 million gold's worth of water elemental magic crystals to form a magic crystal ball. This entire crystal ball was comprised of thousands of magic crystals, and there were small chinks and holes everywhere. In total, it was 1 meter in diameter!

Next to the machine was an opening. Outside of the opening was a large wooden trough that had countless fire elemental magic crystals stored within it. The trough was connected to the outside of the steel machine's opening. Once the machine started, these magic crystals would all be consumed.

The hundred water mages were also Suo Jia's classmates. At the moment, they were currently standing in a circle around the large steel machine with their blue staffs raised. A blue glow sparkled in the air as hundreds of Moisture Techniques were instantly activated. The entire training area had become a single Hydration Technique.

As the rains formed clouds, the large magic crystals on the topmost part of the machine began to glow. At the same time, all of the Hydration Techniques quickly gathered at the magic crystals,

as if drawn in by a powerful attraction force. They all entered the magic crystal ball through the chinks and holes in the formation, and disappeared without a trace,

The next instant....a thin stream of water flowed out of the bottom of the magic crystal ball. It followed a duct and flowed out from the bottom of the machine. Meanwhile, the entire steel machine began to move, and the fire elemental magic crystals in the wooden trough outside began to enter through the opening of the machine, one after another.

“Pata...Pata....Pata....” Finally, after a series of repeated soft echoes, small, red bottles began to fall out of an exit slot on the side of the machine. These red water crystal type bottles were only about the size of one’s thumb, and they were filled with a transparent fluid. These were the finished products of the magical alchemy — Recovery Potion!

In reality, it was the Hydration Technique that had been condensed by the water elemental crystal ball stored within the bottles. As for the bottles themselves, they were actually made from the powder of fire elemental magic crystals mixed with some special, congealing substances. Only fire elemental magic crystals could maintain the Hydration Technique’s vitality. If any other vessels were used, the Hydration Technique would most likely become normal water, and wouldn’t have any healing effects at all.

What was strange was that water trumped fire. This was something everyone knew. However, maintaining the water’s vitality required a fire elemental magic crystal. The fire magical crystals within the wooden trough had all been delivered into the

steel machine to be crushed into a powder, mixed with congealing substances, then compressed into the shape of a small bottle. These bottles were then filled with Hydration Techniques, which became the bottled Recovery Potion!

Reaching out to grab one of the small, red bottles and looking at the red fluid it contained, Suo Jia couldn't help but sigh in admiration. The manufacturing costs of this small bottle, not accounting for the amount of manual labor, already reached 100 gold. When manual labor was factored in, how much were they supposed to sell it for to reach obvious profit? If they sold too little, then the bottles wouldn't have been worth spending so much effort into making them.

Seeing the machine endlessly spit out small bottles, Suo Jia knit his brows together. Eldest Sister's operation plans had too great of an impact on him. Although making the bottles right now didn't require much effort, Suo Jia still stuck to the ideal that they were playing around with expensive values. Either way, business was about monopolies. No matter how much money he asked for, there still wouldn't be anyone who would dare call it expensive.

Although typically speaking, this bottle of potion wasn't worth much money, it could save one's life at a critical moment! A killing strike naturally inflicted damage, but even that could be healed. No matter if it was protecting one's life vs. standing at a critical moment, or recovering one's combat strength and defeating the enemy vs. running away from the danger, one had to admit that the value of this bottle of potion was priceless in one's life!

Gently tossing around the little bottle in his hand, Suo Jia

suddenly gripped his hands into fists. There was no point in making too many. For the moment, he'd set the profit to 10,000 times the cost. A bottle of potion would be worth 1 million gold, regardless of whether one wanted to buy it or not. Suo Jia believed that as long as it had the ability, all warriors would be willing to buy this bottle to carry around. After all, it was equivalent to having an extra life!

While Suo Jia thought this, over a thousand bottles of potion had already been produced. As he looked at the large pile of completed potions, Suo Jia couldn't help but break into a smile. Although these things didn't seem of much worth here, if he brought them outside, it would become a treasure that people would smash other's heads over. At this thought, Suo Jia raised his head and began to laugh out loud.

Unfortunately, Suo Jia's ideas were obstructed by Eldest Sister in the end. Profiting by 10,000 times was too greedy. In addition, the production and marketing costs would be out of proportion. Although this method could temporarily allow him to earn quite a sum, it would quickly reach a limit. After all.....people who could afford to buy potion worth 1 million still had their limits. Thus, Suo Jia couldn't possibly sell these potions for very long. Oftentimes, one didn't earn more money because the price was greater. Its price had to be appropriate for its use; only then would one earn a lot of gold.

Think about it; if you sold a bottle for 1 million gold now, in the future, its value would drop to 100,000 due to the excessive supply. At that point, would you be deemed as trustworthy? Wouldn't everyone curse you? Although your goods are of a high quality and unique to your family, Suo Jia was still of a noble rank after all, so

he obviously had to take into account other considerations, like his reputation!

# Chapter 139: Lonely Expert (Part 1)

---

Although it was only a single piece of advice, Suo Jia still greatly admired Eldest Sister. Suo Jia was extremely obedient towards Eldest Sister's advice, after all... what she said truly had reason. If the price was set too high, then the production and marketing really would fall apart. At that time, if Suo Jia tried to change the price, the title of a cruel exploiter would be placed on his image.

With the current situation, Suo Jia could manufacture ten thousand bottles of medicine in a day. Such great amounts, to sell at such a high price, it was basically impossible to sell it all. Under such a situation, it might be possible that one day could produce enough to last a year.

According to this situation, Eldest Sister decisively changed the name of the medicine to Life Medicine. Their marketing jingle was "It can save a life, a mystical medicine that can bestow life." As for the price, it was set as ten thousand gold per bottle, and the price will never be reduced.

In addition, to sell them in such tiny red bottles, it seemed a bit unprofessional. That's why Eldest Sister asked Suo Jia to contact the dwarven blacksmiths to create a special belt. On the belt would be 12 fasteners that would allow one to carry 12 bottles of the Life Medicine. This would make it so that one could conveniently use it at any time, and the belt would have a unique elite design.

In regards to the belt, as well as the 12 bottles of the Life Medicine, it would sell for a total of a hundred thousand gold. Like this, Suo Jia no longer owed Han Sa and the other blacksmiths

from last time, but rather reversed the situation and made them owe him quite a bit. After all... this belt, Suo Jia did not only need one or two, but rather millions. After this, the dwarven blacksmiths might never be able to say they don't have business anymore.

Under Eldest Sister's recommendation, The first batches of medicine were sent off to the Holy Light City's auction houses to be auctioned off. Within the entire Holy Light Empire, there were over a thousand cities as well as more than ten thousand auction houses. To each auction house, they sent a certain amount, and it didn't matter how much they were sold off for. The most important thing was that after doing things this way, the name of the Life Medicine would be better known. In the future, would they still fear that not enough people will buy? At that time, by relying on the fame created by the auction houses, they would be able to predict how great this business would be in the future.

Faced with Eldest Sister's various advice, Suo Jia did not say anything further and with a wave of his hands, he asked Eldest Sister to take care of it all. He still wanted his own cultivation to be the most important.

Since the underground training area was already converted into a factory facility, Suo Jia could no longer continue to train there. Fortunately, the White Villa was large enough, so Suo Jia and the others constructed a new training area. Everything was done rather quickly.

The following week, more than a thousand belts was sent off through large eagles to the various Holy Light auction houses. A

portion of the money earned from the auction would be gifted towards the city that the auction was held at. Their main goal was that at the end of the auctions, the medicine would be promoted. As for how it was promoted, it didn't matter even if it was simply through a salesperson, after all... as for the effects of the Life Medicine, the auctioneer would have to explain, and there was no need to pointlessly advertise it, otherwise, who would buy it?

A week later, all of the auction houses began to sell the medicine, and after the auctions... it actually sold for 40 billion gold. Those thousand belts actually all sold for the expensive price of 40 million each!

After obtaining the money, Suo Jia did not say anything further and directly went to the adventurer's union and gave them three missions worth 10 billion gold each. The three missions were divided into finding the Stream of Magic Power, Sweet Spirit Dew, and the Endurance Root. Only after finding these three great magics could Suo Jia create the magic power restoration, spirit power restoration, and strength recovery medicines. With these medicines in his possession, Suo Jia would have more assurance when heading out for the Great Trade Routes.

With the three missions valued at over 10 billion gold, this was truly a mission worthy of an adventurer. The entire adventurer's guild went crazy, since as long as they randomly stumbled upon a magical secret library, then they would be able to exchange it for 10 billion gold. This kind of good news was already something that hadn't been heard of for several hundred years.

After passing on the mission to the adventurer's guild, Suo Jia



returned to the White Lobby, and right when he entered, Eldest Sister excitedly welcomed him and shouted, “Young Master! We received a large amount of priority mail. They all wanted to apply to be a seller of the Life Medicine. In each city, there are actually more than ten families that want to apply!”

Furrowing his eyebrows, Suo Jia indifferently said, “Of course that would happen. With this type of item that is so high in demand, this is an opportunity that no one would want to pass up, not to mention those businessmen.”

Speaking up to here, Suo Jia began to mutter to himself before inquiring, “Eldest Sister, what do you think... what should we do about this? As for the right to sell this, if we just continued to sell it at auctions like before, won’t the price be high and wouldn’t we gain revenue as well?”

“En en en... “ After continuously nodding her head, Eldest Sister nodded her head in agreement. “Young Master and I were indeed thinking along the same lines, you’re not wrong... there is no reason to blindly let them gain benefits. It’s fine if they wanna make money, however before that, they need to pay a price upfront. The permission for the selling rights definitely has to be auctioned off!”

“En...” Slightly nodding his head, Suo Jia remembered the last two years within the bazaar, as well as the encounter he had with the magic store. He furrowed his eyebrows, and said in a serious tone, “Since they want to become a part of our commerce union, then their attitudes of service has to match up to our standards as well. Otherwise, it will damage our commerce union’s name. This

is why I think that the commerce unions all have to unify together and have the same interior decorations, as well as the same quality of service!”

“Puchi...” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Eldest Sister could not help but began to laugh. Suo Jia’s bitter experience was something that Sixth Sister had told her many times. No matter which store the Young Master went to, he would always be treated like a child and be received with a cold manner. However... the Young Master really was still a child, only that his capabilities far surpassed that of most adults.

Seeing the smiling expression of Eldest Sister, Suo Jia bitterly laughed while scratching his head, “Alright, stop laughing, either way this type of scandal cannot happen on one of our commerce unions. If I find out, I will immediately revoke their authority!”

Holding back her smile with great difficulty, Eldest Sister nodded her head slightly and said, “Don’t worry Young Master, all of the commerce union members will carry out the standard set by the White Villa. It should be alright if I make things like this right?”

Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia’s eyes could not help but light up. The White Villa’s standards did not need further words. If you came to the White Villa, then you were God, and the services you received would be of the utmost quality. Up until today, there still hadn’t been a single person that complained about the service.

Sighing in admiration while looking at Eldest Sister, Suo Jia began to mutter again, and flatly said, “This won’t work, I cannot accept this!

“Ah!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Eldest Sister opened her mouth wide, and did not know what made Suo Jia act like this. If the White Villa’s service standard was not even high enough, then what kind of standard would? This was already the highest standard that Eldest Sister could think of, and was at the level of a monarch’s. The problem was, a monarch’s quality was not something that ordinary people could attain, otherwise, it would be a capital offense!

Right when Eldest Sister was amazed, Suo Jia deeply looked at Eldest Sister. “You helped me too much, and I cannot continue to let you do all this work for me without having any status. Your dedication and contribution isn’t something that will overlook any further.”

While speaking, Suo Jia took out an award certificate and said in a serious tone, “Right now, I confer upon you the noble title of Village Paladin, afterwards, take this 10 billion gold and increase your nobility status. From now on, you are going to be the manager of the White Villa. Other than me and my mother, everyone needs to listen to your orders and arrangements!”

## Chapter 140: Lonely Expert (Part 2)

---

“What!” She cried out in shock at Suo Jia’s words. She shook her head incredulously, “No...that won’t do, Young Master, that’s too much of a waste. No matter what status this lowly maid has, I will always serve Young Master. There’s no need to waste such a good opportunity on me.”

Shaking his head with a smile, Suo Jia said indifferently, “No need, I’ve already decided. I am a person that has always thought that one should be rewarded for achievements, and punished for violations. You’ve already contributed too much to the White Villa. Without you, the White Villa wouldn’t exist today. That’s why I will not change my decision no matter what!”

“Young Master!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Eldest Sister’s large eyes couldn’t help but blur with tears. She choked with emotion, and was unable to say anything. She knew that there was absolutely no need for the Young Master to do this. The only reason he did so was because her relationship with the Young Master had already reached a point where they were inseparable.

Smiling, Suo Jia shook his head and said, “It’s fine. In the end, it’s still better if you don’t take care of this matter.”

“Ah!” Eldest Sister couldn’t help but be shocked by this. From what she could see, Young Master had simply been teasing her. The hope that he had just given her was suddenly taken back; how cruel.

As she was currently lamenting over the disappointment, Suo Jia laughed, “It’s better if I do it myself. You just stay here and wait, I’ll be back shortly. Soon.....you can become a sixth ranked lord!” With this, the Suo Jia that had just entered the room immediately turned around to walk back out.

As she looked at Suo Jia’s leaving figure, large tears finally began to cascade down as she looked at his back that was not at all imposing, and could even be said to be young and immature. However, the image was still carved deeply into her hear, that was it.....if Young Master treated her this way, she’d forever risk her life for him!

That night, Suo Jia happily rushed back to the White Villa and found Eldest Sister waiting there, full of anticipation. Smiling, he passed over the title to become a sixth ranked lord to her.

As he looked at the trembling Eldest Sister, Suo Jia laughed and said, “Sorry, if I want to award a noble title, I need to give the person’s full name. That’s why I did what I thought was appropriate and gave you a new name — Lan Ruo Simierre!”

Eldest Sister’s body shook as she stared at Suo Jia in shock. Simierre was indeed her last name, but she no longer remembered her first name anymore, so she had given herself one — Lan Ruo. She hadn’t imagined that Young Master would’ve known this, and combined her real last name and her own christened name. This depth of understanding and honor were things that would make anyone touched.

Just as she was thinking this, Suo Jia smiled and continued,

“Alright, Eldest Sister. From now on, according to the Empire’s laws, I can only call you Lord Lan Ruo now....hehe. You’d better remember this; don’t make me call your name all day because you don’t recognize your own name.”

Faced with Suo Jia’s teasing, Lan Ruo’s emotions were in a complicated disarray. After a long while....Lan Ruo respectfully knelt down and said sincerely, “Thank you, Young Master, for the freedom, honor, and power that you have granted to Lan Ruo.....no matter what happens, Lan Ruo will always be Young Master’s closest maid. This will never ever change.”

“Hahaha....” Hearing Lan Ruo’s words, Suo Jia laughed out loud. He gratefully looked at Eldest Sister and said, “The friendship we have isn’t something that anything could possibly change. I can feel that. The reason you’re willing to help me is not because of my identity, but from sincerity. Our friendship is pure; no matter what, I, Suo Jia, will always recognize you as my friend!”

With glowing eyes, Lan Ruo smiled and nodded, “That’s right. There are many things that cannot be expressed in words. ‘Distance tests a horse’s stamina, time reveals a man’s heart’. I’m sure my Lord understands Lan Ruo’s thoughts.”

Suo Jia patted Lan Ruo’s shoulder. Without saying another word, he turned around and left the room. As she looked at Suo Jia’s retreating back, Lan Ruo’s good-looking face showed a pained expression.

From a young age, she had been raised as the Duke’s dedicated servant. Even though she had no military force to speak of, she had

been trained to be the Duke's greatest spy. The reason she had come here was actually a dark flag that Wen Ya had set up to control Suo Jia's existence. In reality, Eldest Sister had always been loyal to Duke Wen Sha, loyal to Wen Ya. Otherwise, how would they have given away someone so outstanding that easily?

However, although Suo Jia was just a child, and had only been 8 years old when they had first met, they had been together for a long time now. Now she could feel his unique charm.

As a result of his young age, Suo Jia wasn't exactly handsome, nor could one say he was dashing. However, he was not lacking in sincerity in any way, especially with the amount of love and respect he gave to the six sisters. This made them feel an emotion they had never experienced before.

Suo Jia's decision to grant Eldest Sister freedom by raising her noble rank was especially bewildering to her. Duke Wen Sha was her life savior, and she would be forever in his debt. But Suo Jia's love and respect to her was also hard to betray. That's why Lan Ruo had decided that if at a critical moment, Lan Ruo would do nothing but die. Only that way would she be able to face both the Duke and Suo Jia.

As Eldest Sister was silently thinking this to herself, Suo Jia had entered the secret room with an overcast expression. One could never underestimate a child's intelligence. Although he didn't have any clear evidence, Suo Jia was certain that Lan Ruo and her sisters were definitely spies. The only reason he had made such an arrangement today was because Suo Jia was hoping to move Lan Ruo. Even though it couldn't possibly cause her to rebel, Suo Jia

still hoped that she would let him go if they were ever at a critical point.

Some people might wonder, how could a brat like Suo Jia be so sly? Actually, he wasn't being that cunning. Rather people underestimated him too much. Wen Ya was precisely one of these people!

In Wen Ya's eyes, Suo Jia was only a child. Although he was a bit intelligent, in the eyes of an adult, he was extremely easy to see through. That's why in front of Suo Jia, she didn't conceal as much. She especially never bothered to hold back her words whenever she was in a happy mood.

Suo Jia discovered through his chats with Wen Ya that she would often talk about his minor habits, actions, and shortcomings. But Suo Jia only showed those when he was in front of his mother. How could Wen Ya possibly know these things?

In addition, Wen Ya would often unconsciously inquire Suo Jia about some of the White Villa's secrets. There were many matters that even his mother didn't know about, things that only he and Lan Ruo knew. Suo Jia was certain that he had never said these things to a third person. Moreover, he had also warned Lan Ruo repeatedly for her to keep the matters a secret. Yet how did Wen Ya know of them?

In short, these signs indicated that Suo Jia's judgment was definitely correct. Lan Ruo had been secretly telling Wen Ya information, letting Wen Ya know everything regarding the White Villa. This was definitely not a false accusation.



However, when faced with such circumstances, Suo Jia was still powerless. Duke Wen Sha was the city's Lord, not someone that the current Suo Jia could fight against. Even if Suo Jia did find out about everything, he could only endure it silently without bursting out.

It was for the sake of protecting this secret that Suo Jia had ripped up all of that four page paper after memorizing it. He hadn't even told Eldest Sister about it. All of the content recorded on those four pages had been about the four major auxiliary magics, as well as the secret know-how on the four magical alchemies. Now, all of it had been burned. Even if Suo Jia's head was split open, no one would be able to extract the information.

Suo Jia had already made his move, but Lan Ruo still hadn't realized. Like Wen Ya, although she thought she understood Suo Jia very well, she had really underestimated a child's intelligence.

Suo Jia knew that under the current situation, he had absolutely no power to resist. If he revealed even the slightest sign of rebelling, he'd probably suffer from disaster. What Suo Jia needed to do now was to quickly improve his strength and power. There would eventually come a day where Suo Jia's might would reach a point where Duke Wen Sha wouldn't dare to touch him, and Suo Jia would naturally be able to break away from being under control.

Suo Jia knew very clearly that the fire wind warriors' secret couldn't be protected any longer. However....Suo Jia could still hide their strength. After all...the might of the Angelic Six Winged

Phoenix Armor was something that even Lan Ruo didn't know about. The only people that knew these things were Suo Jia and the 36 Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes. As for the dwarves, they definitely had professional morals, and even gods wouldn't be able to pry out business information from their mouths.

Blankly looking at the roof, Suo Jia couldn't help but be at a loss. Sometimes, he would suddenly wish he were a bit dumber, and never grow older. The more he aged, the more he gradually discovered that not everything in this world was illuminated by the sun. There were more places that hid in the cruel darkness. The older he grew, the clearer he could see these dark corners, and discover filthy matters. This was really a cruel fact. But if he wanted to mature, then he had to open up and probe through these darkneses. There was no alternative.

With great effort, Suo Jia tore away from these thoughts as he shook his head to lighten up. He lifted his right hand, and with a flash of blue light, the Mysterious Ice Arrow accurately struck out. With his spirit power locked on to it, he pushed the arrow faster. With the help of the explosive boost of the four great auxiliary magics, the arrow instantly pierced through the magic target, disappearing into the wall behind it.

“Practice, practice, and more practice!” This was the only thing that Suo Jia could do now. In a few more months, the Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes would return. When that time came, Suo Jia could leave this place and create a major, dominating business that was truly represented by him alone! Before this though, Suo Jia had to accumulate enough means to protect his life.

Suo Jia lost track of time as he cultivated without tiring. Aside from Lan Ruo coming to report the revenue situations, Suo Jia spent the rest of his time cultivating alone. Suo Jia firmly believed in the phrase, “No pain, no gain”. If he wanted to become an expert, then he had to isolate himself. All experts were lonely people!

# Chapter 141: Mysterious Guest (Part 1)

---

Third ranked magic was represented by the freezing touch, fourth ranked magic the mysterious ice arrow, and as for the the fifth ranked spell, it was the World of Ice and Snow. Some people call it the cold stream, as it was a ranged auxiliary magic. Not only could it freeze the enemies that enter within its range, it could completely freeze the enemy party into an ice sculpture!

The World of Ice and Snow was considered an upgrade to the Revolving Frozen Gas, and it had an even stronger range and freezing effect. With Suo Jia's body as the center, it would violently circulate. At the same time, the World of Ice and Snow would create a cold stream, and not only was it able to freeze the enemy, it could also push back the bodies of approaching enemies. This spell was an absolute necessity for ice system mages, as it could immediately force an approaching enemy backwards!

As for the utility it provides, the World of Ice and Snow was similar to a fire mage's Defying Ring of Fire. However, it's power was greater, as the explosiveness of the Defying Ring of Fire could only push aside an enemy, and did not have the ability to inflict much harm on the opponent. It had no offensive capabilities, however, the World of Ice and Snow was completely different.

In fact, other than forcing an enemy back, the World of Ice and Snow could also violently freeze the enemy to the point of completely freezing them. Even if they were not frozen, at the very least, their movements would be slowed. For an ice system mage, it could allow them to run away in a dangerous situation, as well as give them the time and distance required to react to their opponents. In terms of function and performance, the World of Ice

and Snow was the most powerful spell of the Rank 5 spells!

Through a period of lonesome and dry practice as well as the usage of the three pieces of Atlantis equipment and the Faerie's Soul, Suo Jia broke through the fifth layer of meditation without much difficulty; he finally became an advanced mage! What represented an advanced mage was the World of Ice and Snow!

Suo Jia already knew the World of Ice and Snow inside and out. With a slight movement of his right hand, the center of the blue glove brought forth a bright energy light that scattered around like lightning in all directions. He rapidly drew out a complex magic diagram, and after approximately 5 seconds, the World of Ice and Snow activated.

Within the whizzing sounds of the cold winds, various shards of ice were mixed into the cold stream as it spread out everywhere with a sweeping motion. With Suo Jia in the center, it violently formed a circle as it pushed back everything in his surroundings.

Within the loud whistling noise, the cold stream's icy frost shot out, and the floor was covered in a thick layer of cold frost. The surrounding walls were also covered by the icy snow, and inside of the cellar, it looked as if someone painted a sheet of white over everything. Everything was spotlessly white, sparkling and translucent.

Faced with this scene, Suo Jia could not help but furrow his eyebrows. With his feet stepping on the frost covered floor, he walked towards a wall and carefully inspected it. On top of the wall, shards of ice were condensed together, forming a frozen wall

that was about five centimeters thick. It seems like... if this wall was the enemy, then most likely he/she would be frozen by now!

However, what made Suo Jia worried was that the casting time of the World of Ice and Snow was simply too long. In total, it needed five seconds to start unless it was prepared in advance. Otherwise, it might as well be a useless spell, as it was impossible to depend on this spell at crucial moments.

As he was frowning, crisp footsteps could be heard outside the door. As he looked towards the door in surprise, Lan Ruo walked in with a serene face and said in a low voice, “Young Master, there is a mysterious customer outside. He requested to meet you personally as he claims to have a large business deal.”

After once again furrowing his eyebrows, Suo Jia uninterestedly replied, “Right now, I am at a crucial point in my cultivation. I don’t have the time to meet anyone, so please go outside and tell them that if they have any business deals, they can just discuss it with you. I don’t want to get involved in any business matters.”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Lan Ruo gratefully looked at Suo Jia. Such complete trust would be enough to move anyone, and at the same time, this meant that the more Suo Jia treated her this way, the worse she would feel. She couldn’t renounce the Grand Duke’s benevolence, and at the same time, she couldn’t betray Suo Jia’s trust. This situation was simply too difficult.

What made Lan Ruo feel the worst was that although the six sisters were supposed to be gifted to Suo Jia, in actuality, they were still Lord Wen’s people. All it would take would be a simple

command and they would have to abandon this place and return to the Grand Duke's side. The Grand Duke's benevolent action of sending them here was actually done with malicious intentions. It was for the purpose of spying on them and finding Suo Jia's weaknesses; he wanted to completely and eternally control him!

However in contrast, Suo Jia did not worry about this at all. He only thought about what was good for his people, and although he wasn't very old, the way he handled things really made Lan Ruo sigh in admiration. Many times, Lan Ruo would hypothetically think about how great it would be if Suo Jia was the Grand Duke. If they had such a brilliant lord, it really would be their great fortune.

While thinking, Lan Ruo shook her head and said, "Young Master, this guest might be someone that you need to meet. Together with him came Miss Wen Ya, and seeing their expressions, it seems that he is quite close to her."

"Oh?" Hearing Lan Ruo's words, Suo Jia could not help but furrow his eyebrows. Although he wasn't willing to go out, he still knew that unless he didn't want to remain in Holy Light City anymore, he still had to give Wen Ya face no matter what. Not only did she save him from bad situations before, the most important part was that she was still his biggest supporter.

The wealth of the White Villa was something that almost everyone knew about. However, even though the White Villa was so rich, there wasn't anyone who dared to give any suggestions, why was this? This was because everyone knew that the White Villa was backed by the Duke, and unless they wanted to commit

suicide, it was better not to cause trouble here. If something happened to the White Villa, they wouldn't be able to run away no matter how many connections they had.

Thinking up to here, Suo Jia helplessly released a sigh and said with a forced smile, "Right, I can avoid others, but as for Elder Sister Wen Ya, I have to give her face. Please go and tell them to meet me at my studio, I will be there soon."

Slightly nodding her head, Lan Ruo turned around and left the secret room. Seeing Lan Ruo's disappearing figure, Suo Jia's brows clenched together even tighter. To be honest, he did not hate Lan Ruo, and did not hate Wen Ya. Although they were all plotting against him, their actions were still understandable.

After knowing Lan Ruo for so long, Suo Jia still understood her to some extent. Although her mind moved so quickly that she could even be called crafty and sinister, she was not a bad person. Her character was good, and the way she treated others was good as well. The reason she was overseeing Suo Jia was because of a command. In fact, many important matters were actually not leaked out by her.

As for Wen Ya, it was also difficult for Suo Jia to blame her. Truthfully, with her level of power, she could definitely force Suo Jia's mother to become her follower, and even serve Wen Ya for the rest of her life. However, in reality, she did not do so.

Wen Ya's intimacy with Suo Jia was also something that everyone knew. Since there was a chance of her becoming the empress, as well as the fact that she ate like an obese person, it was



impossible for her to abandon him. In order to know where Suo Jia was at any moment within the villa, she sent people to monitor him. This wasn't a wrong choice; on the contrary, doing otherwise would've been strange. The most important thing was looking to see if she did anything to let down Suo Jia. Up until this date, Wen Ya's monitoring could only see what was on the surface, and she didn't actually do anything that was harmful.

However, although the current situation was like so, Suo Jia already couldn't tolerate calling Lan Ruo Eldest Sister anymore. Unless she really acted like an older sister should, it was simply staining this pure and holy title! Other than that, even though the law of the empire required that the nobility be called by their title, inside of the house, who cares?

## Chapter 142: Mysterious Guest (Part 2)

---

Straightening his hair and switching to a new outfit, Suo Jia strode out of the secret room. He walked towards the White Villa, and while walking, Suo Jia was in deep thought. Who exactly was it that came today? Who was this person that even Wen Ya was so respectful towards?

While thinking, Suo Jia suddenly realized that if he wanted to become stronger, he had to have absolute control over himself, and to devote everything towards his own matters. Currently, although he lived within the house, he did not know much about the house's matters at all. As for the important information and intelligence, Lan Ruo wouldn't carelessly leak to Wen Ya.

Suo Jia entered the White Villa without warning, and walked up the stairs up to the third floor. When he arrived in front of the office, he looked at its door and took a deep breath before pushing it open. The next moment...Wen Ya and a mysterious masked woman appeared in Suo Jia's line of site.

As he calmly entered the room, Suo Jia looked across at the mysterious guest. His expression didn't change at all, showing neither respect nor impoliteness. He was calm and collected, his expression completely free of worry. This made the mysterious masked woman astonished; how could such a young child have such a manner!

Based on Suo Jia's observations, this person was an enchanting woman. Although he couldn't see her face, and her body was a bit chubby, she had that alluring air that was so bright it felt like one

could physically touch its existence.

What shocked Suo Jia the most was the other party's noble air. Every movement made in a graceful, poised, and luxurious manner. Every action was incomparably skilled and beautiful; they were neither too large nor too small. The movements were just so smooth, so subtle, that they were something that nobody else could possibly learn how to do.

Suo Jia clapped his hands and raised his voice, "Lan Ruo, why haven't you called anyone to bring tea?"

Wen Ya smiled at Suo Jia's words and said, "No need to call them, we aren't thirsty. I've already warned Lan Ruo's servant girls repeatedly that no matter what, they are not permitted to approach this area. That's why they aren't in this vicinity."

Suo Jia felt slightly uncomfortable at Wen Ya's words. This was clearly the White Villa, Suo Jia's home, yet Wen Ya bossed people around so easily without his agreement. It was even to the extent that Lan Ruo hadn't even sought out Suo Jia's opinion; she hadn't even informed him of the matter.

That also meant that if Wen Ya commanded them to get rid of Suo Jia, then there would come a night where he'd open the White Villa's door and die without even knowing how it happened. This feeling of complete lack of control was really too horrible.

However, although his mood was terrible, Suo Jia definitely didn't dare to show it. He was especially careful in making sure his

face hadn't revealed anything. However, Suo Jia still had to show some type of sign; reacting too much would admittedly seem excessive, while not reacting at all would be just as useless. Wen Ya understood Suo Jia's temperament so well; how would she not see through Suo Jia's tricks?

Suo Jia had read in a book once that being a good actor was extremely difficult. If one couldn't even deceive themselves, then there was no way they could think of deceiving others. If one wanted to move someone, then they'd have to move themselves first!

Suo Jia quickly considered this. If he was completely unaware of this matter, how was he supposed to face it? The gears in the mind spun furiously and soon....Suo Jia found his answer.

What kind of person was Suo Jia? That's right....he was the type that clearly differentiated between recompensing favors and enmity. Right now, Suo Jia didn't think that he owed Wen Ya anything. This command was issued beyond her authority, making Suo Jia explode in fury. Wen Ya didn't have the rights to order Suo Jia's maids around; only Suo Jia was their master.

Suo Jia silently stood up and pushed the door open. Afterwards....he stood there at the entrance and loudly shouted, "Lan Ruo, immediately bring some tea up. The guests want to drink!"

Seeing Suo Jia's indignant little appearance, Wen Ya was first at a loss. However, she then shook her head and began to laugh. Suo Jia's acting was undoubtedly successful. In Wen Ya's eyes, he

looked just like a short-tempered child that couldn't get the candy he wanted. He seemed both cute and amusing.

Wen Ya wasn't concerned about Lan Ruo disobeying Suo Jia's commands. After all...Lan Ruo was raised by the Duke. No matter the circumstance, she would always act out according to plan. There was absolutely no need for any special instructions.

As expected, Suo Jia's angry shout caused Lan Ruo to quickly appear at the head of the stairs carrying a tea tray. She smiled and said, "Young Master, a new green tea had just arrived. The soaking time was a bit long though, and has caused the guests to wait for too long."

With a slight nod, Suo Jia walked back to the office and sat himself down on the old chair. While Lan Ruo was setting down a cup of tea to each of them, he said in a low voice, "After you're done delivering the tea, you are dismissed. If it's not important, then don't come up!"

"Pfft...." Wen Ya was unable to hold herself back from laughing at Suo Jia's words. Even the mysterious masked guest couldn't prevent the corners of her mouth from rising into a smile. This was clearly a child's sulking. It was the same exact command, but he had to repeat it himself in order to feel satisfied. This child was really too amusing.

Squinting at the two women, Suo Jia leisurely leaned against the old chair, and slowly said, "Sister Wen Ya, why did you come looking for me today? You know that recently I've been doing closed door cultivation, so my time is really tight. Honestly

speaking, aside from Sister Wen Ya nobody else could possibly drag me out!”

“Oh?” The mysterious masked guest laughed and said, “Then does that mean even if Duke Wen Sha personally came, you wouldn’t be willing to come out either?”

Suo Jia frowned at the mysterious masked guest’s words. This question was really too penetrating; how was he supposed to respond? If he said that he wasn’t willing to meet, it would be losing face for Wen Sha. However, if he said that he would meet, then what could his previous words count as? Rubbish?

Curling his lip, Suo Jia calmly said, “That can’t even qualify as a question. Duke Wen Sha wouldn’t come to my residence. Even if he did, he wouldn’t look for a young child like me; Duke Wen Shan is a man. I don’t think there would be anything he’d demand from me!”

Suo Jia narrowed his eyes at the mysterious guest and said, “Even if he came, it would be for the sake of receiving the White Villa’s services, not me. Naturally, there would be people to serve him.”

“By no means!” The mysterious guest’s eyes couldn’t help but light up at Suo Jia’s words. This response didn’t directly answer her question, but it did implicitly reply. If she continued to question him, it would be clear to anyone that she was just arguing for the sake of arguing. Anyone with the slightest bit of professionalism wouldn’t do such a thing. Moreover, with such urgent pressuring, Suo Jia would surely say that he wouldn’t meet her. Because ‘children’s words carry no harm’, even if the Duke

knew of this, he wouldn't be able to make things difficult to a mere 10 year old child with the Duke's prominent position, right?

Suo Jia furrowed his brows in thought as he replied, "Ok, ok, don't continue to test me. My time is extremely precious. If you have anything to say, please hurry up and say it!"

The guest couldn't help but feel shocked after seeing Suo Jia's expression. Exactly what kind of person was Suo Jia? Why did he dare to treat Wen Ya in such a way? Reasonably speaking, nobody would ever act so impatiently towards Wen Ya because of her status. But what shocked the mysterious masked person was that Suo Jia not only dared to act in such a way, but Wen Ya didn't get mad at all about it. On the contrary, she looked at Suo Jia with a loving gaze. What....

Helplessly shaking her head, Wen Ya gently said, "The reason I came today was to help my friend get a golden card. I have a very important friend that really needs your help!"

Hearing Wen Ya's words, Suo Jia glanced at the mysterious masked person. He had actually already guessed who he was supposed to help. Furrowing his brows, he said, "Sister Wen Ya, I've already said before that I'm very busy; helping you and Emma alone already exhausts all of my time. If you find me another customer, how would I be able to cultivate?"

"Little fellow, it seems to me that it's more like you don't have the skills to help me. If you really cannot do it, just say it directly. I won't trouble you any further." The mysterious masked guest said with a smile.

Pouting, Suo Jia said in disdain, “Do you really think I’m just a kid? I can guarantee you that attempting to egg me on like that won’t work at all.”

At this point, Suo Jia stood up and firmly said, “Sister Wen Ya, you understand my principles. Basically, there’s no way I’d agree to this. If you want my help, then you should go ahead and try your hardest to move me otherwise!”

Suo Jia said rudely, “My time is short, so I won’t accompany you guys any longer. I’ll get Lan Ruo to entertain you guys later. Everything will be free of charge, my treat!’ Suo Jia smiled and nodded at the mysterious masked person and then turned to leave the room.

As she saw Suo Jia abruptly leave, the mysterious masked person exclaimed in shock, “My god! Does he even count as a child? I feel like he’s more like those difficult ministers in court!”

The mysterious guest turned to look at Wen Ya and asked inquisitively, “I’m curious; he even dared to not give you face. I really want to know how you and Emma were ever able to persuade him to help you.”



## Chapter 143: Incomparable Force (Part 1)

---

Wen Ya couldn't help but smile bitterly at the mysterious guest's words, "Since he was young, Suo Jia had never met his father before. He grew up with his mother only. Nobody had ever helped the two of them before, so his belief is that one must pay a price for a gain. He would never serve someone for free!"

Wen Ya shot a respectful glance at the mysterious guest and said, "You should also know that if he does decide to help us, it wouldn't only be a one-time thing only. He has to watch over us for his entire life. This price is too great; it's equivalent to selling a portion of his life to us. To Suo Jia, one has to pay a price that would move him; otherwise, he definitely won't help."

"Oh?" Despite Wen Ya's words, the mysterious guest wasn't disappointed; on the contrary, she became even more interested. Her eyes glowed as she said, "Then tell me, how did you and Emma get him to agree?"

Wen Ya indifferently replied, "I saved the lives of him and his mother. I then granted him a direct promotion to a fourth ranked noble, and gave him the ability to have 100 official attendants, as well as the right to award 100 village paladin nobility titles, and I also gifted him the White Villa. Only then did he agree to help me for the rest of his life."

"Heavens!" The mysterious masked guest couldn't help but cry out in shock. Such a price was way too high!

Wen Ya continued, “As for Emma, I’m not quite sure how much money she paid him. At the very least, it must’ve been dozens of hundred millions. She also gifted him a few Legendary-ranked magic artifacts. And most importantly, she gave him a peak-grade part of an Epic-ranked equipment set — Atlantis’ Wisdom!”

“What!” The mysterious guest finally couldn’t help but stand up as she said in disbelief, “How is that possible? All he does is move his hands. How is that worth so much! Based on my calculations, giving him some tens of millions should be enough!”

“Tens of millions?” Wen Ya first stood there in shock for a bit, then she vigorously shook her head and said, “No, no, no....it’s best if you give up on that notion. Money is the last thing he lacks. For him to bestow his service requires over thousands of millions. Tens of millions is only enough for him to eat!”

“What! Did he steal a bank or something? How is he so wealthy?” The mysterious masked guest couldn’t hold back her cry of shock.

Wen Ya shook her head and bitterly laughed, “You’ve heard of the Vitality Medicine before, right? In reality, that medicine was produced and sold by Suo Jia. In addition, I can also tell you that although the money gained from a bottle of Vitality Medicine is merely a hundred gold, he can produce ten thousand of them per day.

The mysterious guest was completely speechless. The profits Suo Jia earned per day was already hundreds of millions, yet she had wanted to try to persuade him to help her with only ten million. What kind of joke was that?

Wen Ya smiled at the shocked mysterious guest and said, “You’ve taken Lord Suo Jia too lightly. You were once Holy Light’s number one, so you must know how important one’s beauty is. The thing is....as long as you can move Suo Jia, he can maintain the apex point of your beauty for the rest of your life. He can also make you Holy Light’s number one for your whole life. How could this possibly be measured by money?”

“Gulp....” Swallowing with difficulty, the mysterious customer shook her head incredulously and said, “I really cannot believe it. He’s only a child, can he really use methods that can pierce the heavens like that? That’s too unrealistic. It’s as if he’s going against the heavens!”

“Haha....” Wen Ya chuckled as she replied, “This isn’t something you need to doubt. I’m sure you remember how Emma and I looked before. You’ve also seen our current appearances. This is the solid evidence. In addition, no matter how audacious I am, I would never dare to trick Her Highness, the Empress!”

After muttering irresolutely to herself, the Empress’ eyes sharply lit up as she smiled and said, “Since money won’t move him, then I’ll have to use my status as the Empress to command him directly. If he dares to disobey, then I’ll condemn his entire family, making it so that he wouldn’t dare to not agree!”

“Heavens!” Wen Ya cried out in shock at the Empress’s words and said, “Please don’t do that, your Highness. If you use your royal name to command him, he will indeed be unable to disobey, but haven’t you thought about this? If he’s unwilling to help you,

what would happen afterwards? Even if he doesn't dare to hurt you, he can still hold back his abilities when helping you, and it wouldn't be profitable for you. Even though you could've originally enjoyed 100% of the effects, it's possible that he'd only put 80% of his efforts into helping you, and you wouldn't even know!"

Wen Ya urgently stood up and continued, "This type of matter cannot be forced. If Suo Jia lost his noble rank, the one suffering the most wouldn't be him, but rather your Highness!" Think about it carefully: Is your appearance more important, or the mere worldly possessions that are of monetary worth?"

The mysterious person listening to Wen Ya was indeed Holy Light Empire's Empress. She couldn't help but clench her teeth at this. As time passed, her appearance had gradually began to show her age. Although she was the Empress among all the concubines, she had already lost the Emperor's love. The Emperor hadn't cared for her for the past three years.

All women were like this. Their prime only lasted for a few years; once one passed the age of 30, their appearances would gradually age. At age 40, they wouldn't be worth anything. But men were different; there was a saying that 'Men at age 40 are budding flowers, but women at age 40 are leftover tea dregs'. There were many young seductresses by the Emperor's side; how could she possibly prevail against them with her resources alone?

The Empress knew that everything she had was obtained with her appearance. Now....everything would also be lost because of her appearance. If she continued on this way, there would

eventually come a day where she'd be disposed and lose everything. It could even be said that the one that would win would be a beautiful woman, and the loser would be a beautiful woman as well.

Noticing the Empress' fluctuating emotions, Wen Ya softly said, "Your Highness, your appearance is definitely deserving of number one in Holy Light. As long as you can restore your appearance, there will be no need to fear that the Emperor will not return to your side. Moreover...once your appearance has been restored, the Emperor, who's around 50 now, will surely feel inferior to you. At that point, how could he not pamper you? Would everything you gain be worth only ten million gold?"

"That's right....." The Empress's eyes had a dreamy look as she thought, "If I can really regain my previous appearance, any price is worth it. After all, I will be obtaining the whole world as a result. But if Suo Jia holds back even a bit, the result will not be the same. Wen Ya is right; I have to completely move Suo Jia, and make it so that he's willing to help me with all of his abilities!"

Wen Ya's eyes glowed as she saw the Empress's expression. Wen Ya knew that she had finally persuaded her Highness. The Empress would surely not bat an eyelid at any price. She'd be willing to pay millions and millions for what she'd gain in the future. This type of exchange was something only idiots wouldn't partake in.

The reason Wen Ya was so enthusiastic about this while actively praising Suo Jia was for her own sake. As long as she continued on this ship, then the Empress would eventually join her side. After the Empress restored her appearance, she wouldn't need to worry

about the Emperor not being captivated by her. At that point, her affair with the Fourth Prince could pass smoothly with a single sentence. After all, Wen Ya wasn't lacking in any way: she had appearance, status, and everything else that first class beautiful women had.

Most importantly, after 7-8 years when the Emperor had reached the age of 60, he would have to abdicate his throne per the empire's regulations. When that time came around, the Fourth Prince would have a much higher chance of gaining the throne if they had the Empress's support. That's why, no matter what, Wen Ya had to pull the Empress onto her ship!

While thinking, the Empress finally came to a decision and firmly said, "Good, regardless of his age, since he has the ability to retain my youth, I am willing to pay no matter the price!"

## Chapter 144: Incomparable Force (Part 2)

---

After she spoke, the Empress slightly smiled, “I’ll quickly return to the capital tomorrow and personally go and select some treasure. Isn’t it just an Epic-ranked set? I recall that the warehouse should have several sets. With my status and nobility, no one will dare question me if I take one!”

Speaking up to here, the Empress slightly paused then soon after continued talking “As for nobility title, I am able to promote him up by four noble ranks directly to a first ranked lord; I do not believe that he will refuse!”

Hearing the Empress, Wen Ya inhaled sharply. Suo Jia’s rising in nobility rank could only be described as crazy. A first ranked lord was a noble title that only knights had. Anything higher was impossible, aside from being a type of establishment of outstanding military service.

The lord ranks were divided into 8 ranks. Each lord rank was also divided into first and second sub-ranks. Now Suo Jia had risen to the level of the highest ranked lord. Starting from the knight ranks, one could be considered the same as genuine nobility! At the very least, one could become the lord of a 10,000 population city!

In reality, the Empress could actually directly raise one’s noble title by six consecutive ranks. However.....including the Emperor, the highest limit to raising ranks was the first ranked lord. If one wanted to become a knight rank, even the Emperor couldn’t directly bring one’s status up to such a level. The person had to establish some outstanding military service or accumulate enough

national medals to go up. If one didn't have enough achievements, there was no way they could get the knight rank.

As Wen Ya was pondering this, the Empress hurriedly stood up and resolutely declared, "Alright. Time is precious, so we shouldn't stay here and waste any more time. I'll immediately send a message to my trusted aide and send them to the royal treasury to find an Epic-ranked magic equipment under my name. No matter what, I must persuade Lord Suo Jia!"

Wen Ya warned, "Your Highness, Lord Suo Jia is a water elemental mage, so he likes water elemental based magic equipment. If you can find a part of the Atlantis equipment set, as well as increase his noble rank by four levels, Suo Jia will definitely be persuaded!"

The Empress stood up and quickly left the White Villa. That evening, a griffin carrying a secret letter from the Empress was sent out from Holy Light and quickly raced towards the capital. During this time, Suo Jia had entered closed-door training to cultivate every day. His sole goal was to break through the fifth level of the realm and familiarize himself with the strength of a high ranked mage. There was less than a month remaining until the Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes returned.

As he was submerged in cultivating, he could hear clear footsteps approaching from outside the secret room. Furrowing his brows, Suo Jia retracted his right hand, and instantly relinquished control over the ice stream. It fell to the ground, emitting a mist of cold air that permeated the entire room.



The entrance opened, and Lan Ruo walked in. She said respectfully, “Young Master, Wen Ya and that mysterious person returned. Wen Ya wanted me to tell you that she’s already prepared a gift that you will be unable to refuse, and invites you to meet them!”

Suo Jia’s eyes lit up and he firmly said, “Alright. You go back and prepare some tea first. I’ll immediately go!”

Lan Ruo wordlessly turned around to leave the secret room. Suo Jia didn’t tarry any longer, and he quickly changed to a fresh robe and rushed over to the White Villa.

Just as before, Suo Jia met the mysterious person and Wen Ya in the guest room. However, this time, it was different; they hadn’t come empty-handed. The mysterious person was holding an average-sized box. Suo Jia didn’t know what it contained, but judging from the patterns on the box, it was clearly not poor quality.

The mysterious person locked gazes with Suo Jia as she said in a shaky voice, “Lord Suo Jia, I’ve diligently looked for a very long time, and have finally prepared a gift that will definitely persuade you!”

“Oh?” Narrowing his eyes at the mysterious person, Suo Jia lightly sat down on the old chair and indifferently said, “You’re that confident? Then I will definitely have to properly enjoy this.”

The mysterious person proudly smiled at these words and

replied, “Firstly, I can raise your noble rank by 4 levels, and bring you up to a first ranked lord!”

Suo Jia’s eyes flashed, and he smiled, “Interesting. That’s definitely interesting. This gift of yours is indeed quite good. However....that alone can’t possibly persuade me. Although noble rank is important, I don’t care about it to that extent.”

Nodding in understanding, the mysterious person placed the box she was holding in front of Suo Jia and calmly said, “The second gift is stored inside this box. You can personally examine it. If this gift doesn’t persuade you, then I’ll leave immediately without another word!”

Subconsciously looking at the box, Suo Jia curiously reached out to lightly rub the box’s cover. He really wondered exactly what in this box could give this woman such self-confidence.

Suo Jia inhaled sharply as he slowly opened the lid. Immediately....a pair of deep blue combat boots appeared in his line of vision. At first glance, they seemed to be cast from something like steel. Their exterior was covered with strange lines and depressions. What made the deepest impression on Suo Jia was the blue light that circulated the boots, constantly spinning and swaying in the air.

“This....” Suo Jia’s heart began to race fiercely. What was this? It was undoubtedly.....this was definitely the combat boots of the Atlantis set — Atlantis’ Journey!

Dumbstruck, Suo Jia raised his head to look at the mysterious person across from him. He really wanted to know how she knew that he'd like this. However, Suo Jia soon realized the answer as soon as he saw Wen Ya. Emma might not have told Wen Ya about this matter, but Lan Ruo probably did. Since Wen Ya knew, she'd naturally suggest the mysterious person to give this to him. In that moment, Suo Jia didn't know whether he should be feeling happy or furious at Wen Ya's actions.

Silently covering up the box, Suo Jia quickly recalled what he knew about these boots. According to his memory, these combat boots had extremely powerful abilities. Not only could they link to the other parts of the set, but they also carried an amazing auxiliary ability — Incomparable Force!”

The word ‘incomparable’ in this case, referred to how the Frost Wyrms were an incomparably mighty being. These boots were made from Frost Wyrms wings leather. In addition, this leather was taken from a Frost Wyrms that was over 10,000 years old!

Although typically speaking, a Frost Wyrms became stronger as time passed, those that survived past 10,000 years were never heard of. Only the Frost Wyrms King from the epics had ever reached the age of 10,000. These combat boots had been made from the wings of the world's strongest Frost Wyrms: the Frost Wyrms King!

Secondly, the word incomparable referred to how a duplicate of these combat boots could never be reproduced. The 10,000 year Frost Wyrms had already become a Diamond Dragon, and nothing could possibly harm it. Even if 100 Black Dragons attacked it

together, they couldn't possibly hurt the Diamond Dragon. Suo Jia really couldn't think of how this most precious wing leather had been retrieved in the first place!

Both Diamond Dragons and Frost Wyrms quickly turned into nothingness as soon as they died, like melting ice that left absolutely no trace of ever existing. One could only successfully retrieve leather while the dragon was still alive. Could that possibly mean that the Atlantis at that time was so powerful that it could even defeat a 10,000 year old Frost Wurm? What kind of strength was that!?

Even if these combat boots weren't Epic-ranked equipment, they would've been considered priceless based on their material alone. A Frost Wurm weighing hundreds of tons could only fly into the air because of these two leather wings. As long as there was water element in the area, they could pass through as if walking on water. Although flying, one could also say that they were swimming! After all...in this world, the water element existed everywhere. If the six elements lost equilibrium, the world would instantly perish.

Suo Jia had to admit that these combat boots were impossible to reject. It was really way too major of a help to him. If he wore these boots, Suo Jia would be able to walk on voids. He'd even be able to roam around in midair! This far surpassed the wind element's Soaring Technique in all aspects!

Among the 4 elemental magics, only the wind element mage could fly. However....the Soaring Technique from the wind system simply gave oneself a pair of wings made of wind. The takeoff and

landing speeds of this technique was not bad, however, the speed of moving left or right in the air was quite slow, roughly equal to the speed of a person running on the ground. Most importantly, it consumed a major amount of magic power, and nobody could persevere with it for very long.

# Chapter 145: Such Power (Part 1)

---

Even if one directly made the leather from a Frost Wyrms' wings into boots, they'd still have the ability to walk on unrestrained. However, the current issue was that these boots were a pair of magic equipment, and it was even part of an Epic-ranked magic equipment set. Thus, it most likely did not only possess this function.

Besides the unique ability to walk unrestrained, this pair of combat boots also had a magic destruction capability. Regardless of whether it was a fireball or wind blade, it would dissipate upon contact with these boots. This was attributed to the formidable power of the Diamond Dragon, and although it did not have the Black Dragon's immunity to magic, it still possessed the ability to destroy magic. In other words, it could subdue magic. As long as they were used appropriately, Suo Jia could depend on the boots to destroy any offensive spell.

In addition, the Diamond Dragon's skin was undoubtedly tough and durable. If the Black Dragon's attack could not even remotely scratch it, then there was practically no other power in this world that could damage it. Also, due to its toughness, once one utilized these boots to attack, there was a high probability that one could directly shatter the enemy's bodies and bones purely by relying on its hardness.

Moreover, the Great Frost Wyrms were originally the pinnacle existence of the ice element. It possessed auxiliary effects that aided ice magics, and could improve the might of the World of Ice and Snow!

If the effects were explained according to government standards, then this pair of battle boots had the ability to increase one's movement speed by 100, and the fixed increase effect of the World of Ice and Snow. For its supplementary power, it had the 'Unrivaled Wave Walking', 'Magic Destruction', and gave physical attacks a shattering power. Basically, putting on this pair of boots was equivalent to Suo Jia utilizing the feet of a ten thousand year old Giant Frost Wurm, and was only missing out on a bit of its power.

Also, what made Suo Jia the most excited was that after linking up these battle shoes with the rest of the set, he would be able to instantly cast the World of Ice and Snow. Although the expenditure of magic and spirit power was not any lower, being able to instantly cast the World of Ice and Snow was simply too important for Suo Jia. He would be able to cast the cold stream at any time to push back any approaching enemies, as well as freeze them!

Putting aside the fact that Suo Jia had his noble title increased by four ranks, these combat boots alone were something that Suo Jia definitely couldn't refuse. Actually, even if the opposite party had handed Suo Jia only the leather from the 10,000 year old Frost Wurm's wings, Suo Jia still would've agreed. Such treasures could only be described as unrivaled, and there was no way Suo Jia could ever turn down such an offer.

However, as Suo Jia was currently beyond joyous, the mysterious woman standing next to him was anxious to death. What exactly was going on? She had clearly just given Suo Jia the treasure he desired the most, yet his expression was still downcast. His

eyebrows were even furrowed? Could it be that he still wasn't satisfied?

“Pa!” Harshly biting down, the mysterious woman suddenly pulled out a small embroidered case and loudly slammed it onto the table. She said in a low voice, “Forget it, forget it.....since you're still not satisfied, I'll add something else!”

“This!” Suo Jia couldn't help but lift his head in amazement as he heard the noise and the mysterious woman's words accompanying it. He looked at her, then looked back at the small embroidered case. Just as he was about to say something, Wen Ya chimed in, “Suo Jia, no matter what, you have to give your sister Wen Ya some face. Trust me, as long as you properly help this older sister here, you'll definitely benefit from it. The things you'll gain won't be much different from these things in front of you right now.”

The mysterious woman couldn't help but shoot Wen Ya a grateful look. She knew that she was currently in dire straits; because she was no longer favored by the Emperor, she couldn't do much. If she had asked during the times when the Emperor had pampered her, then even giving Suo Jia 4-5 Epic-ranked equipment sets wouldn't be a big deal. Although they couldn't possibly be complete sets, any piece of an Epic-ranked equipment set was considered a priceless treasure.

Hearing Wen Ya's words, Suo Jia was startled for a moment. He originally wanted to say that just these shoes were more than enough. There was no need for this embroidered case, however, Wen Ya already made herself very clear that he had to accept this embroidered case. They wanted the mysterious lady to



misinterpret the situation, and make her think that he did not want to accept the current situation, and that Suo Jia agreed only for the purpose of giving Wen Ya face.

With a smile, Suo Jia shook his head. For the sake of pulling the perfect act, Suo Jia pocketed the embroidered box without even glancing at it and nodded, "Alright.....because Sister Wen Ya has been taking such good care of me this whole time, I can't not give her face. I'll help you!"

"Yahoo!" The mysterious woman suddenly cried out jubilantly at Suo Jia's words, and jumped up excitedly. With her hands tightly clenched into fists, she asked emotionally, "You agree?! You really agree? When do we start? I can't wait any longer...."

Narrowing his eyes at the woman, Suo Jia turned around to look at Wen Ya and coldly said, "However, there's some things that I need to say first. This is the last time I'll help you. You can't do this anymore in the future, otherwise it'll be very difficult for me!"

Wen Ya nodded gratefully. She knew that Suo Jia had already understood her intention, to the point where he had pulled off the act perfectly. She really owed Suo Jia a huge favor this time.

To Suo Jia, this weight loss matter was nothing. It required no effort at all; with Suo Jia's current control over water and his skill, the weight loss was absolutely no problem. However....the process of the weight loss was too tedious. It required refinement of the fat, piece by piece; only then could a beautiful appearance be sculpted. But this required way too much time.

While quietly mumbling, Suo Jia knew that although he could start the weight loss treatments right now, he had just received such an amazing treasure, and there was another treasure that he didn't even look at yet. He wasn't able to calm his mind, and under such a situation, it was impossible to do such meticulous work. If he even made a slight mistake, then he would be unworthy of the other party's expensive gifts.

Suo Jia firmly said, "Alright, you should go back first and prepare yourself. Tomorrow night at 8, you can come here, and I'll help perform the procedure for you."

The mysterious woman didn't say anything more, and left the White Villa together with Wen Ya. At the same time, Suo Jia raced back to the secret room like a rabbit. He really wanted to know what was inside the embroidered case!

"Fuck!" When Suo Jia finally opened up the little embroidered case and saw the contents, he couldn't help but shout out loudly.

What kind of toy was this? Although it was magical equipment, it was an earring designed for women; how was he supposed to use this? Could it be that they wanted him, a boy, to wear this fiery red phoenix ear accessory? Even if others weren't going to laugh at him, he still wouldn't wear it. He was of the water system, and this earring was for the fire system!

Suo Jia suddenly noticed that the box's lower layer was covered with a piece of white paper. After gently pulling it out and looking

at it, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile bitterly. ... This thing really had quite an impact!

The Fire Phoenix Earrings were a part of the Fire Phoenix equipment set, something that was used exclusively by women. It was the highest grade Epic-ranked equipment set, and stood side by side with the Fire Dragon equipment set. Its value was high, something that couldn't be measured. In terms of value alone, it was definitely ranked higher than the Atlantis equipment set. After all... the demand for fire elemental magic equipment in this world was really too high!

The Fire Phoenix Earrings came together as a pair. When he saw the two exquisite crystals embedded in the earrings that swayed with the ear, Suo Jia realized that the woman from before had really given away a lot of her assets. Giving away two Epic-ranked magic equipment parts at once was really too unbelievable!

Muttering for a bit, Suo Jia knew that it was definitely possible to exchange these earrings for another piece of the Atlantis' equipment. However... these Fire Phoenix earrings' value was definitely above any piece from the Atlantis set. To be able to obtain it really was his good fortune; who would be willing to trade it away...

These Fire Phoenix Earrings improved one's affinity with the fire system, increased the fire system's power, as well as increasing one's control over the fire system. In addition, the Fire Phoenix was purely of the fire attribute, it was the fastest bird in the air. These Fire Phoenix Earrings could also increase one's speed! To be able to increase one's strength, as well as increase one's cultivation

speed, it is worthy of being called a top-level Epic-ranked item!

## Chapter 146: Such Power (Part 2)

---

Suo Jia continued to stare at the pair of Fire Phoenix Earrings he was holding in a trance. He knew that although he could probably exchange another part of the Atlantis set for them, it would undoubtedly be a dumb idea. The members of the Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes were the most appropriate wearers of these earrings. They were a team, so it wouldn't do if only Suo Jia grew stronger. He also needed powerful left and right arms for support. Only with their aid could Suo Jia fully display his strength.

In addition, the Fire Phoenix equipment set was actually a set of jewelry, and was extremely compatible with the Angelic Six Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes. When together, the two would form an unrivalled combination, an undefeatable battle armor!

After contemplating this for a very long time, Suo Jia reluctantly placed the Fire Phoenix Earrings back into their box, and threw it into his interspatial ring. He then lifted the pair of combat boots. As he observed the deep blue glow revolving continuously around the combat boots, Suo Jia's eyes lit up.

Caressing the smooth, glossy exterior, Suo Jia finally lost patience and quickly put them on. Soon after... the combat boots circulating with blue light were finally on Suo Jia's feet.

"Hm?" Puzzled, Suo Jia walked around a bit, but he couldn't feel the so-called Unrivaled Wave Walking. Puzzled, he sent his spirit into the combat boots to inspect them, yet he failed to sense any hint of the technique.

Confused, Suo Jia first activated the World of Ice and Snow. However, the end result hadn't changed. As he watched the secret room quickly be buried in a flurry of white from the ice and snow, Suo Jia gaped. Could it be that he had been scammed?! Were these combat boots really not part of the Atlantis set?

Suo Jia hurriedly pulled out the detailed book about the Atlantis set, and swiftly flipped to the page on the combat boots. After concentrating his attention on reading the page, Suo Jia couldn't help but bitterly laugh.

These boots could indeed link with the glove, and instantly activate the World of Ice and Snow. In addition, it could increase its might by 100. However, it wasn't activated by the glove!

After carefully looking over the description once more, Suo Jia put away the book. He stood in the middle of the secret room, and after a moment.....Suo Jia suddenly stamped his foot. In an instant, a powerful change began!

Rows after rows, columns after columns, layers after layers, circles after circles of diamond shaped icicles that seemed like they could overturn mountains and oceans shot outwards like arrows with Suo Jia as center. They flashed like lightning, and pierced through the air. In an instant, the diamond-like icicles dispersed through the air.

“Dududu.....” A compressed, muffle sound rang out, and the secret room's walls instantly became covered with those hard diamond icicles. Upon contact with the walls, they sent the snow and rock flying in pieces with a might that was beyond

astounding!

It was only then that Suo Jia finally realized that the so-called set increase of the World of Ice and Snow by 100 didn't actually mean increasing by exactly 100. What it did was boost the power to an exact level, and then use this new level as the new base power level. The higher one's magic power, the sharper and colder the diamond icicles would become. Their strength and hardness would also increase. The greater one's spirit power, the fiercer the attack would become!

In reality, after the set boost in might by 100, the World of Ice and Snow would have already raised to the level of being a Diamond Charge, which was the Great Frost Wyrms' most famous magic. When this magic was activated by a mature Diamond Dragon, the icicles would become like bullets, and the diamond icicles would pierce the enemy's body, killing them on the spot!

Of course, a human could never be compared to a giant and ancient beast like the Great Frost Wyrms; there was an insurmountable difference between them. The distance between the current Suo Jia and the Great Frost Wyrms was like 108,000 li. After all.....a mature Great Frost Wyrms would have cultivated for 1000 years, and was the strongest dragon in existence!

Suo Jia ecstatically looked down at his combat boots. From now on, Suo Jia possessed his first distinctive magic, the improved version of the World of Ice and Snow — Diamond Charge! It was an extremely practical, powerful, amazing magic that originated from the hundred thousand year old Frost Wyrms, the Diamond Dragon King!

The Diamond Charge was activated with the feet. Only the leather from these combat boots could be used as a basis to borrow the Diamond Dragon King's power and activate Diamond Charge. To use it, only a single firm stamp was needed, as long as one had stored magic power.

The might of Diamond Charge depended on the amount of magic power consumed. The lowest power was at least 100. In other words, Suo Jia could easily activate the powerful Diamond Charge without using a thread of his magic power. If he wanted to activate more of its power, then he could use his magic and spirit power to boost it. If Suo Jia's spirit and magic power ever reached the level of the Diamond Dragon King's, then he'd be able to activate a Diamond Charge that was no different from the Diamond Dragon King's.

In excitement, Suo Jia stamped on the ground once again. When he saw the circles and layers wildly spin around him and shoot out the diamond icicles and fiercely crash into the surrounding walls, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile in satisfaction. This time, he hadn't used any of his own magic power, yet by itself, the Diamond Charge was already twice as powerful as Suo Jia's fully activated World of Ice and Snow!

After sighing in admiration, Suo Jia re-composed himself. Next... he'd have to test the Unrivaled Wave Walking. This technique was something that one couldn't actually feel as soon as they put the combat boots on. In reality, the Unrivaled Wave Walking required the assistance of water manipulation.



It was called ‘Wave Stepping’ because every time a step was taken, it would be pushed by a wave. As long as there was water in the area, one could step on water without any solid base, and walk unrestrained on empty space. With the push and fusion of the power of waves, one’s speed would also increase. Moreover, one could wander through any space.

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia slowly stepped forwards. Momentarily...a light wave of water rippled forth, and ocean spray bubbled out from beneath Suo Jia’s feet. Enraptured, Suo Jia took a step to test it and then.... a powerful impulse slowly formed underneath him. Suo Jia subconsciously took another step, and the water flashed as more ocean spray surged from underneath him.

In the beginning, Suo Jia wasn’t used to the waves’ push, and thus he kept swaying, his body bending left and right. However, after a few steps, Suo Jia came to a complete realization; the faster he walked, the faster he regained balance. In the end, he was able to walk leisurely across the empty space with complete ease.

Like the Diamond Charge, the Unrivaled Wave Walking could also be activated on its own. If one added their spirit and magic power to it, their speed would increase. The greater their power, the faster their movements would become. After their spirit and magic power reached a certain extent, their figure would become like electricity, and their speed could even challenge a wind warrior’s!

“Hahahaha....” Finally, Suo Jia complacently stopped in midair. A blossom of ocean spray incessantly frothed underneath him,

supporting his body so that he could stand in mid air inside the secret room. He really looked like the God of Waves.

With a wild laugh, the spray from underneath Suo Jia suddenly burst outwards. As it shot out powerfully, Suo Jia's figure brazenly leaped over to the secret room's wall like electricity, and his feet strongly banged against the wall. Soon after.... ice and broken rock flew through the air as a vivid result of the collision with the combat boots. This was just a wall; if it were a human body, what would happen?

After creating an indent about the size of one's head into the wall, Suo Jia's body pushed off the wall and flipped backwards through the air. As his feet swiftly landed back onto the waves, a few more sprays of water appeared. The water once again stopped Suo Jia's body in mid-air, and he stood there as steady as Mt. Tai.

His eyes glowed with excitement. Suo Jia waved his hand, and instantly...a dark blue ice stream spiraled upwards, wrapping itself around Suo Jia. The next moment.... under Suo Jia's control, the ice stream launched a mass attack on all of the magic targets in the secret room!

With a loud boom, Suo Jia controlled the arm-thick, 9 meter long ice dragon to ravage the secret room, shattering the walls into thousands of pieces. By the time Lan Ruo came to tell Suo Jia to eat, the entire secret room had turned into a complete mess.

After eating dinner and finishing his meditation, Suo Jia couldn't help but ponder; although it was still impossible to confirm the combat boots' ability to break magic, it seemed as if there was no

need to test it. There was no way it would be false. After obtaining these combat boots, Suo Jia's strength, especially his ability to defend himself, had exponentially gone up!

Everyone knew that the most frustrating thing to a warrior was a high ranked wind mage. Those mages proficient at the Soaring Technique would fly up into the air as soon as the battle started, making it impossible for one to reach them. However, the opposing party could still reach their target. Though now, although Suo Jia didn't know the Soaring Technique, he had the more powerful Unrivaled Wave Walking. Now, Suo Jia could subdue warriors! Walking through empty air unrestrained could cause one-sided havoc and devastation, and he had no need to worry about counterattacks.

Even if the warriors could execute long ranged attacks, it wasn't their forte. If they wanted to utilize their strong points to attack their target's weak points, then it'd be up to them. The most important thing to a mage was maintaining distance. If the distance was kept, and the mage still lost, then there was nothing more to say; the difference in level was too great, and it was obvious the mage would lose!

# Chapter 147: The Meaning Of Beauty (Part 1)

---

The night passed without incident. The next morning, Suo Jia recovered his spirit, and quietly sat within the office to wait for the mysterious customer. Since he had already accepted such a valuable present from the other party, he naturally had to try his best to help her. This kind of basic work ethic was something that Suo Jia still had.

Not long after, Lan Ruo walked in to report the mysterious customer's arrival. Under Suo Jia's consent, Lan Ruo respectfully invited the mysterious customer inside. She then quietly left without a word; even if she had wanted to say something, she couldn't.

Suo Jia invited the mysterious person to sit on the luxurious sofa. He then stood up and walked to her, gesturing at her to lie down. At the same time, he said, "Before I begin the procedure, you have to take off your mask. If I can't scrutinize you closely, I'm afraid I might make a mistake. If that happens, you will not only lose your beauty, but you might also end up looking like a monster."

After some hesitation.... the person wordlessly reached out to take off her mask. Soon after.... a beautiful, charming middle-aged face filled with dignity appeared in Suo Jia's line of sight.

Was she ugly? No.... even though she was already over 40 years old, almost 50! She was not at all ugly. In fact, she had an extremely lovely appearance. One could even say that her looks were enchanting. However, the blades of age were merciless; they had left too many marks on her charming face!

Lightly extending his hands and caressing the woman's wrinkled face, Suo Jia knit his brows and muttered to himself. After a long time...Suo Jia said in a low voice, "Since I've accepted your things, I have to offer the most perfect service. Thus, before I start working, there are some questions I must ask you!"

Levelly looking at Suo Jia, the woman nodded and said, "If you have any questions, go ahead and ask them. If I can answer, I definitely won't hold back."

Suo Jia nodded and continued, "First of all, I need to confirm your status. Different statuses require different types of appearances. There is no single definition of a woman. My goal is — to find the best and most appropriate appearance for you!"

The mysterious person frowned at Suo Jia's words. After a long contemplation, she took out a scroll and handed it to Suo Jia, "It's best if you don't know my status. Just adjust my appearance based on this picture. As long as you can recover my previous state, then I won't forget you, and will properly repay you in the future!"

Suo Jia opened the scroll and looked at it for a bit. Although....Suo Jia couldn't help but sigh at the incomparably alluring looks of the person in the drawing....he still wordlessly threw the scroll back to her and shook his head. "I will stand by my previous words; I want to know your status. Or could it be that your status is taboo? You can't say?"

"That...." The mysterious person hesitated at Suo Jia's question.

Seeing this, Suo Jia said in annoyance, “Here, you’re my customer. No matter what secret it is, this place will be it’s final destination. There’s no need to worry about me spreading the word. I still have that bit of work ethics.”

Suo Jia paused for a bit before continuing, “You need to know that people with different statuses need different appearances. Let me ask you, if you had a son and I made your appearance like that of the one in the drawing, how are they supposed to deal with it? How could they call someone that looks younger and more beautiful than them their mother? Don’t you think they’d be perplexed by it?”

“That...” The mysterious woman’s expression turned stiff. She had indeed not considered this question. At the same time, Suo Jia continued, “If something strange happens, it’s the result of the devil; judging by the way Wen Ya treated you, I’m certain that your status is very high. In that case, if anything abnormal happened, do you think the people around you would accept it? You didn’t plan getting set back because of encountering any disaster that results from this, right?”

The mysterious person’s face suddenly turned green, and then white. Her IQ was definitely above Suo Jia’s, and normally would’ve thought of such things. However, this whole time, she had become intoxicated by the thoughts of returning to her former beauty, and her intelligence had sharply declined. Now that Suo Jia had pointed it out, she immediately thought of many other things.

After some contemplation, the mysterious person understood the

reason behind Suo Jia's apprehension. She lifted her head respectfully, and looked at Suo Jia with a moved expression, "Lord Suo Jia, please forgive the rudeness I had just displayed to you. Originally, I had thought that you were just a child, and even if you had some skill, you couldn't be on the same level as an adult. However, I must say now that you are an extremely qualified master at changing appearances. You have a noble work ethic. If it weren't for your insistence, something big might've happened today!"

Suo Jia smiled and calmly replied, "This is nothing. Since I've accepted your gifts, I have to perform work that is of equal value. I will never allow other people to owe me anything, but I permit myself owing others even less. That's why...no matter what price you pay, I have to provide an equal return!"

With a sigh of admiration, the mysterious person looked at Suo Jia with eyes that suddenly flashed. She said in a heavy voice, "Alright.... I shall tell you. In reality, I'm the Holy Light Empire's Empress!"

Suo Jia only indifferently nodded his head at these words. His expression remained unfazed, neither showing shock nor fear, and was completely at ease. As she watched Suo Jia's expression remain calm, the Empress couldn't bring herself to believe that this was only a 10-year old child! The only ones that could do this were people that were either complete geniuses that had been outstanding their whole lives, or were completely ignorant. But did Suo Jia look like an ignorant person?

As the Empress contemplated this, Suo Jia continued, "Next, I

want to know your goal for fixing your appearance. Is it just because you enjoy beauty, or is there another reason?”

The mysterious person froze for a second, then suddenly realized that Suo Jia's calmness was because of his cunning; it was not because he was ignorant, but because he deeply considered everything in order to help her. There was absolutely no time for him to become nervous or scared. To Suo Jia, she was nothing but his customer.

The Empress didn't bother hiding anything any longer. While Suo Jia was wholeheartedly thinking of how to help her, there was absolutely no reason in hiding anything for the sake of face. Besides, this matter was too important to her; not the slightest bit of a mistake was permitted.

Wordlessly complying, the Empress told Suo Jia everything about the bitter experience she had encountered, as well as her desires. As he heard her words, Suo Jia's frown deepened. By the time the Empress had finished speaking, Suo Jia was already deeply submerged into his own thoughts, and he contemplated for a good half an hour.

After a while, Suo Jia abruptly lifted his head and said to the Empress, “Your Highness, I would like to confirm something: the only reason you want to recover your former beauty is simply to regain the Emperor's heart?”

With a firm nod, the Empress said without hesitation, “That's right. To me, nothing in this world is more important than the Emperor's heart.”



Suo Jia said resolutely, “In that case, this drawing is of no use. It is not suitable for you.”

“Ah! Why not?” The Empress cried out in shock and confusion as she caught the scroll.

Suo Jia said calmly with a smile, “Your Highness, before I answer your question, I want to ask you once more. If your Highness was still an unmarried woman, would you fall in love with me?”

## Chapter 148: The Meaning Of Beauty (Part 2)

---

“That....” The Empress knit her brows at Suo Jia’s words. If anyone else had asked this question, she definitely would’ve thought that the opposing party was dishonoring her. However, she knew that Suo Jia would only dare to ask such an audacious question because of a legitimate reason, and so she had to reply honestly.

The Empress firmly shook her head and said, “No....I can’t possibly fall in love with you. In my eyes, you’re just a child; how could I develop feelings for a child? You’re still too young; you don’t even count as a man yet. How could I love you?”

“Pa!” Abruptly snapping his fingers, Suo Jia’s eyes lit up as he said, “That’s right! That’s exactly it. Think about it... right now, there are a ton of beautiful women in their twenties surrounding the Emperor, but he’s already over 50 years old. It’s possible that he wants people that are refreshing, but the only one that is able to actually move his heart is someone of similar age as him, after all!”

Suo Jia continued, “I’ve read in a book before that love is a link between hearts. There’s a generation gap between the Emperor and those children, so there’s absolutely no way they can form a bond. It’s just like how your Highness wouldn’t attempt to form a bond with me. In your eyes, people like us are just naive children that don’t understand true love.”

After hearing Suo Jia’s words, the Empress began to tremble uncontrollably. She couldn’t deny the fact that what Suo Jia said

made sense. It would be difficult for a mature, wise person to love a mere girl. It's possible that one could just be greedy for something fresh, but actual feelings could only develop between those of similar ages.

Suo Jia continued, "You can change your identity. If you were the Emperor and he was the Empress, would you be willing to abandon the woman that you once had a mutual love with, the woman that can understand you, for the sake of clinging onto some young, inexperienced vixens?"

"Ah...." The Empress was becoming more and more alarmed at Suo Jia's words. All of this reasoning was obvious, and yet she had never considered them before.

Seeing the Empress' expression, Suo Jia grew more confident and continued, "Actually, after so many years, the countless beautiful children never took your empress position, right? This already clearly explains it.....the Emperor's heart still only belongs to you!"

"Pata...pata..." Large tears began to drip out of the Empress' eyes. That's right....his Majesty still maintained a friendship with her. Although it wasn't the same as how she felt, he had still treated her very well this whole time.

Suo Jia shook his head and said, "It seems that I've hit the nail. Right now....you are still in His Majesty's heart. Moreover, with your current status, you need a majestic presence, dignity, the presence as the ultimate female, rather than enchanting and charming looks. That's why I said that your drawing is useless. The appearance there admittedly may be able to make one an

Empress, but it's not enough to keep one there. Being promoted to an Empress depends on beauty, while maintaining that position requires a majestic bearing!"

The Empress subconsciously touched her own face, and murmured, "But if I can't recover my former beauty, the Emperor will ignore me. If I'm not always by his side, our relationship will gradually fade."

With a confident smile, Suo Jia shook his head and replied, "That's wrong. Who said that I can't recover your former beauty? I'm just saying....it can't be the same as the one in that drawing. In reality, there are many types of beauty; a youthful appearance is not the only definition!"

Suo Jia studied the Empress' face and figure closely, and he murmured, "Actually, your Highness seems like a semi-finished product. Although the years have aged you, your original state is still there. Moreover, I feel that what your Highness needs is maturity, steadfastness, aristocratic, majestic presence, and an imposing manner. These are what are suitable for an Empress. If I turn you into a young girl, would you be able to keep the other concubines under control?"

The Empress bitterly smiled and shook her head, "Then tell me, what should I do? How can I recover his Majesty's heart, yet become the ultimate female and control the concubines?"

"Hm...." Rubbing his chin in thought, Suo Jia didn't answer the Empress' question. Instead, he asked another one, "Your Highness, you've seen both Emma and Wen Ya. If you were to use flowers to

describe them, what would you say they were?”

The Empress confidently replied, “Emma is innocent and cute, like a pure lily. On the other hand, Wen Ya is passionate and bold, like a blossoming rose. That’s the feeling I get from them.”

“Pa!” Snapping his fingers, Suo Jia smiled and said, “That’s right, your Highness’ perception is very accurate. However, have you never thought about this before? Although lilies are pure, they are not bountiful, and even appear to be naïve. “Pure” and “Clueless” go together !

A lily’s beauty was admittedly refreshing and pleasing, but it wasn’t rich enough. The naïve feeling it had made it hard for others to believe in them. While it was true that others could be momentarily infatuated with the lily, the feelings are still superficial in the end. There was no way that someone like that would be able to stably take over the role of an Empress!

“Mm...” The Empress sighed in praise at Suo Jia’s words. What he said couldn’t be more right. Although a lily was beautiful, it wasn’t appropriate for an Empress. A lily wasn’t dignified enough, majestic enough, or imposing enough!

Suo Jia continued, “As for a rose, it is indeed passionate and bold, with a mesmerizing beauty. Although it definitely has enough passion, does it have enough of an awe-inspiring presence? Would a woman as passionate as a fire be able to intimidate the concubines? Would it be enough to make the ministers believe in you? Would such a woman be suitable to be Empress?”

Furiously shaking her head, the Empress said hurriedly, “No, no, no....that definitely won’t do. That’s a huge mistake. The royal family needs stability and power. Every word and action must be cautious, without a single mistake. If one is too passionate and bold, it would give others the feeling of instability, and the people wouldn’t put their faith in them.”

With a smile, Suo Jia nodded and pointed to the picture in the Empress’ hands, “It can be said that your Highness’ youthful appearance is enchanting and charming, an appearance that any man would die for. However, your Highness’ current appearance gives me the feeling that your lovely appearance was only enough to bring you to your current position, while wanting to remain there requires you to cast off that ambience!”

The Empress smiled bitterly and shook her head, sighing, “Lord Suo Jia, you’re really too amazing. You don’t know how many times our Mother Empress has punished me for my excessively frivolous words and actions. That painful period was one that I really cannot bear to look back on. When I was simply looking at someone, people would say I was throwing flirtatious glances at them. Only after I had aged did people gradually stop criticizing me.”

“Haha....” Suo Jia couldn’t help but laugh at the Empress’ words. With her previous looks, anyone would think she was casting flirtatious looks at people every time she looked at someone. Because her eyes were bright and lively, they would always seem flirtatious to others, even if they weren’t.

“I admire you, I really admire you. Lord Suo Jia, in your opinion, what look would best suit me?” The Empress said sincerely as she looked at Suo Jia respectfully.

Suo Jia’s eyes narrowed slightly at her question, and he said in a low voice, “The most appropriate appearance for you would be the ruler of flowers, the rich peony. It’s refined and dignified, naturally beautiful, and has an imposing, noble air. Anyone that sees it would respect it. This is the type of appearance and temperament an Empress should have!”

Suo Jia extended his hand and lightly massaged the skin of the Empress’ face. “In addition, if you want to regain the Emperor’s heart, you can’t become too youthful. You should maintain whatever age you’re supposed to be. I can help you get rid of wrinkles, and reshape your figure, but your charm and ambience, would stay the same; your current presence is something that one wouldn’t be able to learn, even if they tried!”

Suo Jia smiled, “Maintaining your temperament and body is necessary. The graceful and luxurious manner you hold yourself, and the elegant charm you have, is something that can only be cultivated after being an Empress for so long. It can’t be learned in any other way. If you lost such a precious trait, it would be a shame.”

“However....is this really enough to attract the Emperor’s attention again?” The Empress asked with concern.

Suo Jia smiled confidently and said, “Your Highness, although you may not believe what I’m saying now, I will still say the same

thing: Different age groups have different types of beauty. With your current state, I can guarantee that you will still be Holy Light's number one beauty, even if you're 40 or 50 years old!"

"What! How is that possible? How could an old, 50 year old woman be Holy Light's number one beauty!" The Empress cried out in shock.

Suo Jia indifferently replied, "Does your Highness doubt Suo Jia? In that case, would you dare to make a bet with me?"

"Bet? What would you be betting?" The Empress asked in interest.

"Pa pa...." Clapping his hands on his chest, Suo Jia proudly said, "I'll use my life to bet. If I can't make your Highness return to the position of Holy Light's number one beauty, I'll commit suicide to apologize for my fault!"

"Ok!" The Empress' eyes suddenly shone with a keen radiance as she firmly replied, "The bet is on! If you can really do so, then I'll give you the Fire Phoenix Necklace!"

"Heavens!" Suo Jia couldn't help but gape in astonishment at the Empress' words. She was indeed the Empress, to think that she had two parts of the Fire Phoenix equipment set! The Fire Phoenix equipment set only contained 6 pieces: earrings, a necklace, a head ornament, a ring, a bracelet, and an anklet. Yet the Empress had two out of these six! That was way too crazy; the Fire Phoenix equipment set was, after all, a peak-grade equipment set!



# Chapter 149: Change Within The Imperial Palace (Part 1)

---

Although he was still a child, humanity's love for gambling was innate in everyone. It didn't matter if it was the Empress or Suo Jia, both of them were excited over this bet.

With regards to the empress, she hoped even more that she would lose. Although she would lose her most precious Fire Phoenix Necklace, but at the same time, she would obtain the entire world.

For Suo Jia, losing was not a possibility and winning was an inevitability. The results of this grand gamble would grant him the Fire Phoenix Necklace. This was a gamble, if you lose, you must pay out. Suo Jia as a result would not feel he owed anything to anyone else. After all... if he were to lose, Suo Jia would have to pay with his life.

Under such a luxurious gamble, Suo Jia concentrated all of his attention to meticulously carry out the Empress Queen's surgery. In his entire life, he had never been so focused on a single matter.

Of course, it wasn't that Suo Jia didn't do things carefully before, but rather that it's the first time he did it this carefully. The surgery this time was related to the fire phoenix necklace, and was related to Suo Jia's life! He definitely could not afford to make even the smallest mistake.

Finally, three days later... Suo Jia finished his work and looked at

the empress who had her eyes closed while lying down on a recliner. With how picky Suo Jia was , her beauty was without a single flaw, and was simply too perfect.

While remaining calm and collected, he retrieved a mirror and placed it in front of the empress' face and said while smiling, "Alright, your majesty, everything is complete. Now... you can take a look at yourself, I think... the gambled results have been revealed."

Lotus-like outer appearance, beautiful autumn water eyes. Snow-like skin, clear spring-like voice. A willow tree beauty, with a beautiful and clean jade-like heart. Her movements were like the spring breeze, her smile resembled peach blossoms, and her song was like a clear stream. Her eyebrows concealed all of her worries, and her vermillion lips were like autumn. She was a treasure from the heaven and the earth, and naturally alert and elegant. From just a glance, it was truly like the king of flowers, the peony!

TL: Omg this paragraph... I probably got half of it wrong, but you guys understand what it means right?

Looking at her image reflected within the mirror, the Empress could not help but turn silly. This was her? This was really her? This was the so-called — Lotus-like outer appearance, willow tree waist, and twin eyes with lovable autumn ripples. Clouds of light wrapped around her beautiful body, and it might have been a goddess descending.

Bitterly smiling while shaking her head, Holy Light's number one beauty? Or perhaps... she was embarrassed to claim this, however,

the empress knew that if right now, she claimed to be Holy Light's number two, no one would dare claim that they were number 1!

Seeing such a beautiful face within the mirror, mature and yet beautiful, honored yet refined, under such a gorgeous appearance, she did not even have the words to give it justice. Realizing this, the Empress finally understood the meaning behind Suo Jia's sentence — beauty was without a standard, and every kind of beauty could become the most moving.

In delight, the Empress took out an embroidered jade case and sincerely said, "This bet, I lost. I lost, and lost to the point where I am convinced in heart and in word. No matter what, I will remember this friendship, and in the future, I will definitely repay you!"

Hearing Her Majesty the Empress' words, Suo Jia smiled while shaking his head. Right when he was replying with a few modest words, the studio's large doors suddenly opened. At the same time, Wen Ya's panicked figure rushed in.

"Something terrible has happened Queen Empress, the imperial concubines suddenly changed! The Empress position is being challenged by an imperial concubine!" Wen Ya's panicked voice rang out like thunder.

"Hu..." With a gentle voice, the Empress stood up, and said with a baleful gaze, "That lass is actually so brazen and dared to try seize my position in my absence!"

Hearing the empress' words, Wen Ya finally snapped out of her daze from looking at the Empress' peerless appearance and quickly said, "Correct, the Empress cannot tarry. Father has already arranged for a fiery dragon horseman to promptly send the Empress back to the palace! We must help the Empress seize back her power even if we end up offending the emperor as a result."

Hearing Wen Ya's words, the Empress's eyes could not help but reveal a thankful radiance. She sincerely replied, "Then I must thank the Grand Duke Wen Sha. Since things ended up like so, we don't have any time to waste. Let's leave now!"

While speaking, the Empress turned around and said with courtesy, "Lord Suo Jia, your favor will be remember. I have urgent matters to attend to, so I will take my leave first!" After speaking, the Empress together with Wen Ya quickly walked outside.

"Wait!" Just before they took a few steps, Suo Jia's loud shout rang out from behind them.

Stopping their steps in confusion, the Empress turned her body and impatiently spoke while looking at Suo Jia, "Does Lord Suo Jia need something else? Please hurry, things are too urgent and I really cannot afford to waste any time."

Furrowing his eyebrows, Suo Jia said deeply, "Your Majesty the Empress does not need to be in such a panic as it will make you seem like two clowns. With me, Suo Jia's help, your Majesty does not need to worry!"

“What? You...” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the two ladies shouted in shock at the same time.

Unhurriedly returning to his seat, Suo Jia calmly said, “Why are you guys so panicked? Right now, you are still the Empress, and so even if he wanted to abandon you, it wouldn’t be such a simple matter. Come back and sit down. Calm down first, and then we can think of a way to resolve the issue. Once you guys act in a reckless manner, it will only make things worse.”

If it was before, the Empress would definitely not pay attention to a ten year old child like him. However now, after being in contact for three days, the Empress knew that this child was not simple at all. Although he was young and his experiences weren’t plentiful, his wisdom was something that made those who underestimate him regret doing so.

After going through such a major gamble, in particular, the current Empress’s opinion was that Suo Jia might as well be half god. Even if Suo Jia said the sky was square, and that the earth was round, she would also believe it. In addition, what Suo Jia said really did make sense, and now was definitely not the time to be muddle-headed. Even if they were in a rush, they could spare a few minutes. Calming down and carefully analyzing the situation to find the right countermeasures for the current situation was the most current course of action.

Seeing the Empress gradually calming down, and walk away without being in such a hurry, Wen Ya could not help but anxiously say, “Queen Empress, the situation is urgent, you can’t

sit down like this any longer, let's still..."

Not waiting for Wen Ya to finish her sentence, the Empress suddenly lifted her hands to halt Wen Ya's words. At the same time, she looked deeply at Suo Jia before saying, "Lord Suo Jia, I have already calmed down. Help me think of a way, I need your help."

# Chapter 150: Change Within The Imperial Palace (Part 2)

---

“What? You...that....” Seeing the Empress’ expression and hearing her words, Wen Ya was completely shocked. Had the Empress lost her mind? Or had she been brainwashed by Suo Jia? How would asking some brat about such an important matter be any help at all?

Under the two women’s attentive gazes, Suo Jia lifted his tea cup and gently sipped at the fragrant tea. He slowly said, “Does this matter even count as major? There’s no need for gold. You’re the Empress, you ought to be able to hold back your temper. If you rush over in such a panic, and even bring a large group of Fiery Dragon Knights with you, the end results will be obvious; you will get yourself deposed unless you restrain yourself”

The Empress and Wen Ya couldn’t help but be stunned by these words. That’s right....bringing so many people over was the wrong approach. If the forces collided, how would any good come from it?

Suo Jia smiled as he saw that the two women had realized the situation, and said, “No matter what, you must remember your own status at all times. You are the Empress, the leader of the chamber of the concubines. Even if they wanted to usurp your Empress position, the Emperor and the Grand Empress must be present as well. Only after a strict judgment to verify that you are indeed not suitable to be Empress would your position be overthrown. Even the Emperor himself wouldn’t be able to depose of you with a single word.”

Suo Jia chuckled darkly. “According to my point of view, Your Highness wouldn’t do anything that would overstep your boundaries or make any huge mistakes. In that case, wanting to seize your position from you is extremely difficult. As long as you can respond appropriately, I promise that you can destroy the opposite part at the scene. Moreover, you can take this opportunity to scare the concubines a bit. Once this matter is resolved, I doubt anyone would dare to attempt usurping you!”

“Gulp....” Swallowing with difficulty, the Empress said excitedly, “Lord Suo Jia, hurry up and tell me: Exactly what should I do? I am completely listening to you.”

With a self-confident smile, Suo Jia calmly said, “Your question is strange. In reality, I’ve already said the method. The palace is your home, and you are the female owner. A servant in your home has committed an offense. Do you still not know how to approach this issue? You just need to do as you normally would. Also....”

The next morning, the Empress rode the Wind Dragon Knights’ fastest mount, and rushed back to the capital, and reached their destination by noon. The Empress’ honor guards met up with them, and they began to all rush back to the palace, carrying a powerful ambience along with them.

Originally, according to Duke Wen Sha’s wishes, the most powerful Fiery Dragon Knights were to be hired and assist the Empress. But after Suo Jia’s powerful eloquence, the Empress had abandoned this plan and decided to rush back to the Imperial City alone.



In reality, although it seemed like the Empress had returned alone, there was actually one other person that had accompanied her. At the moment.... he had mingled with the Empress' honor guards. This person was none other than Suo Jia!

Originally, Suo Jia had not wanted to come. But for the sake of dealing with any possible dangers, and after the Empress had promised him a series of benefits, Suo Jia was finally persuaded to follow the group as well.

The Empress calmly sat on her sedan chair, occasionally peeking through the curtains to look at Suo Jia. That child was really too miraculous. He was still so young, yet had such intelligence. How amazing would he be when he grew older?

While she pondered this, the Empress' honor guards had already arrived in front of the palace. Just as she was prepared to enter through the front door, she was unexpectedly stopped by four soldiers suddenly blocking their way with their long spears. They stood in front of the path and shouted, "Freeze! Unidentified strangers, you are prohibited from advancing through!"

The honor guards roared in anger, "Are you f\*cking blind? Do you no longer recognize even the Empress' honor guards? No matter what, shouldn't you be able to recognize this Phoenix Emperor's carriage? Are you able to bear the responsibility for impinging on a Phoenix vehicle?"

"The Empress?" The soldiers stared blankly for a bit, before

laughing out loud, “Stop joking. The Empress is currently in the chamber of the concubines. Who are you trying to deceive?”

Hearing the conversation, the Empress currently sitting within the sedan chair began to feel alarm. She had absolutely no clue how to confront this situation. As she was panicking, the low sound of Suo Jia’s voice rang out from outside the sedan chair, “Your Highness, why bother being courteous to such impudent watchdogs? Now is not the time to take it lying down!”

The Empress started, but then bitterly smiled. That’s right.... just based on the fact that they dared to provoke her in such a way meant that they were definitely associated with Imperial Concubine Hua. If she couldn’t even lift her head under this pressure, how would she survive upon entering?

As mere servants, daring to so brazenly oppose the Phoenix cart was simply seeking death. If the opposite party had simply not recognized her, it would’ve been fine, but her honor guards were those that only the Empress could use. There was no way they could be faked.

The Empress’ voice coldly rang out, “You useless lot, why are you just standing there? Drag those audacious guys that dared to provoke the Phoenix family to one side, and cut them apart! Then hire some guards to stand over watch here. No one is to enter the area without my orders! This palace is still my territory!”

“Yes, Your Highness!” The honor guards quickly charged forwards, pulling out their Weeping Heavens Spears, and shouting as they rushed to cut down the rebel soldiers.

However, they hadn't imagined that before they had managed to drag the soldiers very far, another group of soldiers raced out from the main entrance. They wordlessly surrounded the honor guards in three layers, their freezing murderous aura pervading the air as if it were a physical substance.

The honor guards couldn't help but freeze at this sight. The few guards that had been watching the door were now smiling, without a trace of fear in their expressions. Suo Jia couldn't help but darkly smile at this; it was evident that this was part of a plot that had been thought up ages ago!

Of course, no matter how audacious Imperial Concubine Hua was, she didn't dare to kill the Empress right at the gates of the palace. If she did that, then even if the Empress died, Imperial Concubine Hua would die as well. No matter what, she was currently only a concubine. Conspiring to murder the Empress was enough to get even all her relatives punished!

The Empress' voice rang out from the curtains in alarm, "This isn't good, Suo Jia. Since they have so many people, could it be that they want to kill us? What should we do?"

"Hmph!" Suo Jia snorted and said in disdain, "Your Highness, don't be afraid. It's your turn to stand up. Don't mind the honor guards. Just walk out with your two maids, and we'll enter. I doubt anyone would dare obstruct you!"

Although the Empress was extremely afraid of doing as Suo Jia

said, she couldn't think of anything else she could do. She lifted the sedan chair's curtains, and walked down from the Phoenix cart. Just as Suo Jia had told her to last night, her expression was filled with majestic presences, and she began to steadily stride towards the palace door.

Not daring to tarry, Suo Jia hurriedly walked next to the Empress' side with her two palace maids. Soon....the four of them had arrived in front of the encirclement.

Quietly stopping in her tracks, the Empress forcibly suppressed her nervousness and said in a frigid and imposing voice to the fully armed soldiers, "I am the Empress....do you dare to obstruct me?"

"That...." Hearing her words and seeing the imposing expression on the Empress' face, the soldiers all momentarily lowered their heads. Although they didn't step aside, they didn't dare to say anything disrespectful either.

Seeing this, Suo Jia leaned close to the Empress and whispered, "Take out your Empress emblem, and then let me handle everything else after."

The Empress reached towards her waist to take something out, and then raised her right hand high up in the air. A shining gold emblem flashed brightly under the sunlight. At the same time, the Empress said strongly, "The relatives of anyone who dares to obstruct me will be destroyed!"

Suo Jia mercilessly smiled, and strode over to stand in front of

the Empress. He stamped his right foot, and the Diamond Charge activated at full power. With the support of formidable magic and spirit powers, the Diamond Charge separated into millions of paths, and wildly shot outwards like sharp arrows along the perimeter of a circular arc.

This single stamp could be said to have contained all of Suo Jai's power. The devastating Diamond Charge instantly crushed everything. It was clear that....these ordinary soldiers, despite being warriors, couldn't possibly withstand an Advanced Mage like Suo Jia when he activated the Diamond Charge at full power. Especially now that his combat boots boosted his might by 100, his power was unrivaled!

Of course, while there weren't very many experts like Suo Jia, there also wasn't any lack of them. One couldn't forget that no matter how many people there were, there was no way that a person could just gather all 300-400 of them together. These people were just small fries, and didn't qualify as experts at all. That's why....a single Diamond Charge was enough to decimate the entire area in front of the palace, and send the dozens of warriors previously blocking their path flying back into the air.

Seeing the figures get sent high into the air, Suo Jia smiled mercilessly. The might of the Diamond Charge wasn't something that a normal person could withstand. Under such circumstances where the people were extremely pressed, its might was extremely terrifying. Although Suo Jia was only an Advanced Mage, the power of the Diamond Charge far surpassed his, and had reached the realm of a Great Mage!

“Pala...pala...pala...” The figures fell to the ground, one by one. Suddenly... the area in front of the palace entrance fell into chaos, as under everyone’s gazes, the figures that fell to the ground all broke into pieces just like glass vases. The bodies turned into tiny pieces that bounced and rolled around the ground.

“Gasp!” The Empress couldn’t help but sharply inhale at the sight. Of course.....she hadn’t been frightened by the horrible sight. She had witnessed even worse scenes countless times before. Moreover, this scene didn’t reek of blood; in fact, there wasn’t a single trace of blood at all. The bodies had been completely frozen by the Diamond Charge, and even after shattering into pieces, no blood was visible.

What made the Empress so shocked was the fact that a 10 year old child could actually utilize such powerful magic. As the current Empress, and an adult that had lived for 50+ years, she had seen many things. But this wasn’t a magic that a normal mage could use!

As she stared at Suo Jia, completely dumbstruck, Suo Jia expressionlessly stepped around the bodies and bowed, “Your Highness, you can now enter the palace. Just leave everything else to me. No matter who dares to block your way, I will definitely smash their bodies into pieces!”

“Eh!” The Empress couldn’t help but exclaim in shock at Suo Jia’s words. His words were quite fitting; he had literally broken the bodies into tiny pieces. There wasn’t a single piece of the corpse that was larger than one’s fist.

# Chapter 151: Breaking All Ties (Part 1)

---

Under everyone's gazes, Suo Jia and the other three slowly walked through the palace entrance. Suo Jia knew that the reason the opposing party didn't act wasn't because they were afraid of his merciless actions; the most important factor was that they had never actually received orders to act. They had only been told to encircle the Empress and try to dash her spirit. The people that had lost their lives had died meaningless deaths. This was the only reason he dared to act.

Of course, if those fellows were completely unafraid of Suo Jia, their passing through would've still been impossible. Being faced with someone that had such ruthless killing techniques would make anyone afraid. However, what they didn't know was that after a single Diamond Charge, all of Suo Jia's magic and spirit power had been completely consumed. If they really surrounded Suo Jia and his group again, Suo Jia would actually be helpless.

This was the meaning of psychological warfare. There was no need to be much higher than the opponent, being just the slightest bit ahead of them was enough. Victory with the most minimal effort was enough to manipulate others. Losing this slight advantage would cause one to suffer heavy losses. If another person knew that Suo Jia was actually weak in reality, despite his seemingly strong appearance, they definitely would've had Suo Jia and his group surrounded immediately, and would not have let them go unless they had managed to trap the Empress for 2 hours.

This reasoning was something that the Empress knew. She sighed in admiration as she looked at Suo Jia, and shook her head. Her choice to ask Suo Jia to accompany her this time was really the

right decision. She wasn't even sure how they had just passed through this obstacle. A battlefield was always constantly changing, so no matter how formidable Suo Jia was, there was no way he could've anticipated all possible outcomes; in fact, nobody could.

Although they had successfully gotten into the palace, it was clear to see that the Empress was still thoroughly frightened. In her eyes, all of the concubines had already become her enemies. The Empress furrowed her brows, inwardly worrying.

Seeing the Empress's reaction, Suo Jia smiled and shook his head. "Your Highness does not need to be scared. Think about it, if Imperial Concubine Hua really did succeed, why would they have to prepare such methods? If they just directly locked you up like a dog within the palace, wouldn't that be better?"

Although Suo Jia's words were rather crude, even to the point of calling the Empress a dog, at this moment, the Empress could not get angry. There were more pressing matters, and they didn't have time to worry about such formalities. Winning was the most important.

While thinking, Suo Jia continued, "Your Highness must have confidence in herself. You have already been within the imperial palace for roughly thirty to forty years, so how could your foundation be compared to that of an imperial concubine's? She only managed to arrange for this disturbance outside of the palace, and the only purpose of this was to make the Empress panic with fear and force you into a hopeless situation. I have said this before, you must remember that these imperial concubines are all below



you, and you are the female lord here. Imperial Concubine Hua is only a clown that jump over beams, so there is no reason to fear her!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s explanation, the Empress’s heart finally cleared up. right...she herself had already been inside the palace for 36 years, so how could her foundation and influence compared to a concubine that had only been at the palace for 6 years. There was nothing to be scared of, as long as she was still the Empress, then these workers were still all under her!

While thinking, the Empress finally gathered the majestic presence an Empress should have, and with her head held high and chest out, she headed straight for the chambers of the imperial concubines. While walking, the Empress was partly under Suo Jia words, and partly under her own hypnosis — I am the Empress, I am the owner here, I am the Empress, I am...

Seeing the Empress mutter to herself, Suo Jia could not help but involuntarily laugh. He slightly shook his head, and Suo Jia quietly snuck closer to two of the female servants before saying in a low voice, “Later, no matter what I tell you guys to do, you must immediately obey. Even if I tell you to arrest Imperial Concubine Hua and punish her, you also must not hesitate. Do you understand?”

“What? This...” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the two female servants could not help but reveal shocked expressions.

“Idiots!” Seeing this scene, Suo Jia could not help but scold them out of anger. “Have your brains been flooded with water? Think

about it, once the Empress is overthrown, would you still have your lives? Your fates have already been interwoven together with the Empress's. Once the Empress falls and Imperial Concubine Hua succeeds, not only will you die, for the sake of cutting the weeds and eliminating the roots, your families will all die as well. Only by dedicating yourselves for the sake of the Empress could you protect your small lives, do you understand now?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the two girls quickly understood, after all... To be able to serve the Empress at her side and become her close servants was not something anyone could do. A stupid servant girl could never satisfy the Empress.

While explaining, the Empress slightly shifted her hair and glanced at Suo Jia. The words said just now were completely heard by her. As for Suo Jia's meticulous thinking, the Empress was thoroughly convinced. Although it wasn't some alarming event, once it was forgotten, the results would be difficult to predict. Many things could be completely ruined because of these small mishaps!

Finally, the four individuals hurriedly entered the chambers of the imperial concubine, and the surrounding people increased in numbers. After seeing the Empress, all of them could not help but be stunned. It proved that what Suo Jia said was correct. As during that period of time, Imperial Concubine Hua had not yet threatened the other concubines. Upon seeing the Empress, everyone respectfully greeted her and paid their respects.

Seeing the surrounding maids pay their respects one after another, the Empress's eyes could not help but moisten. In the

past, she only felt that this was etiquette, and that this was normal. Only now did she finally feel how important this etiquette was. This was something that only the Empress and Emperor could enjoy.

Soon after, the four of them arrived at the Eastern Palace, precisely where the Empress lived. It was obvious that...Imperial Concubine Hua had already received news and currently... the Eastern Palace doors were wide open, and the imperial concubine was currently sitting upright on the Empress's throne. In her surroundings stood several dozen maids, and her face looked at the four incoming individuals with a provocative expression.

Under Suo Jia's encouragement, the Empress entered the palace, and stopped at the main hall of the Eastern Palace. At the same time, Suo Jia shouted in an angry voice, "Outrageous! To not kowtow upon meeting the Empress, are you people trying to rebel?"

Only after hearing Suo Jia's voice did the other maids realize that no matter who became the Empress in the future, the current, genuine Empress was still Empress An Rong, not Imperial Concubine Hua. If anyone dared to not greet her or pay respects to her, they would be punished to death, and Imperial Concubine Hua would have no way of saving them.

In that moment, all of the concubines knelt down and paid their respects. Seeing this scene, Imperial Concubine Hua, who had thought that she had already won this power struggle, couldn't help but begin shaking. She hadn't imagined that after only their first contact, she would already be at a disadvantage. This would

not do.

While thinking, Imperial Concubine Hua stood up with an enchanting smile on her face. She said in a harsh voice, “Oh! Isn’t it Auntie An Rong who is past her time and lost her love? What is the reason for your visit to my Eastern Palace? I do not recall requesting your presence.”

Hearing Imperial Concubine Hua’s words, the Empress couldn’t help but tremble. But, she remembered Suo Jia’s words, and didn’t act at all. At the same time, Suo Jia’s low voice rang out once more, “Imperial Concubine Hua, you’re too brazen. To think that you refuse to kowtow in the Empress’s presence. Are you trying to rebel?”

## Chapter 152: Breaking All Ties (Part 2)

---

“Hmph!” The menacing Suo Jia didn’t seem afraid at all. Imperial Concubine Hua arrogantly said, “What Empress? I don’t need to pay respects at all. She isn’t going to remain the Empress for long, and soon I will replace her as the new Empress!”

“Hehe...” Suo Jia darkly chuckled and said, “That’s right, that’s right.....what you said is quite true. However.....you seem to have forgotten that no matter what happens in the future, you are currently not the Empress, yet you dare to be so rude. Do you think that this chamber of concubines has no rules?”

Suo Jia shouted, “Men! Drag this rule-breaking, lowly servant away, and slap her 100 times!”

“Hmph!” With an arrogant snort, Imperial Concubine Hua stood up and said in a domineering tone, “Stop deluding yourself. The people here are my people; nobody will listen to your commands. I want to see just who here would dare to even touch me!”

Faced with the arrogant Imperial Concubine Hua, Suo Jia knit his brows and said to the Empress’s two servants, “What are you two waiting for? Could it be that....you two really want to die?”

The two servant girls tightly clenched their teeth and strode over, heading straight towards Imperial Concubine Hua. Seeing this, Imperial Concubine Hua finally lost her calm. She waved her palm and shouted in panic, “Quick....stop those two girls! You must not let them come over!”

As the palace servant girls were all Imperial Concubine Hua's personal aides, they didn't dare to show disrespect to the Empress. But faced against two insignificant servant girls, and having been given orders by Imperial Concubine Hua, there was no reason to hold back. They all rushed over together, surrounding the two girls.

Seeing that the girls had been trapped, Imperial Concubine Hua smiled darkly and said in a biting tone, "You act so disrespectfully to me, and even want to hit me? Let's see just who exactly will be beaten! Servants, slap them without mercy, each one of them 100 times. Don't miss a single one!"

Following her commands, her servants all began to grab at the two girls, and mercilessly slapped them. Loud sounds rang out as they inflicted the punishment one after another. Seeing this scene, the Empress couldn't help but feel lightheaded. This was clearly bullying brought to the most extreme limit. Did this palace even have laws anymore?

With tear-filled eyes, the Empress shot an imploring glance at Suo Jia, hoping that he'd be able to help. However, Suo Jia didn't act at all in response to her plead for help. Instead, he rubbed his chin with a dark smile on his face, and shook his head at the Empress, indicating that she shouldn't get impatient.

"The Emperor has arrived!" As the Empress's two servant girls were being slapped 100 times, a loud and clear voice rang out to report the Emperor's presence. Hearing this, Imperial Concubine Hua immediately panicked, and urgently said, "Quick! Drag those

two girls to the back, and don't let the Emperor see them."

"Tch..." Suo Jia couldn't help but sneer at her words as he said in disdain, "Please, you've already vented out your anger by abusing your authority, and now you want to get rid of the evidence? Do you really think everything will go your way?"

As he said this, Suo Jia waved his right hand. In that instant.....the Revolving Frozen Gas was activated, wrapping around the 30+ girls. The cold stream numbed their bodies, making it difficult for them to move.

This slightest bit of delay was enough. By the time all the girls had regained their motor functions, the Emperor had already appeared within the main hall. At this point, nobody dared to move around recklessly. They had to immediately kneel down and pay their respects; otherwise, they would be committing a major crime, enough to have even their entire families punished!

With the appearance of the Emperor, Imperial Concubine Hua changed her expression, and said in a pampered and childish voice, "This lowly servant greets Your Majesty. How did Your Majesty have free time to come here today? Don't you have official businesses to take care of?"

Hearing her words, the Emperor couldn't help but turn to look at Imperial Concubine Hua. There was a loving expression in his eyes, and it was clear to see that she was quite skilled; she had clearly bewitched him quite strongly.

As the Emperor looked at Imperial Concubine Hua, Suo Jia quickly approached the Empress and whispered, “Start crying immediately. Try to make it look more grieved, and afterwards, according to how you think is best, remind the Emperor of your former glory. In addition... you have to remember that right now, you are the most beautiful woman in the world. No man in this world can resist your tears and grievous expression.”

Women were all natural born actresses, and they did not need to disguise themselves at all when pretending. Moreover... for the past 12 hours, the Empress had been feeling depressed and half dead. In particular, when she saw the people dear to her act so friendly with another woman, how could she not feel grieved?

After finishing their exchanges, Suo Jia quickly left the Empress's side. At the same time, the Emperor also turned his body to look at the Empress with a frown. Suo Jia snuck a furtive look and sure enough... after seeing the Empress's beautiful appearance and grieved expression, the Emperor's body began to violently shake with a complexion of disbelief.

Was Imperial Concubine Hua beautiful? Yes...she was indeed gorgeous. One could even say that it wasn't a normal level of beauty. Even in comparison to the Empress's former days, she wasn't lacking in any way. However...when compared to the current Empress, how could anyone humiliate the Empress in such a way? Could that thing even be compared to her?

(TL Note: The author actually stuck his own attitude here. The actual text says: “But...if you compared her to the current Empress, I'm sorry, but can you not humiliate the Empress like that? How



could that thing compare to her at all?)

A man, even if he could maintain a neutral expression when he had his flesh lacerated from corporal punishment....wouldn't be able to stay indifferent when such a beautiful woman was staring at him with that level of grief, tears pouring down her face. Moreover....she was a woman that he had once deeply loved, a woman that had lived with him for 30-40 years.

“Your....Your Majesty, haven't you been working too hard recently? It's only been a few days since we last met, but you seem to have gotten thinner. You musn't forget to take your pills.” The Empress choked out, her voice so full of emotions that she wasn't able to say it smoothly.

Hearing the Empress's words, the Emperor's expression greatly changed, and his face was filled with shame and guilt. Seeing this scene, Suo Jia could not help but laugh evilly; men were all like this. It was difficult to refrain from being unfaithful, however, they did not have the courage to face their convictions in front of the woman they loved.

At that moment, Imperial Concubine Hua said expressionlessly, “Your Majesty, this Empress just leaves the palace whenever she wants. Isn't that too being too brazen? No wonder they say she has significant others outside. Looking at her youthful, glowing appearance, she was probably moisturized by quite a few men. A woman as shameless as her isn't suitable to be the Empress anymore.”

The Emperor suppressed his guilt and asked the Empress,

“Where have you been during these past few days? Why didn’t you tell me you were leaving? Who did you go search for?”

Hearing the Emperor’s words, the Empress widened her eyes in disbelief, and said in a trembling voice, “Your Majesty! You.... you actually question my chastity! Don’t tell me that... that I am so insignificant within your heart? Are you saying that after so many years, you still don’t know what kind of person I am?”

Hearing the Empress’s words, the Emperor frowned. After being married for forty years, he naturally knew what kind of person the Empress was. Claiming that she had gone out to snatch another man was something that he found difficult to believe. However, others had already said it quite plaintively, so what was he supposed to do?

Imperial Concubine Hua harshly said, “Don’t use your relationship with the Emperor to make things difficult for him. As the Empress, you shouldn’t be secretly leaving the palace as you please. Now that this scandal is spreading outside, you won’t be able to rid yourself from it.”

The Empress was suddenly at a loss for words. How was she supposed to justify her actions? It was exactly as Imperial Concubine Hua had said; she had left the palace without informing the Emperor. Now that the scandal was spreading, she had absolutely no way of defending herself. How was she supposed to explain something that didn’t exist?

Suo Jia smiled at the Empress’s reaction. He strode forward and said, “Imperial Concubine Hua, I would really like to know how

you heard the Empress had secretly left the palace. And how did you hear of this scandal?”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Imperial Concubine Hua showed a panicked expression. In order to conceal her own worry, Imperial Concubine Hua replied angrily, “Who are you? Do you even have the right to talk?”

Pursing his lips in disdain, Suo Jia said without holding himself back, “I don't have the right to speak. However....I'm just really curious as to how you know all of this.” Suo Jia narrowed his eyes as he shot the Emperor a meaningful glance. He had already achieved his objective, there was no need to speak any further.

Hearing Suo Jia's hint, the Empress finally aroused from her stupor. She looked at Imperial Concubine Hua and said, “That's right, I'm also curious to know how you know that I secretly left the palace. Those scandals as well, where did you learn of them?”

Faced with the Empress's questioning, Imperial Concubine Hua replied with a flustered expression, “You secretly left the palace, and that is something that we all know. Together with that sex scandal that I heard the servants talk about, what part of what I said was wrong?”

“Haha...” Suo Jia sneered at Imperial Concubine Hua and replied, “If everyone knows, then how is it a secret? If the Empress wanted to do something shameless, would she let you know? Also....secretly spreading rumors about your mistress is a sin, I'm sure. Ai....Holy Light Empire's chamber of concubines really needs to be disciplined a bit.”

Hearing Suo Jia's cold and and mocking words, Imperial Concubine Hua gnashed her teeth in fury. At the same time, the Empress furiously looked at the Emperor before saying, "It doesn't matter whether I have committed adultery or not. However... to purposely spread such rumors with no evidence is something that I, the current mistress of the Imperial Concubines, must punish her for!"

The Empress then shouted, "Men! Drag this lowly servant out of here. According to the rules of the chamber of concubines, spreading rumors about her mistress means that....her tongue must be pulled out!"

"Wait!" Hearing the Empress's words, the Emperor's expression drastically changed and he impatiently said, "For this matter, we should take our time to discuss it. Let's not recklessly take action, and slowly talk it out, slowly talk things through..."

Suo Jia couldn't help but feel shocked. It looked like...this Imperial Concubine Hua had really bewitched the Emperor, quite deeply too. There was no way she could be allowed to stay alive. Suo Jia said in a low voice, "Your Highness, you have to give face to the Emperor. Although you are not fit to be Empress because you are swayed by your own feelings, who asked the Emperor to be so lenient?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Empress's entire body trembled. Who wouldn't understand what Suo Jia was implying? It was already quite obvious; if the Emperor was standing on Imperial Concubine Hua's side now, who knew what would happen in the

future.

Moreover, among the imperial concubines, she was the mistress. Since Imperial Concubine Hua had committed wrongs, then she had to be punished. Even if the Emperor begged for mercy, it was useless. If the Empress could not impartially enforce the law, then she would not be a qualified Empress, and would be ridiculed by everyone.

The Empress looked at the Emperor with a grieved expression. His actions just now had painfully broke her heart; he had actually stood on that little girl's side. What else could possibly be said about such a situation? Their affection for each other was broken, and she was no longer in the mood to try to recover it.

The Empress coldly said, "Your Majesty, I am currently carrying out matters regarding the imperial concubines, so I ask that you step back. There is no need for you to dethrone me, as tomorrow, I will personally leave the palace and give up the Empress position. However, today, I am still the Empress, and I must take care of this inter-family issue."

The Empress then abruptly turned around and shouted, "Men, drag this lowly servant away and pull out her tongue!"

# Chapter 153: The Grand Empress's Arrival

## (Part 1)

---

“Your Highness, I’ll say it one more time; the matter of the punishment is something we can postpone. After all, even if the Imperial Concubine Hua shouldn’t be secretly spreading rumors about her mistress, it doesn’t warrant punishment by death. You’re being too extreme....” The Emperor strongly said.

The Empress was devastated and heart-broken at the Emperor’s words. Her body swayed a bit before she said in a dejected voice, “Fine. Since Your Majesty insists, then I won’t say anything further. Just do as you want.” The Empress’s expression held boundless grief, as if her life had just lost all meaning.

Seeing the Empress in such a state, Suo Jia couldn’t help but frown. Originally...killing off Imperial Concubine Hua would’ve fixed the situation once and for all. Although it was uncertain what would happen if one provoked the Emperor, allowing Imperial Concubine Hua to continue her trap would practically be more dangerous.

However, since the situation had already reached this point, they could only remedy it as well as possible. Suo Jia said in a distressed voice, “People say that one has to smile at strangers, but never have I heard of making an acquaintance cry. The Empress has deep emotions toward Your Majesty, yet Your Majesty continues to disregard her feelings in such a way. In that case, I ask Your Majesty to send us to our deaths! At least when we die, we’ll be able to maintain our reputation and integrity!”

The Empress, who was originally holding back her tears, began to sob intensely at Suo Jia's grieved words. She shook her head and sorrowfully said, "That's right. If Your Majesty treats me in such a way, then I no longer have any reason to stay in this world. In that case, I ask Your Majesty to give us silk scarves and allow us humble servants to die."

"You!" The Emperor had, after all, been married to the Empress for nearly 40 years. No matter how angry he got, the most he could ever do was throw her into the dungeon or something, but never order her to commit suicide...up until now, the Empress had simply been trying to attract the Emperor's feelings, and had never made the Emperor fed up with her before.

Thus, when faced with this situation, the Emperor was at a loss for a while. He definitely wasn't willing to let the Empress die; having been married with her for nearly 40 years and had such a sweet and conjugal love, how could he be so indifferent?

As the Emperor was extremely fretful, the Empress turned around to look at the Imperial Concubine Hua. She lightly fished out the emblem of the Empress, removed her crown, and lightly placed them on the table. She then said in a choked voice, "Since you long for the Empress position so much, I'll just help you get it. The emblem and crown are both here. Just take them."

Imperial Concubine Hua couldn't help but reveal the ecstasy she had tried to conceal. She received the crown and caressed it lovingly. At the same time, the Empress coldly said, "However, I have to say this first: I can hand over this Empress position, but...if you don't do your utmost to wait upon the Emperor, I won't

forgive you, even after I die!”

The currently completely enraptured Imperial Concubine Hua had absolutely no inclination to listen to the Empress’s words. She subconsciously nodded, then delicately said, “If I become Empress, I’ll naturally wait upon His Majesty. I’ll definitely be a hundred times better than an abandoned woman like you!”

The Empress couldn’t help but give a distressed smile at these words. In farewell, she turned to the Emperor and said in a melancholic voice, “Your Majesty, we’ve been married for 36 years, but this point will be where we break up. From now on, I will no longer be your wife. I hope...I hope that you take care of yourself. I’ll move my stuff to the dungeon now, and await Your Majesty’s orders to commit suicide.” With tears flowing like rivers, the Empress said no more, and turned around to stumble outside the palace hall.

As he watched this scene, tears uncontrollably fell from Suo Jia’s eyes as well. He couldn’t deny the fact that the Empress’s actions were different from how he had planned it. After all...he had yet to understand empathy. At the moment, he still used the comparison of costs and benefits as a starting point when considering a situation. However, he had to admit that the Empress’s response really hit it. What was the most moving? Obviously emotions. This was checkmate for the Emperor; they would now see how he would handle the situation.

With a sigh, Suo Jia shook his head and turned around to say to the Empress’s maids, “Your mistress has already gone to the dungeon. Why haven’t you followed after her to do your duties



yet? Do you not know that recognizing a master means staying loyal to them for life?”

Hearing this, the two maids who were struck 100 times each in the face, with resulting bruises so swollen that it was difficult to make out their facial features, crawled out from behind the crowd with difficulty. Ever since the Emperor had entered, they had been obstructed by Imperial Concubine Hua’s servant girls. That’s why, up until now, the Emperor hadn’t even seen them. However...this was exactly part of Suo Jia’s laborious plans!

As expected, everything was going precisely as Suo Jia had planned. When the Emperor suddenly saw the two maids looking even scarier than ghosts, with bruised faces, eyes swollen into slits, and their eyes, nose, and mouth all expelling copious amounts of blood, the Emperor was majorly shocked!

He was first at a loss for words, but the Emperor soon recalled what Suo Jia had just said. These two girls were the Empress’s close maids, so why were they like this? What had happened? They had clearly been beaten up!

Frowning imposingly, the Emperor said in a heavy voice, “What’s going on here? How did those two get in such a state?”

Only after being faced with the Emperor’s questioning did Imperial Concubine Hua regain her senses. Her expression drastically changed as she quietly stood there without a word, her mind furiously racing to think of a way to divert the question.

Unfortunately, Suo Jia didn't give her much time. With a sneer, Suo Jia said in disdain, "You should ask this question to Imperial Concubine Hua. She had ordered the maids to be beaten. As for the reason why, only she herself knows."

The Emperor furrowed his brows and looked over at Imperial Concubine Hua. Just now, he had personally seen that the two maids had walked out from amidst Imperial Concubine Hua's group of maids. From this, the Emperor had already vaguely guessed many things.

Imperial Concubine Hua's mind was in complete disarray when her gaze met the Emperor's questioning one. How was she supposed to respond? There was no way she could explain. After a while passed, she still couldn't think of a reply.

What made Imperial Concubine Hua the most depressed was that, typically speaking, the Emperor never came to the chambers of the concubines during the day. Yet why had he come here today? If she had known this earlier, she wouldn't have dared to act so unbridled and despotic.

Seeing Imperial Concubine Hua stall for time, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile darkly. Since that woman had actually given Suo Jia a chance to speak, it would be best if he didn't regret it.

Suo Jia coldly said, "How can it be that they were only beaten up here? Her Highness was also trapped outside the palace by hundreds of soldiers for over half an hour!"

“Stop speaking nonsense! You guys clearly charged your way through. You weren’t trapped for half an hour at all!” Imperial Concubine Hua angrily shouted.

Suo Jia darkly chuckled and suddenly replied, “That’s right...it seems I did indeed remember wrong. We charged straight in by ourselves. Ai...those guys were really a bunch of fools. They dared to obstruct us even when Her Highness herself was present. Isn’t that just seeking death?”

Imperial Concubine Hua suddenly realized what she had said wrong, but it was too late. At that moment...the Emperor was already looking at her with a furious expression. If she didn’t come up with an explanation now, and infuriated the dragon, the end result would be something she didn’t even want to imagine!

As she was thinking this in fear, the Emperor said in a low voice, “Imperial Concubine Hua, tell me the truth now. What exactly happened here? Why were the Empress’s maids beaten up? Also...the Empress was even kept out of her own home? What is going on here?”

“It...it...it was those two brats. They were being extremely rude to me, so I ordered for them to be punished. As for the Empress being kept out, that...that’s something I didn’t know either.” Imperial Concubine Hua hurriedly replied.

“Pfft...” Suo Jia said in disdain, “Yes...those two girls were indeed audacious. But why had they dared to act so brazenly? As for the matter of the Empress being kept out, there’s no need to question the mastermind behind that.”

Suo Jia looked scornfully at the Emperor and said in a low voice, “Do not abandon the one that has gone through trials and tribulations with you. As a man, especially as the Holy Light Empire’s Emperor, you should be setting an example. Right now, you’re being partial towards Imperial Concubine Hua’s youthful beauty, and abandoning the wife that you had once loved. This is really something that others would sneer at.”

The Emperor exploded with fury at Suo Jia’s words, but was unable to bring himself to speak. He could punish Suo Jia, but it was true that he was feeling guilty about himself. How could he bring himself to oppress Suo Jia?

Coldly staring at the Emperor, Suo Jia suddenly raised his voice and said, “Before Her Highness forfeited her position, she was your wife. Yet you let your own wife be trapped outside her own home, and even forced her to suffer from such humiliation in her own room. Can you still even be counted as a man? You’ve lost face for all the ancestors of Holy Light’s imperial family lineage!”

At this point, no matter how good the Emperor’s temper was, he could no longer contain his anger. He burst into fury and shouted, “How brazen! To think that you would dare to dishonor me...Men! Drag him out...and behead him!”

# Chapter 154: The Grand Empress's Arrival

## (Part 2)

---

“Halt!” A low, powerful, and aged voice rang out just as a dozen burly guards rushed in from the outside.

The Emperor couldn't help but quiver at the sound of this voice, as he looked towards the door with an extremely complicated expression. The next moment...an elder woman wearing red ceremonial robes supported by a few servant girls and an ornamental cane walked over from the entrance with a serious expression.

After coldly narrowing her eyes for a brief moment at Imperial Concubine Hua, the elder woman locked her gaze onto the Emperor. She banged her cane onto the ground and angrily said, “What? Did you just fly into a rage out of humiliation? Did this young child's words strike something?”

“Mother...you! Why are you here?” The Emperor said with a pale face as he stared at her in shock.

“Hmph!” The Grand Empress said coldly, “I didn't want to come either, but what would've happened if I didn't? The chamber of concubines is in such a mess. If I didn't show up, then all of our ancestors really would've lost face because of you.”

The Grand Empress narrowed her eyes and turned to look at Imperial Concubine Hua, “You're really amazing and powerful, huh? You've really put on a great show for me today!”

“What? You...you saw it all?” Imperial Concubine Hua stammered in shock.

With a nod, the Grand Empress coldly said, “That’s right, I was watching from beginning to end. I witnessed everything, regardless of whether I was meant to or not!”

Imperial Concubine Hua’s face turned as white as paper at these words. At the same time, Suo Jia chuckled, “Imperial Concubine Hua, why don’t you try repeating your answer once more? Why were those two girls beaten up? And exactly why was Her Highness trapped outside of the palace?”

Pressed by Suo Jia’s words, Imperial Concubine Hua’s face turned ashen, and she stayed silent. Seeing this, Suo Jia cried out indignantly, “You won’t say it? Fine then, I’ll answer for you! The people outside the palace were hired by you. Your goal was to first display your power to the Empress, and thus decrease her majestic presence. As for those two girls, they were trying to carry out the Empress’s orders to punish you, but you instead openly rebelled against the Empress and ordered your own servants to slap each of the girls 100 times in front of the Empress. Hehe...those 100 slaps were actually the same as slapping the Empress herself!”

The Emperor looked at Imperial Concubine Hua in disbelief and said in a shocked voice, “Imperial Concubine Hua, he’s lying, right? How could you possibly do such a thing? You’re not that kind of person!”

The Grand Empress suddenly stamped her cane against the ground and said fiercely, “Imperial Concubine Hua, don’t even think of trying to openly lie. My execution style is one that you should know. If you don’t believe that I’ll do anything, just try to utter a lie! I’ll decimate your entire family!”

Imperial Concubine Hua’s face turned even paler. The old woman’s fierce temper was one that everyone in the world knew of. She was a bit better now that she had aged, but when she was young, she had ordered no less than 1000 families to be completely wiped out! She was definitely a Queen of Hell that didn’t bat a single eyelash at taking lives!

Moreover...this woman strongly stuck to her words. She had never dishonored any commitment she had voiced. The Grand Emperor had died early, and she had taken over the current Emperor’s position for 20 years! Only after the Emperor had reached the age of 30 had she handed him the office of the Emperor. Even now, all the current chancellors, who were her old subordinates and trusted aides, were people who would even die for her! That’s why, if she wanted to do something, there really was nobody that could stop her. Even if the Emperor tried to, she would still prevail.

Imperial Concubine Hua suddenly fell to her knees. Her corruption had already been brought to light; if she lied any further now, she’d be directly seeking death. It was a pity...that Imperial Concubine Hua had never realized that if the Grand Empress had really seen everything, she would’ve long since killed off Imperial Concubine Hua in anger.

Trembling as she knelt in front of the Grand Empress, Imperial Concubine Hua said, “I am in the wrong. I was momentarily lost in obsession, and went too far. I beg His Majesty and Mother Empress for mercy. I won’t dare to do this ever again!”

“What!” The Grand Empress shook the cane in her hand as she angrily demanded, “You really dared to do such a thing? What do you think this chamber of imperial concubines is? Do you think Holy Light has no laws?”

Imperial Concubine Hua raised her head in confusion, and looked at the Grand Empress doubtfully. Hadn’t she witness everything from beginning to end? Why was she repeating this again?

But soon...Imperial Concubine Hua realized everything. The Grand Empress had really just arrived. She had just tried to extract information with a bluff just now. Now that Imperial Concubine Hua thought about it, this only made sense; why would the Grand Empress have just loitered around here for no reason!

Seeing the panicked appearance of Imperial Concubine Hua, the Grand Empress said as she shook from anger, “You’re really too brazen. Not only did you fail to greet the Empress, you even ordered your servants to beat up the Empress’s servants in such a state when they were ordered by the Empress to punish you. You didn’t just beat her servants...you were clearly trying to hurt the Empress’s face!”

The Grand Empress suddenly turned around to face the Emperor, and she angrily said, “What this young friend said was correct. Even if you just wanted to depose Empress An Rong, I wouldn’t



have objected, but...before deposing her, she was still your wife. As a man, you let your own wife suffer from such humiliation. How can you still call yourself a man?"

The Grand Empress then turned to shout towards the people outside the palace, "Men! Gather the civil and military officials. Such a stupid and useless Emperor isn't suited for being Holy Light's Emperor!"

The Grand Empress whipped her head around to look back at the Emperor. She stretched out a shaking finger to point at him as she said, "Right now, I'm not punishing either Imperial Concubine Hua or you. From today onwards, you are no longer a part of the Holy Light Imperial Family. You will immediately leave the palace with her. If you are even one step too slow, you'd better not blame me for changing my mind and beating both of you to death with my cane right now!"

Suo Jia couldn't help but secretly snicker to himself when he saw the Grand Empress's fury. This Grand Empress had always been a person of jealous nature during her time as Empress. She had also suffered a bitter experience identical to what Empress An Rong was currently facing. In reality, all of the Empresses in this world ended up facing these circumstances.

However, the Grand Empress back then had been much more spiteful. She had made merciless calculations to kill the Emperor, and then bury all of his women together with him as well. She then independently ruled Holy Light for 20 years, all the way up until the current Emperor had turned 30, before handing the position over to him.

Right now, the Emperor's and Imperial Concubine Hua's actions had forced her to recall everything that had happened to her back then. An old woman like her that had been widowed for over a dozen years had originally had a monstrous temper. Now that she was re-facing the same bitter experience she had encountered years ago, with Empress An Rong taking the Grand Empress's place, she was beyond furious. The only reason she hadn't beheaded the two people then and there was because the Emperor still shared her own flesh and blood.

The Emperor and Imperial Concubine Hua were stunned speechless for a while. Seeing this scene, Suo Jia strode forward, and respectfully said, "Your Highness Grand Empress, please take back your order. After all, you only have one son. If you chase him out, then who would become Emperor? The empire can't go a single day without a ruler!"

The Grand Empress strongly banged her cane against the ground. If it were 20 some years ago, she could've ruled the empire herself. But at this point, she was already an old woman; she didn't have enough energy. If she really did chase the Emperor away, who would rule?

Although the Grand Empress had a few grandsons, they were still too inexperienced, and weren't fit to control the government. Putting the country in the hands of some unqualified child would be a complete joke. By law of the Empire, the Emperor had to at least be 30 years old to take the throne, and he had to pass the throne over to a new Emperor at the age of 60.

Seeing the Grand Empress waver, Suo Jia continued, “Moreover, this matter wasn’t caused by the Emperor. At most, he’d have to suffer from punishment for overseeing crime, but not to the point where he is deposed from the throne!”

“Mm....” The Grand Empress recovered from her anger and nodded, “You’re right. Although the Emperor is greatly responsible, he isn’t ultimately the perpetrator. The one that should actually be punished is Imperial Concubine Hua!”

The Emperor couldn’t help but shoot a grateful glance at Suo Jia. He knew that if Suo Jia hadn’t spoken for him, he’d have been forced out of the palace. The enraged Grand Empress was someone that nobody could stop. Basically, being deposed was guaranteed, and even if the Grand Empress regretted her decisions after he was deposed, there was nothing she would’ve been able to do. The Empress was just like that; she never backed out from anything she did!

The Grand Empress sharply turned her head to look at Imperial Concubine Hua and said fiercely, “Although the Emperor doesn’t need to be deposed, a slut like you that has offended your superiors and brought upheaval needs to be punished. Otherwise, I....”

At that point, the sound of panicked footsteps approaching from the outside could suddenly be heard. The next moment...a palace maid frantically ran in and shouted in alarm, “Bad news, the Empress committed suicide!”

## Chapter 155: Planned In Such A Way (Part 1)

---

Broken tiles littered the ground, making the courtyard a complete mess. The dead atmosphere that surrounded the dungeon was exactly the same as it had always been. A crowd of people led by a servant girl rushed through the dungeon's hallway, entering a worn-down brick room.

The run-down room's ceiling had leaks, and the limestone floor was covered with blots of water from outside rain. The walls were missing quite a few tiles, and sinister-looking cracks covered all the walls. Freezing cold breezes whooshed through the holes in the roof and the chinks in the walls, flowing into the room. How could anyone ever live here; it was clearly a pig sty!

Seeing that the previously noble and flawlessly beautiful Empress ended up in such a place made a few of her closest aides cover their mouths with a gasp, making the already desolate atmosphere even worse.

A tattered wooden bed sat in the corner on the run-down room. Empress An Rong was serenely lying there with her eyes closed. Her poise was graceful and elegant, as if she were sleeping amidst a sea of flowers. At first glance, it looked like she was just sleeping, silent and unmoving. However, at a closer glance, it was clear to see that she was no longer breathing. Everyone knew that Empress An Rong, who had been impeccably noble and beautiful back in the days, had already died.

“Huala...huala...” A soft sound rang out, catching the Emperor and the Grand Empress off guard. When they turned around to

look, they noticed that there was a piece of paper held down by a battered rock on the wooden table. The sound they heard had been the paper fluttering in the wind.

The Grand Empress hurriedly strode over to grab the piece of paper. After carefully reading it, she sorrowfully shook her head. Even the normally cool Grand Empress couldn't control the tears that fell from her eyes and onto the paper. It was just too depressing, too touching.

The Grand Empress threw the paper at the Emperor and angrily shouted, "You unfilial son, just look at what you've done. This is all your fault!"

Looking at the Empress serenely lying on the wooden table, the Emperor's tears had also begun to blur his vision. As he stared at the woman with the beauty of a peony on the bed, his past memories began to replay through his head, over and over. Humans were different from beasts; how could he be heartless in the face of such tragedy? Only after his loss did the Emperor finally realize who his greatest treasure, his most loved one, was!

He silently took the letter from the Grand Empress, and read it closely. The suicide note was filled with resentment and sentimentality, yearning and disappointment, sending a penetrating, sharp pain shooting through the Emperor's heart. A woman so beautiful that had loved him so deeply had killed herself because he had been fickle and cold. How could he possibly endure the pain from knowing this!

"Ah...." After reading the letter in his hand, the Emperor finally

began to wail in grief. His cries were desolate, like the ape that cried tears of blood, and the ancient tree that wailed.

(TL note: This is the literal translation. I had no clue what this meant, so I asked the almighty GGP for help. It apparently refers to two stories. One is about an ape who lost his son and mate by hunters and when he found them, he found their bodies were mutilated, so he cried blood. The other is about trees being so sad about humans cutting down other trees that they expressed their sorrow by physically wailing.)

The instant that he had completely lost Empress An Rong, the Emperor had finally realized that the woman he loved the most was still An Rong. His feelings toward her surpassed what he felt for his family, or even himself.

When An Rong was still alive, he hadn't ever considered her good sides. However, now that she had left him, he suddenly discovered that his heart was unexpectedly feeling so much pain that he couldn't even breathe or think. Scenes from the entire past 36 years played through his mind one after another like a movie. The accumulated emotions and experiences that he had gathered were as great as the sea. This was how they had gotten to know each other so well, and become such intimate lovers.

The Emperor had to admit that Imperial Concubine Hua also gave him boundless joy. She excited him in a different way, and often sent his soul drifting to the seventh heaven. However, that was just a comfort he could seek in \*\*. The only one that could actually move his heart was Empress An Rong!

The Emperor would perhaps not be able to experience as many pleasures if he lost Imperial Concubine Hua, but losing Empress An Rong made him suddenly discover that he now felt completely empty. The incomparable feeling of emptiness and grief, as if he had lost half his soul, stormed through his head.

For the past three years, although the Emperor had spent every night in Imperial Concubine Hua's room, he had always taken some time every day to go accompany Empress An Rong. Even if they didn't speak, and just quietly sat there together, the Emperor would feel content and serene. Although there wasn't as much passion or stimulation with An Rong, that warm feeling he felt with her was something that only she could give him.

The Emperor tightly clenched the letter in his fist, and shakingly fell to his knees in front of the bed. He knelt there next to An Rong, gazing at the serene, seemingly sleeping Empress An Rong. For the past few years, he had been completely absorbed with Imperial Concubine Hua, and had turned a cold shoulder to An Rong. However, from beginning to end, she had never once said any words of anger to him. Whenever he met with her, she was always as gentle and soft as before, never once rebuking him for his actions.

As he stared at her flawless face as beautiful as a peony, and her naturally well developed figure, the Emperor finally realized in that instant of loss that the one he loved the most, and the one he couldn't lose, was An Rong.

The Emperor also suddenly discovered that whether comparing appearance or ambience, that Imperial Concubine Hua couldn't

possibly compare to Empress An Rong. Did that mean...for all those years, he had been possessed by a ghost, so obsessed that he had lost his rationality?

Comparatively speaking, Imperial Concubine Hua was only a 28 year old girl. Although she provided a fresh, stimulating experience, she didn't understand love, and couldn't possibly move the Emperor's 50 some year old heart. The only person that could ever touch and soothe his heart was An Rong alone. No other person could do it.

Seeing the crying Emperor, the Grand Empress banged her cane and angrily shouted, "Do you feel regret now? But what use is that? What were you doing before? A woman that loved you so deeply repeatedly suffered from humiliation because of you, eventually forcing her to such a point. How could she possibly bear to continue living?"

In a daze, the Emperor stared at Empress An Rong and dumbly mumbled to himself, "That's right...I'm the one who pressured her to death, I'm the one who hurt her!"

The Grand Empress continued to rant, "I don't care how happy and carefree you live your life. The Empress never minded either. I once told her that as long as your heart still belonged to her, there was no need to be too upset about anything else. However, now your heart is clearly no longer with her. To a woman, a married woman, that is even more painful than death. Faced with your heartlessness, what could she do aside from die? Living like that would've been far more painful than dying!"



The Grand Empress seemed to get angrier and angrier the more she spoke. With a few more bangs of her cane, she continued, “A man should not abandon his wife that has passed through tribulations with him. As a man, and the Emperor, you can live as free and easy a life as you want. But being so cold as to cast your own pledged wife to the side is too much of a sin. How can the current you ever face the ancestors of our Holy Light Imperial Family in the future?”

Suo Jia couldn't help but inwardly smile to himself when he saw how grieved the Emperor and the Great Empress were. In reality, all of this had been planned by him. Regardless of whether it was the Emperor's sudden appearance, or the Grand Empress's unexpected entrance, Suo Jia had entrusted them all to Duke Wen Sha to arrange. With Duke Wen Sha's power and status, he naturally had friends within the country. Although there were some things he couldn't do, such minor tasks were still doable. Thus...Suo Jia had set up this series of stratagems one after another.

At this point, all of Imperial Concubine Hua's plots had failed and been exposed. However, this was only the beginning. What Suo Jia wanted to do wasn't just to defeat Imperial Concubine Hua; if he couldn't help the Empress regain the Emperor's heart, it would be a failure.

People were always like this. When using something, they never knew to cherish it. But once lost, they would realize how precious it was. Empress An Rong's death was also planned by Suo Jia. In reality, she could still be resurrected. Hehe...having putting so much effort, he deserved some type of reward, right?

Suo Jia cleared his throat and loudly said, “Can anyone tell me how Her Highness died?”

Everyone simultaneously turned to look at Suo Jia after he spoke. One of the servant girls softly said, “Her Highness died by swallowing a crystal!”

Furrowing his brows, then seemingly performing some calculations with his fingers, Suo Jia muttered, “Hm...it hasn’t been that long. There should be some way to save her!”

## Chapter 156: Planned In Such A Way (Part 2)

---

The Emperor abruptly jumped up and hurriedly rushed to Suo Jia, anxiously asking, “What? You said that there’s a way to bring Empress An Rong back to life?”

Suo Jia nodded in response to the question, “There’s about a 50% chance!”

Hearing the news that the Empress could be saved, the Emperor’s face couldn’t help but light up with happiness. He reached out to grab Suo Jia’s hand and urged, “Hurry! Hurry up and save Empress An Rong! If you can save her, I will definitely reward you generously!”

Suo Jia smiled and said, “I alone am not enough. I can only take responsibility for retrieving the crystal. If you want to save her, you’ll still need a Light element Great Mage!”

“That’s not a problem. I’m a Light element Great Mage, so I’ll accompany you. Go ahead and tell me...what should I do?”

Suo Jia couldn’t help but secretly smile to himself when he saw how anxious the Emperor was. This was precisely part of his plans. If Suo Jia resurrected Empress An Rong by himself, it would be hard to prevent the Emperor from getting suspicious about using the trick of injuring oneself to gain the other party’s confidence. Only by allowing the Emperor to personally witness and confirm that the Empress had indeed died, and let him personally resurrect her, would he be able to completely believe the scenario.

Suo Jia walked up to Empress An Rong. As he saw her two hands folded neatly in front of her chest and her rosy, serene face, Suo Jia couldn't help but sigh in praise. Even when dead, this woman had made herself so beautiful, intentionally seducing the Emperor. This wasn't something that Suo Jia had told her to do.

Suo Jia closed his eyes and stretched his hands out, moving them in a circle in the air above Empress An Rong's body. Suicide by swallowing a crystal meant that, although the Empress had died, her face was still rosy, and didn't impact her beauty at all. Actually, death by swallowing a crystal was a type of punishment in the palace. Many imperial concubines had been sentenced with this penalty so that they wouldn't draw any people's suspicions.

However, Suo Jia had warned the Empress repeatedly that before swallowing the crystal, she had to drink more water. Otherwise, no matter how powerful Suo Jia was, it would be extremely difficult for him to draw the swallowed crystal back out. As long as she had consumed enough water, Suo Jia could use his water manipulation to retrieve the crystal.

Under the anxious gazes of the Emperor and the Grand Empress, Suo Jia slowly waved his hands around. The next moment... Empress An Rong's throat seemed to move. Her lips then parted ever so slightly, and a blue crystal glowing with a hazy light appeared in her mouth!

"My God!" Seeing how massive the gem was, Suo Jia couldn't help but cry out in shock to himself. That thing was just too precious; it was a Great Frost Wurm's crystal core! It was a

completely priceless treasure. The only way to obtain it was to kill a Great Frost Wurm, but retrieve it while it was still alive, since a Great Frost Wurm disappeared shortly after dying.

He snuck a glance at his side. At the moment...the Grand Empress and the Emperor were both completely focused on Empress An Rong; neither of them cared about the crystal core at all. Suo Jia then made his decision; since they didn't care, Suo Jia wouldn't hold back. He swiftly reached out to grab the crystal core in the Empress's mouth, and with a flip of his hand, he tossed it into his interspatial ring.

Actually, Suo Jia simply wasn't aware that not all the palace maids committed suicide by using such precious crystal cores. This was something that only the Empress had the qualifications to use. Swallowing a Great Frost Wurm's crystal core kept the body from decaying for thousands of years. In addition, one would be able to maintain their face's appearance of when they were still alive!

After putting away the crystal core, Suo Jia hurriedly retreated, and said to the Emperor, "Ok, now you need to immediately cast the Resurrection Technique. You have a 50% to bring the Empress back to life!"

As a Light element Great Mage, the Emperor naturally knew whether Suo Jia's words were true or not. Just as Suo Jia had said...the Resurrection Technique could indeed bring a person back to life. But based on Empress An Rong's time of death, there was only a 50% chance of success. In addition...if he couldn't save her with his first attempt, it meant that her soul had already escaped. No matter how many more times he tried, it would no

longer be of any use.

Although the Resurrection Technique could be used infinitely, in reality, if it failed after the first attempt, any number of future attempts would also fail. If the person could be saved, a single attempt would be enough. Since An Rong had just died, there was still a chance to bring her back to life before her soul scattered. The Emperor could only pray to the Heavens to bless An Rong in hopes of making sure her soul hadn't left her.

Seeing the Emperor pray so fervently, Suo Jia couldn't help but secretly feel satisfied. Actually, the Empress had only just died. Although she had indeed swallowed the crystal, she had actually only swallowed it down when she had heard their approaching footsteps. But right after the Grand Empress and the Emperor had arrived, Suo Jia had also come, and he had taken control of the swallowed crystal with his water manipulation, making sure that it didn't land in her stomach. Otherwise, she would've instantly died!

The Resurrection Technique had an 100% success rate on a completely intact body that had just died. However, if too much time passed after the initial death, then there would be no hope of revival, even if a god himself descended.

Suo Jia was actually stuck in a really difficult position. First, the Empress had faked her death, and just now, when Suo Jia acted, she had really died. Not even a minute had passed in between, and there was a surefire chance of successful resurrection within 10 minutes. There was absolutely no room for concern.

After praying for a while, the Emperor suddenly stretched out his hand and in that instant...a holy scepter appeared in his hands. As he looked at the jade-like, sparkling and translucent scepter in the Emperor's hands, Suo Jia couldn't help but drool with desire. Wasn't this an Epic ranked staff that boosted light magic by 200%? With it, An Rong would have a hard time dying even if she wanted to.

The Resurrection Technique could only be used on a dead person. If used on a live person, nothing would happen; the spell wouldn't even produce any light. There was absolutely no way to activate it!

As the Emperor began to move...a pure and holy glow arose from the scepter, swiftly entering the Empress's stomach. The next moment...the Empress's body suddenly lit up, her entire body enshrouded by the layer of pure, holy light.

Everyone knew that whether it would be successful or not would depend on that moment. Time seemed to crawl; a second suddenly felt longer than an hour.

Finally, as everyone impatiently awaited, Empress An Rong's eyelashes moved. Her brows also furrowed slightly. It was evident...that the Emperor's Resurrection Technique had succeeded! However, the newly resurrected Empress couldn't immediately awaken. She had to sleep for a bit to cultivate her injured soul before being able to regain consciousness.

The Emperor let out a long breath, and wiped off the sweat on his forehead as he looked at Suo Jia with a grateful look. Only then did he suddenly realize that this child wasn't from within the palace;

the palace didn't have such young children.

The Emperor knit his brows in suspicion and said in a powerful voice, "Who are you? Why are you in the palace? How did you enter?"

Suo Jia smiled at this and said, "You're kidding? You don't even know who I am? You really aren't doing your job properly then, to not even recognize your wife's lover, ai...."

"What? Her lover!" The Emperor and the Grand Empress couldn't help but cry out in shock.

Suo Jia looked at their shocked faces and patted himself on the chest as he loftily replied, "Don't doubt your ears; I am indeed the male lead in this sex scandal, Her Highness's lover!"

They stared at Suo Jia, dumbstruck. If Suo Jia had been this rude before, they would've dragged him out to behead him in a heartbeat. However, it was evident that at the moment, neither the Emperor nor the Grand Empress had such a bad temper. Suo Jia had just saved the Empress, so no matter how sinful he was, they'd still have to suppress their angers.

The Resurrection Technique was not unrivaled. It was impossible to resurrect someone that had died by swallowing a crystal unless the crystal core was removed. Otherwise, the person would die once more the instant they were revived. Although one could also surgically open the stomach and remove the crystal core, people that normally went through this process typically couldn't be



saved with just the Resurrection Technique. Their injuries would be too severe, and nothing could possibly save them.

With a frown, the Grand Empress indignantly demanded, “Don’t think that you can say whatever you want just because you’re a young child. This matter concerns the Imperial Family’s dignity, so you’d better act more sincerely. Hurry up and say...who exactly are you?”

Suo Jia smiled bitterly and shrugged. He helplessly spread his hands and said, “Even if nobody else knows, how could you, the Grand Empress, not know? Although the Empress hadn’t notified the Emperor when she left the palace this time, she did tell you. Right now, there are rumors of a sex scandal stating that the Empress went out to take a lover. I’m precisely the male that the Empress went to go seek. If I wasn’t her lover, who else could I be?”

“What!” The Grand Empress’s eyes suddenly lit up as she urgently asked, “You’re the legendary Sage Doctor, Suo Jia?”

“Sage Doctor Suo Jia?” Suo Jia repeated the words in confusion and asked, “I don’t know if I’m a Sage Doctor or anything, but my name is indeed Suo Jia, the owner of Holy Light City’s White Villa!”

The Grand Empress nodded in understanding, and replied, “Then that’s right, it definitely is you. The reason the Empress left the palace this time was firstly, to visit the Fourth Prince and help him choose a bride, and secondly, to find you!”

“What...what is going on?” The Emperor cried out after he heard the Grand Empress’s words. He had just realized that there seemed to have been something concealed from him!

# Chapter 157: The Advantages Of Women

## (Part 1)

---

Seeing that the Emperor was currently dazed, the Grand Empress said unhappily, “You...you even suspect your wife, who you’ve been married to for so long? Could it be that you still don’t know what kind of person An Rong is?”

The Grand Empress shot a piteous glance at An Rong and said, “As the child’s mother, if the Fourth Prince decided on a wife, how could she not go visit him? If she, the Empress, didn’t take of matters regarding the Imperial Family’s face, who would? Only after she is satisfied can the girl enter the palace to meet you and me. This is what an Empress should be taking care of.”

“But...but why didn’t she tell me before leaving? If she had, there wouldn’t have been so many misunderstandings!” The Emperor hurriedly replied.

“Tell you?” Suo Jia looked at the Emperor in disdain and said, “From what I know, you had already given the Empress the cold shoulder for over 3 years. Even though you met her every day, the two of you didn’t speak. How could the Empress tell you under these circumstances? Moreover...this is something that only involves the chamber of concubines, so only the Grand Empress needs to know. Aren’t the external palace matters supposed to be handled by the Emperor, and the internal palace matters handled by the Empress? Your Majesty shouldn’t bother with housework-related issues. After all...it isn’t like Your Majesty has 3 heads and 6 arms. Your energy has its limits; how could you possibly concern yourself with everything?”

”

“That’s right!” The Grand Empress continued, “The Empress’s every action has been upright and honest. She hasn’t overstepped her boundaries in any way. Yet despite this, you still suspect her so harshly. It’s because your tolerance is too low, and you have a vile character by your side! I suspect that this so-called scandal was really just spread by that Imperial Concubine Hua, because the one who benefits from it the most would be her!”

“No! No way...she isn’t that type of person!” The Emperor fiercely shook his head at this accusation. No matter what, he refused to believe this.

The Grand Empress pursed her lips, but didn’t bother elaborating any further. Although she had no evidence, she could tell what the truth was based on her own experiences. Even without solid proof, she was already certain about the specifics of the situation. Imperial Concubine Hua had to die; she had committed too many sins.

It was clear that the Emperor was still concerned by Suo Jia’s words, and he frowned, “Why did An Rong go to find you? I don’t think she’d have anything to seek you about.”

“Oh!” Hearing the Emperor’s jealous tone, the Grand Empress’s mouth twitched as she said, “You really are something, to be jealous of a 10 year old! Clear your mind a bit. Even if An Rong was secretly courting someone, why would she look for a 10 year old

child?”

Hearing the Empress’s words, the Emperor instantly came to a realization. That’s right...no matter how precocious this child was, it wasn’t like he could get an erection at his age. Even if An Rong was indeed immoral, nothing could’ve happened between them. Suo Jia was still a mere child.

Having calmed down, the Emperor inquisitively asked Suo Jia, “Please excuse me for wrongly blaming you earlier. However, I’m still curious; why did she go to look for you?”

“Ai...” With a sentimental sigh, Suo Jia said in a pained voice, “Why else? Your wife knew that her husband’s heart had already left her, so she came to find me to help her beautify her appearance and recapture your heart. However, she hadn’t imagined that although she had regained her former beauty, she had already lost your heart. Having lost everything important to her, death was probably the best way for her to free herself.”

The Emperor couldn’t help but shake when he heard Suo Jia’s words, and he turned around to look at the woman lying on the bed. He had never known that this woman’s love for him was so deep, deep to the point where the moment he didn’t love her back, she couldn’t even bear to keep living. For a moment, the Emperor felt the burden on his shoulders grow extremely heavy. This burden he carried was having to care for his wife’s thoughts.

However, now he saw himself from a different angle. For the sake of a moment of joy, he had lost himself and cast aside his feelings, not caring about anything, much like a child. He had

simply been pursuing the joy of \*\*. How could he possibly repay his wife, who had waited for him with such deep love? It was a good thing that he had already resurrected An Rong; otherwise, he would've lived the rest of his life in guilt and shame.

The Emperor once again turned back to look at Suo Jia as he said incredulously, "Someone as young as you has such high abilities? This is really hard to believe. I was wondering how An Rong had become so beautiful, so it was a result of your work?" The Emperor asked this with an expression of disbelief on his face.

Seeing the Emperor's expression, the Grand Empress banged her cane and angrily said, "Don't shame yourself any further. The person standing in front of you is a super genius that only appears in Holy Light Empire once every 1000 years. At the young age of 8, he had already defeated powerful enemies as a water elemental mage, and become the champion of Holy Light Academy's King of Kings tournament. Moreover...he successfully made Emma and Wen Ya lose weight."

The Grand Empress shot Suo Jia a look of admiration, then continued to speak to the Emperor, "You know Emma and Wen Ya, right? They were both exceedingly fat and ugly. But now, with Suo Jia's help, they are Holy Light City's pair of peerless beauties. That's why you must not underestimate him. In addition...did what he revealed just now not help you realize the truth?"

The Emperor couldn't help but feel his heart shake at these words. Based on his knowledge, separating and retrieving something from the body wasn't something anyone else could do. Crystal cores were really heavy, and after the person's death, the

esophagus shrank, so normal abilities weren't enough to force it out.

“Alright!” The Grand Empress coldly said, “Everyone should leave this place. An Rong needs to recuperate. Right now...I need to go deal with that slut, Imperial Concubine Hua. If anyone dares to side with her, I'll penalize you together with her!” The Grand Empress cast a severe look at the Emperor. These words were clearly directed towards the Emperor.

The Grand Empress turned around to leave. Seeing this, the Emperor couldn't help but panic. He wordlessly opened his mouth, but was unable to bring himself to speak. Helpless, he could only run after the Grand Empress.

As the crowd of people left, the room became quiet. Seeing that there were no people around, Suo Jia pushed all the maids out. The next moment...Empress An Rong slowly opened her eyes, waking up in a half-conscious state.

After letting Empress An Rong rest for a bit, Suo Jia said in low voice, “At the moment, the Grand Empress is punishing Imperial Concubine Hua. You must immediately rush over and go save her!”

“What!” Hearing Suo Jia's words, Empress An Rong, who had just regained consciousness, cried out in shock. “She stirred up so much trouble, and humiliated me to this extent, and hurt me so badly. Why would I go save her?”

With a sinister smile, Suo Jia coldly replied, “Why are you so

silly? Think about it; if Imperial Concubine Hua just dies like that, a barrier will form between you and the Emperor. No matter what, you won't ever be able to return to the state of your former days."

After a slight pause, Suo Jia continued, "Moreover, even if you kill off Imperial Concubine Hua, a second concubine like her will appear. Will you be able to just keep killing your way through? Even if you did, how could the Emperor think highly of someone like that?"

Tightly knitting her brows, Empress An Rong said weakly, "But if I let Imperial Concubine Hua go like that, what'll happen if she harms me again? Wouldn't that be breeding a future calamity?"

"Hehe...." With a proud smile, Suo Jia explained, "After re-experiencing a taste of what he had previously loved, the Emperor won't dare to hurt you anymore. I can use my life to swear that as long as you don't make any principle mistakes, nobody will be able to take your Empress position from you."

Suo Jia continued, "You have to show the forgiveness and magnanimity an Empress should have, and make sure not to say anything bad about Imperial Concubine Hua. Think about it...if you're so generous, won't the Emperor feel guilty? At the same time, if you are so magnanimous and Imperial Concubine Hua is still trying to slander you, how do you think the Emperor would feel?"

Suo Jia said with a voice brimming a confidence, "Moreover, the current you isn't any uglier than Imperial Concubine Hua. Actually, you're much prettier than her. In that case, why are still



concerned that the Emperor will not return to your side?”

# Chapter 158: The Advantages Of Women

## (Part 2)

---

“Haha....” The Empress smiled and shook her head, “You’re still young, so you don’t understand. That woman...isn’t just beautiful. To any man, the joy that a woman brings is the most important factor. I’m already old, so my body has grown loose. It’s no longer as tight and firm as before, so I can no longer bring that type of joy that would allow the Emperor to experience seventh heaven. That’s why the Emperor sticks so closely to Imperial Concubine Hua.”

“Loose?” Suo Jia shook his head and said, “That can’t be, Your Highness. How have you become loose? After my procedures, your skin is as soft and tender as a young girl’s. It can’t possibly be loose.”

“This...” Faced with Suo Jia’s question, the Empress couldn’t help but hesitate. What she had been referring to wasn’t her skin, but a woman’s shameful parts. It had absolutely no relationship to her skin.

Seeing the Empress’s embarrassed expression, Suo Jia couldn’t help but frown and asked in confusion, “What exactly are you talking about? Can you speak more clearly, I don’t understand!”

Seeing Suo Jia’s puzzled expression, the Empress couldn’t help but laugh. Only at this moment did she realize that no matter how intelligent he was, he was still only a 10 year old child. There were many things that he hadn’t yet experienced, and many things he had yet to understand.

Having realized this, the Empress no longer felt embarrassed. As she was nearly 50 years old, Suo Jia was about the age of her grandson. There was nothing for her to be embarrassed about when he was the same generation as her grandson. Moreover... educating the young was one of the Empress's duties. Otherwise, it would be very easy for them to run around unrestrained.

The Empress said in a low voice, "Suo Jia, have you seen a girl's body before?"

Suo Jia firmly nodded and replied, "I have, of course I have. I've seen it hundreds of times, actually. They're all my classmates, so we often bathe together."

Nodding in understanding, the Empress continued, "Then...have you ever noticed the differences between boys and girls?"

After pondering this for a while, Suo Jia replied, "Girls don't have little \*\*!"

With a smile, the Empress nodded and continued, "That's right, girls don't have little \*\*. But they also have some unique parts as well. Have you seen a girl's lower body before?"

Vigorously shaking his head, Suo Jia replied "I've seen it from a distance. It seems like there's some type of crack there, but I never looked at it closely."

After thinking about this for a while, the Empress clapped her hands together. Hearing this familiar sound, a few maids immediately entered the room. They respectfully lowered their heads and waited for the Empress's commands.

“Rui'er, you stay behind. Everyone else, leave!” The Empress coldly ordered.

Following her orders, the other maids left the room. Afterwards...Empress calmly said to Rui'er, “Alright, Rui'er, take off your clothes.”

Rui'er shot a conflicted look at Suo Jia, but she soon realized that the Empress was already starting her lesson. And the model this time would be her.

Although she was extremely embarrassed and unwilling, how could she disobey the Empress's commands? Rui'er's hands shook as she reached out to undo her clothes in embarrassment. Soon...a slim, beautiful female body appeared in front of Suo Jia.

If it were any other male, their hearts would race, and they'd blush furiously at such a scene. However, Suo Jia didn't show any signs of these reactions, and only looked at Rui'er with a pure and interested gaze. His gaze was so clear that nobody would dare to look into his eyes closely.

What happened next doesn't need a description. Basically, the Empress used Rui'er as a model to explain the parts of a girl's body. She even led Suo Jia closer to Rui'er's shameful parts for a more

detailed explanation. She then brought Suo Jia's face closer to the girl's most mysterious part, and thoroughly explained it, as well as what significance each part of a girl's body had.

Listening to the Empress's words, Suo Jia's jaw dropped open wider and wider. It was only at this moment that he finally realized that...girls had so many other wonderful uses, that...his little \*\* could get hard, and could even be inserted into...

With a smile, the Empress waved her hand to dismiss Rui'er. She then indifferently said to Suo Jia, "Do you understand now? Although my skin has been recovered to its former youthfulness, my body has grown older. This is inevitable, time is merciless to people!"

Listening to the Empress's words, Suo Jia regained his senses, and slowly shook his head. Suo Jia threw out the image of Rui'er's mysterious field of flowers out of his mind, and started to deeply ponder the Empress's problem.

After a while, Suo Jia suddenly said, "Your Highness, I think...I can still help you. In reality, it was only your flesh that had lost its elasticity. If I used water manipulation, accompanied by the Moisture Technique, I have confidence that you would regain your former glory; you could even advance it one step further! The feeling of tenderness and tightness would definitely not be inferior to any other woman's!"

"Ah!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Empress couldn't help but cry out in shock, "Heavens! Is that really true? Can you really do that?"

Rolling his eyes at the Empress, Suo Jia said in annoyance, “Can you stop doubting me? Even if you do doubt me, at least wait until I violate a promise before doubting me. Anything I say I will definitely do. In contrast, if I can’t do it, then I would never say I could!”

Suo Jia gestured at the Empress to lie down on the bed. He then pressed the air above the Empress’s lower body, and closed his eyes to use his senses and closely examine the water distribution within the Empress’s body. Then...he took control of the water content and began to work.

As Suo Jia began to move, the Empress felt a refreshing feeling flush through her lower body, and was seemingly able to feel her body’s state. As it gradually improved, it no longer felt as filled and heavy as before, and the sudden lightness almost made her moan.

Not long after, Suo Jia moved his hands away and smiled, “Alright, with regards to the muscle mass here, there are not as many as the fats. You shouldn’t be too anxious about this; as long as you apply Moisture Technique on this part everyday, what I said will definitely come true! It’s just that there are some special parts that you will have to pay attention to.”

Suo Jia carefully explained that it was actually quite simple. First, a Moisture Technique had to be activated on the lower body, and then with the help of appropriate massaging skills, the Moisture Technique’s effects could reach its crucial point. That way, her lower part would become moist and tight.

One couldn't underestimate these methods. If Suo Jia hadn't gained such a frighteningly precise knowledge of the water distribution in a person's body, he definitely couldn't have come up with such a method. Moreover, without the aid of these supplementary methods, the Moisture Technique's effects wouldn't be able to reach so deeply into one's core.

For the next few days, everything went exactly as Suo Jia had planned. The Empress had first spoken on behalf of Imperial Concubine Hua, begging the Grand Empress not to kill her. The reason was that the Emperor needed Imperial Concubine Hua's service, her body, to vent out his feelings and demanded the comfort of her body.

Seeing such a sensible Empress made both the Emperor and the Grand Empress look at her with admiration. However...although Imperial Concubine Hua hadn't been sentenced to death, she had been demoted to a servant girl. Although she was a female servant that catered especially to the Emperor...no matter what, she wouldn't ever be able to become the Empress anymore. How could the Emperor marry a slave and let her become Empress?

In addition, just like Suo Jia had anticipated, the hate-filled Imperial Concubine Hua continued to say bad things about the Empress in front of the Emperor. However, the Emperor had acted exactly opposite of what she had hoped. He was extremely tolerant, gentle, and considerate, especially now that the Empress had the help of the most beautiful and alluring appearance in the world, which further captured the Emperor's heart.

In terms of relationships, Imperial Concubine Hua was

incomparable to the Empress. In terms of good looks, Imperial Concubine Hua couldn't compare either. The only thing she was victorious over Empress An Rong was her skills in bed. The youthfulness and tightness of her body was something that brought great pleasure to the Emperor.

However, this had all been within Suo Jia's calculations. He had first helped the Empress regain the Emperor's heart, and then... what Suo Jia wanted to gain was the Emperor's favor. With Suo Jia's help, Empress An Rong had not only returned to the tightness during her former glory, but also advanced even further; Empress An Rong firmly believed that any man that experienced her would immediately lose their souls. At the moment, she was so moist and tight, tender and soft, that it could kill any man. She had even personally tested it with her finger.

Hence, in a week...under a clever arrangement, the Emperor couldn't resist Empress An Rong's temptation and went to bed with her. As a result...for three days in a row, the Emperor refused to come out from the Empress's room, and stayed within Empress An Rong's shabby residence. He didn't even care about other matters. As to what he had been doing, nobody actually knew. But...does it even need to be asked? Aside from that, what else would it be?



## Chapter 159: Enchanted Zhiyao (Part 1)

---

The two lovers that had been deeply engrossed with each other finally remembered Suo Jia's existence. Unfortunately, by the time they had finally decided to go outside the palace, Suo Jia had long since left. He didn't have the patience to wait for them there; the Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes would return in a few days. There were still many things that he needed to tell them, so he didn't have the time to dilly-dally around in the palace.

As for what happened to Imperial Concubine Hua, nothing really needs to be said. She hadn't seen the Emperor for three consecutive days. Imperial Concubine Hua...oh, wait, she was actually no longer an imperial concubine, but a mere female slave. Yet despite her low position, she still blocked the Emperor's path, throwing a childish tantrum at him. However...the Emperor was currently in an extremely intimate relationship with Empress An Rong, so how could he possibly pay any mind to Hua?

Oftentimes, women blame men for being merciless and heartless. But really, if a woman captured a man's attention with her body, once he became tired of her body, why would he ever be reluctant to leave her side? There are no actual feelings between them.

Of course, like the saying went, 'the first couple gets 100 days of grace', the Emperor couldn't treat Hua too badly either. He had made the Empress move back to the Eastern Palace, and allowed Hua to live in An Rong's old, run-down room for a few days. After experiencing a taste of An Rong, the Emperor no longer had any interest in Hua.

With the combination of her affection, appearance, good looks, personality, elegance, and body, as well as the feeling of her \*\*, An Rong had long since cast off Hua to the side. Hua, who only knew how to bewitch the Emperor with \*\*, had lost her only advantage, so being abandoned was inevitable. Nobody pitied her, because events like this had occurred often since ancient times. Moreover, these types of things would continue to occur in the future.

On the other side, Suo Jia returned to Holy Light City. Although he had left for a few days, he felt that the place hadn't changed at all. The Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes hadn't yet returned. Helpless, Suo Jia could only begin training once more.

The next few days passed without incident. Finally...three days after Suo Jia's return, a letter arrived. Suo Jia's contributions had been immense this time; uncovering Imperial Concubine Hua's evil schemes and making them no more had allowed Suo Jia to be promoted to the special rank, a Knight!

Afterwards, Suo Jia had helped the Empress many times to re-establish her relationship with the Emperor so that they were just as affectionate as before. This contribution was also extremely great, and granted Suo Jia the special promotion to being an Advanced Knight!

Finally, because Suo Jia had saved the Empress and showed loyalty and bravery, as well as having not requested any return for his meritorious deeds, his behavior was so excellent that he was promoted to the highest Knight rank. He had even been granted a piece of land!

“Holy crap!” Seeing the thick grant, Suo Jia gaped at it in a daze. He had really hit the jackpot this time. In reality, Suo Jia had already gained quite a few things this time. Just the Great Frost Wyrms crystal core alone, which was said to be its Nei Dan, was already a priceless treasure. Now, he had even been promoted 3 noble ranks, and been granted a piece of land. This was like inheriting a city! Such grants of land normally had a city as their core.

Without question, the Emperor had honored his promise. He was indeed extremely generous. However, Suo Jia knew that the Empress definitely had played a large role in these awards. Without the Empress’s pillowtalk, Suo Jia would’ve never been able to even imagine gaining so many benefits from this. Aside from the last reason among the official three reasons for Suo Jia’s rank promotion mentioned earlier, the other two reasons were really pushing it. How could those be considered as meritorious deeds? They were a bit too simple.

Since the Empress was so generous, Suo Jia wouldn’t be petty either. After pondering for a while, Suo Jia picked up a pen and wrote a letter of reply to the Empress. Within the letter, Suo Jia mentioned several suggestions.

The first was that the Empress could only sleep with the Emperor once a month, and never surpass twice a month. As a man, the Emperor needed to rest for at least a week in between, as his energy had limits. That’s why the Empress had to pursue quality over quantity. Even if the Emperor begged for more, the Empress would have to push him towards his concubines. Moreover, this could be beautifully claimed as being for the sake of maintaining the peace and stability within the harem and the family.

That way, after tasting the Empress's "goods", it would be hard to go back to the "tasting" of the concubines. After a while, the Emperor would gradually distance himself from all other women, and only want the Empress. That way, hehe...who would dare to oppose the Empress? And wouldn't the Emperor definitely love her then?

After receiving Suo Jia's reply, the Empress's level of admiration towards Suo Jia really deepened. These things may have seemed simple, but who else would've thought of them? Typically speaking, concubines hated spending too little time with the Emperor, since they were afraid of being forgotten. However, Suo Jia had used reverse psychology. If one craved something, but wasn't allowed to eat it, wouldn't showing sympathy to that person make them so grateful that they'd end up crying tears of emotion?

Besides, what was good? And what was bad? Everything was comparative; there was no 'bad', so how could something be 'good'? And if there was no 'good', how could something be 'bad'? Suo Jia had already mastered the art of understanding people's hearts.

The Empress knew that Suo Jia had helped her way too much. If it weren't for Suo Jia, she probably would've actually committed suicide. But now, she'd not only regained everything, but her life had even improved for the better. She had reached the impossible realm of her dreams. The Empress knew that if she wanted to maintain this realm, Suo Jia had to continue helping her. Without him, the Empress would quickly age, which would make staying by the Emperor's side difficult once more.

However, although the Empress really wanted to properly thank Suo Jia...the rewards this time were really too much. He not only got threefold the rewards, he'd even had an exception made for him and received a grant of land. That was normally an opportunity that only those that had achieved exemplary military service could obtain.

Helpless, the Empress could only go to the treasury once more, and choose some Legendary ranked water elemental equipment to send over to Suo Jia. As for Epic ranked equipment, the treasury still had some, but no matter how powerful the Empress was, she couldn't just empty out all of the country's treasury. She had to keep some of the treasures to display the imperial family's power. Nobody could ever have too many Epic ranked sets; these things couldn't be carelessly given away. Moreover, they weren't things Suo Jia could use anyways.

After receiving a few of these equipments, Suo Jia's mood naturally became a hundred times happier. However...these equipments clashed with Suo Jia, and so he couldn't use them. Unable to do anything about it, Suo Jia gifted the magic equipments to Aimi and Aila instead, greatly boosting their strengths and level of training.

Ever since Aimi and Aila had become his personal attendants, they had been working very hard. If they weren't meditating, they were training in the Ice and Snow Pact every day. And if not doing that, they'd be practicing their magic activation. Aside from training in the Ice and Snow Pact, they'd also walk around outside. They would spend half of their time every day in the underwater training area, so it was monotonous and tedious.

It had to be admitted that these two girls were talented, and had much more power than Suo Jia. Moreover, they were those peak-level talents that appeared only once a century. Their training speeds were much faster than Suo Jia's. If he didn't have the aid of his magic equipment, Suo Jia would've surely been tossed aside by the girls in a distant place, completely forgotten.

This world was just like that. There were always people luckier than others. Some spent their lives eating with gold spoons, or had superior talents that were acute and ingenious, and could understand three different things after learning only one. However, some people were naturally stupid. Their bodies were weak, and they'd learn things three times before actually mastering one, only relying on diligent practice to make up for everything

It was a good thing that, although Suo Jia couldn't qualify as a superior talent, he was at least a well known figure among the geniuses. It could even be said that he was lacking when compared to those above him, and was far superior when compared to those below him. With the addition of Epic ranked equipment, as well as a few Legendary ranked equipment, his training speed was quite fast. It couldn't be said to be one of the fastest in history, but the only ones that would've possibly been faster than him were the Epic ranked Heroes.

Originally, according to Suo Jia's current level of training, it wasn't supposed to be long before he would've far surpassed his two classmates. However, after receiving the gifts from the Empress, he'd linked them to the girls, making them into abnormally strong talents. Although their training speeds were

still slower than Suo Jia's, they weren't far behind. In reality, once they reached the later stages, the focus of magic wouldn't be the training of magic and spirit powers, but rather one's magic comprehension!

The gifts from the Empress included a female crown, a bracelet, a ring, a necklace, and a pair of earrings. Originally...the Empress had thought of them as things for Suo Jia to use when pursuing girls. However, she hadn't imagined that he would've directly given this whole set of jewelry to Aimi and Aila.

The things that the Empress had chosen were based off of her own tastes, so they were all for females. Moreover, she knew that Suo Jia had the water attribute, so it was perfect for the girls to wear. Since Suo Jia wasn't willing to use items designed for girls, he could only give them away. After all...if they grew stronger, they'd be a major help to Suo Jia.

A few days later, the franchise fees for selling Life Potions were received. Suo Jia used this cash to buy items without restraint. He visited various commerce unions, as well as auctions, to gather items that would help increase the girls' training speeds. As for himself, Suo Jia didn't bother obtaining many items, since Legendary ranked and Epic ranked equipments interfered with each other when they were used at the same time.

After the two girls put on the entire set of Legendary ranked equipment, their training speeds had already reached, and even surpassed, Suo Jia's. Combined with their special talents, it wouldn't be long before their might was above Suo Jia's.

Sitting upright within the secret room, Suo Jia pondered the matter to himself. At the moment, his power group had already been established; the 36 fire wind warriors, in addition to the water mages, Aimi and Aila, would become his assets that he'd use to wander around the Greater Trade Routes in the future!



## Chapter 160: Enchanted Zhiyao (Part 2)

---

Suo Jia placed heavy importance on money, but the only reason he did was because he knew that money could buy magic equipments, and even Epic ranked equipments. This would improve their training speeds and boost their strengths. As the proverb stated, 'the preparation before action is extremely important'. This was a saying that Suo Jia strongly believed in!

It was possible for Legendary ranked equipment to occasionally react to each other by coincidence, resulting in them linking to each other and producing entirely new effects. That's why Suo Jia wanted to gather such a large amount of Legendary ranked equipment, and then compile a set of mutually interlinked Legendary equipment. That way, its power wouldn't be much less than an Epic ranked equipment set's.

In regards to Aimi and Aila, their current trainings speeds had risen by quite a bit. Their original strengths had thus increased exponentially. Although they couldn't compare to an expert because they were still young, and hadn't trained for very long, going against an ordinary opponent was no longer a problem.

Seeing the two fully armed girls, their bodies lit up from the glow of the Legendary magic equipments, Suo Jia could already imagine just how formidable they would become in the future. Combined with Suo Jia, as well as the 36 Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes, they would be invincible.

However, simply equipping the two girls had consumed quite a bit of the astronomical amount of money he had gained from

franchise fees. This money had come in fast, but had been used up even faster. The instant it was placed in his bag, it was spent.

At this point, Suo Jia no longer needed to concern himself about anything related to the two girls. What happened next would depend on how hard they worked. No one could tell what level they'd end up reaching.

However, Suo Jia had a headache over the 36 Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes. There were so many of them, and they used equipments that mixed both elements of wind and fire. Unless he custom ordered something to be made for them, no magic equipment would be suitable for them to use!

As he pondered this, Lan Ruo's figure appeared at the doorway, and she said in a low voice, "Young Master, the adventure union has sent a message. They've already found the magic book explaining Magic Spring!"

Hearing this news, Suo Jia grew extremely excited. Without saying another word, he rushed straight to the adventure union to retrieve the thick magic book, then immediately retreated back to his secret room.

Magic Spring was a water magic that could raise one's magic power recovery speed to a frightening realm. Within a few short seconds, the user could recover 50% of their magic power! However, this required consuming 50% of their spirit power!

Magic power was extremely important to a mage, but spirit

power was just as essential. Without spirit power, no matter how high one's magic power was, one wouldn't be able to activate magic. Typically speaking, if a person ran out of magic power, they wouldn't have much spirit power left either. Suo Jia was like this, as was everyone around him.

It was precisely due to this reason that both the Magic Spring and the Sweet Spirit Dew, magics that possessed effects that most mages yearned for, were rarely used. Thus, it wasn't included in the list of universal magics that were taught. It was to the point where almost nobody in the world actually trained in this magic.

However, Suo Jia was different. He could use Enchantment Zhiyao whenever he wanted to create large amounts of potions that could be used in battle. In reality, both the Magic Spring and Sweet Spirit Dew seemingly originated from researching Enchantment Zhiyao, as they were extremely compatible with each other.

Suo Jia flipped through the book and carefully read it. After a while, he couldn't help but grow more excited. This book included the Magic Spring, Sweet Spirit Dew, and the Origin of Endurance. This...

Seeing the spell arrays that seemed to be written in undecipherable scribbles, Suo Jia's head seemed to swell up. This spell formation wasn't difficult, but the symbols on the formation were. It was completely different from the symbols of other water magics, and much more complicated. Although there were only three symbols in total, these symbols were more like drawings rather than text.

With no other options, Suo Jia closed his eyes, and quietly began to memorize the three spell arrays. After a long time...Suo Jia finally opened his eyes. With a wave of his right hand, the center of the palm of his blue glove began to emit bright blue streaks, and sketched out the array as fast as lightning. In the blink of an eye, a glowing blue spell array appeared within his palm.

As he looked at the blue mist that had appeared above his head, Suo Jia couldn't help but shake his head and sigh in admiration. This glove was really too amazing. Using his consciousness to draw the array was much faster and more accurate than drawing by hand!

Memorizing a picture was easy, and sketching out the lines of the diagram was also easy, but using the hand to draw out the mental image was difficult. The difference was as great as 108,000 miles.

With the help of the blue glove and the earrings and such that were Epic ranked magic equipment, Suo Jia's magic activation speed was extremely fast. Activating the Sweet Spirit Dew or the Magic Spring took Suo Jia only around 3 seconds. If he removed his equipment, he'd have to spend 5-6 seconds, or else he couldn't ever hope to activate it. If he didn't use the special activation method he had developed, then activating the spell within 10 seconds would already be considered the level of an expert.

Moreover, Suo Jia was surprised to discover that after activating the Magic Spring, he had only consumed about 10% of his spirit power. In general, aside from the amount consumed upon activation, Suo Jia hadn't used up any more of his spirit power.

The symbols in these diagrams wasted tons of spirit power. If one didn't draw it exactly, it couldn't be activated.

In reality, these three related spell arrays were more like paintings than formations. Unless a person was like Suo Jia, who had the aid of the Epic ranked blue glove, they wouldn't be able to learn this magic even after several years. In addition, it also depended on their talent. If they didn't have any talent, they wouldn't ever be able to learn it. It was just like painting; if the person wasn't talented, they would never in their lifetime become an outstanding painter. The standards for the spell array's symbols were quite strict, to the point where one could say that it was excessive.

Suo Jia then mastered the Sweet Spirit Dew, which consumed 50% of his magic power to recover 50% of his spirit power. However...Suo Jia's body of Epic ranked magic equipment wasn't just for show; it allowed him to reduce most of the magic power consumption. After activating the Sweet Spirit Dew, Suo Jia was able to confirm that it only consumed around 10% of his magic power instead.

The last one was the Origin of Endurance. It was meant to simultaneously consume 25% each from magic power and spirit power, and recover 50% of his physical power. After a test run, he was able to determine that the consumption was still only around 10%. This meant that Suo Jia could do other things!

Suo Jia removed a small instrument from his interspatial ring. This instrument was only about the size of one's head, and was made from steel and wood. From its outer appearance, it was easy

to see that it was similar to the large machine in the underwater training area.

That's right, in reality, the underwater training area's large machine had been arranged for the 100 girls to use simultaneously. However, this one was a personal Enchanted Zhiyao machine that only one person could use at a time.

Suo Jia then re-opened his interspatial ring to take out the icy core that he had obtained from the palace. This was the Great Frost Wyrms crystal core that the Empress had swallowed to commit suicide. If he needed to condense coldness, then he had to use a cold-attribute water elemental crystal!

"Hm?" After fishing out the crystal core, Suo Jia furrowed his brows in confusion. Something about it seemed off; why had it gotten much heavier? When he inspected it more closely, he saw that his odd, blue pet was currently using its four limbs to tightly hug the egg-sized crystal!

"Holy crap!" As he doubtfully looked closer, Suo Jia couldn't contain his cry of shock. What was this? Could it be...that this little pet had finished his evolution? But...how had this happened? When Suo Jia saw the little pet hug the Great Frost Wyrms crystal core tightly with an avaricious look on its face, Suo Jia scratched his head in confusion. This...was this still his little Frost Wyrms?

## Chapter 161: Class Testing (Part 1)

---

Previously, the little pet could be said to be closer to a bat than a dragon. It once had a tiny body that contrasted with its enormous wings. At that time, it had looked like a bat no matter what angle one looked at it from. If it was flying around at night, there was no way one would suspect that it was a dragon!

But now, although the little pet's wings hadn't changed, its body had undergone a major transformation. Previously, its entire body and wings together made it no larger than one's fist. However, now its body alone was the size of a fist. Adding on its two wings, it had now grown to the size of two fists at the very least.

What shocked Suo Jia the most was that, having seemingly eaten something unknown, the little pet's stomach had grown quite a bit. It now looked extremely full and round. It was no longer covered by soft skin; although it was still flexible and smooth, it was now covered densely with thin scales that glowed a bright blue.

"A Quack Chicken that has lost its feathers?" That's right... at first glance, it did indeed look like a plucked Quack Chicken. Its body was plump, and its wings were fleshy as well. Looking at it now, Suo Jia was beginning to suspect that it couldn't even fly up into the air.

As Suo Jia studied it, the little pet alertly opened its eyes, and cautiously watched Suo Jia. Its four claws hugged the crystal even tighter, and it was evident to see that it was afraid that Suo Jia would take his treasure away from him, despite clearly knowing

that the treasure actually belonged to Suo Jia.

Originally...since the little pet seemed to like something so much, giving the item to it didn't seem like that big of a deal. However, this Great Frost Wurm's crystal core was probably the only one that existed in the world. In addition...this crystal core was the highest level crystal core in the world as well; nothing could be compared to it. Not using this cold-condensing core would practically be a sin!

One couldn't underestimate this cold-condensing core. It had an impact on the effects of Enchantment Zhiyao, and was equivalent to a mage apothecary's staff. The higher the grade of the condensed magic fluid that the cold-condensing core produced, the better the effects. In other words, there was no cold-condensing core in the world better than this one. Suo Jia didn't want to exchange it for anything, and there was nothing that could possibly be exchanged with it anyways.

After pondering this, Suo Jia directly placed the crystal onto the machine, completely ignoring the little pet still sprawled across of it. He then began to activate and channel the Magic Spring at the core.

First, he manufactured five bottles each of Magic and Spirit Potions. Although a typical person would have to consume 50% of their magic or spirit power per activation of the spell, Suo Jia only used 10%, so he was able to perform this task with ease! After creating these potions, he still had half of his magic and spirit power remaining.



Suo Jia then created 5 Endurance Potions in succession. In that moment, his magic and spirit power were completely drained at the same time. However, Suo Jia wasn't concerned; he picked up a Magic Potion, and quickly swallowed the contents in the bottle. Just as he was prepared to drink his second bottle, he suddenly paused.

Originally...one bottle of Magic Potion could only recover around 50% of the user's magic power. The recovered amount was set. However, Suo Jia suddenly discovered that after drinking only one bottle, his magic power had been completely replenished!

This was the first time that Suo Jia had personally used Zhiyao techniques, so he didn't really have any experience. He also didn't know exactly how much the Great Frost Wurm's icy core had helped. However, Suo Jia did know that a single bottle of Magic Potion had already recovered all of his magic power, and he had probably wasted some of the Magic Potion too.

Suo Jia then drank a bottle of Spirit Potion. As Suo Jia had expected....his spirit power was instantly replenished as well. Some of that had definitely been wasted as well, but he didn't know how much.

Regardless of whether it was Magic Potion, Spirit Potion, or Endurance Potion, the amount they replenished the user by was a set amount. For Suo Jia, it was either magic power and spirit power each 50%, or the two summed to 50%. However, to any other person, it was a single value. The higher level the mage apothecary, the stronger the potion they produced was. A high level mage apothecary had to have high magic, spirit power, and a

good Zhiyao machine, because if anyone used the potion they produced, the replenished amount would use half of the mage apothecary's levels as its base.

In other words, if a Mage Saint drank a potion created by an Intermediate Mage apothecary, he probably would not feel any effects at all. The tiny bit of magic power the Mage Saint recovered would be negligible. However, if an Intermediate Mage drank a potion created by a Mage Saint apothecary, he would probably waste over 99% of its effects.

Of course, although mage apothecaries had existed in this world before, they had essentially all disappeared thousands of years ago. The class was really too unprofitable. A mage apothecary spent pretty much all of their time manufacturing potions, and that was practically their life partner. They used up their own magic power to help replenish others' during battle.

It could be said that there were only 2 people that were suited to be mage apothecaries in this world. The first was the Atlantis Emperor, and the other was Suo Jia, since he was the user of the Atlantis set. Without reconstructing the Atlantis set, how could Suo Jia make a few bottles of potion per day?

Moreover, this Enchantment Zhiyao wasn't something that anyone could learn. A person could study it for their entire life, and still be unable to produce a single bottle of potion. Some people were successful, but had to spend 30-40 years studying it. The only exceptions were those that had that mysterious blue glove, which the Atlantis Emperor and Suo Jia possessed. Only then could they learn Enchantment Zhiyao so quickly, and activate

it immediately.

A mage apothecary was an extremely formidable class. Manufacturing potions for years meant that one tempered their magic and spirit powers to an extreme level. A mage apothecary was actually an abnormal existence; once they had trained to a certain realm, they'd be able to produce potions without rest. If they ran out of magic and spirit power, they could use their own potions to replenish it. Although the consumption was large, and the results were limited, they'd be able to manufacture potions endlessly. What did this mean?

A mage apothecary would seldom use other magics throughout their entire life. In addition, these magics were all related to creating the potions. However, their proficiency with other magics, their magic power, and their spirit power were all top ranked compared to other mages. When attacking, they could activate the three great magics: Magic Explosion, Spirit Fission, and Body Disintegration.

In reality, if someone ceaselessly activated Magic Spring at a person, the person's internal magic power would increase to extreme levels, and then explode. This was Magic Explosion. Similarly, if one's spirit power rose to levels that were too high, their spirit would undergo fission and split apart, and they'd become crippled. Naturally, that meant the Body Disintegration was when one's physical power exploded, leading to \*\* organ failure.

However, such powerful existences were really too rare. Even a person that managed to master only one of these three great

magics would probably have spent their whole life to do so. In addition, even if 100 people tried to learn them, there might not be a single person that ended up successful. As for learning all three great magics at the same time, this was something that had never been heard of before.

That's why this class, although considered OP, had never produced any OP experts. It was only a theoretical existence. Unless three mage apothecaries worked together, there was no way for the three magics to appear at the same time. However...where was one supposed to find three mage apothecaries?

Fundamentally speaking, these three great magics were destined to be impossible to popularize. They consumed too much inner magic and spirit power, to the point where one would have to meditate for half a day in order to completely recover. As one's strength increased, the time they were required to spend for recovery also grew longer. At such a rate, there could possibly come a day where one could only produce 2 bottles of potion per day! The other time would all be spent on meditating to recover.

But Suo Jia was different. With the help of the Atlantis set and his unique magic activation method, he had lowered the spell's consumption rate by a substantial margin. That's why he could definitely become an unprecedented potion farmer!

Potion farming was constant work. For example, one would make 5 bottles of Magic Potions, then 5 bottles of Spirit Potions, and finally 5 bottles of Endurance Potions. Afterwards, one bottle of each would be consumed to return one to their previous, completely recovered state, and then they'd begin making potions

once more. This process was repeated continuously!

Actually, all mage apothecaries trained this way. However...they spent majority of the time using the potions they created to exchange them for other types of potions. For example, producing Magic Potions required the exchanging of Spirit Potions and Endurance Potions, while producing Spirit Potions required the exchanging for Magic Potions and Endurance Potions.

Suo Jia stayed in the room for the entire day. After using up a large amount of magic crystals, 30,000 bottles of various colored potions appeared in front of Suo Jia. The blue water elemental crystal powder had been condensed into Magic Potions, the yellow wind elemental crystal powder had been condensed into Spirit Potions, and the green earth elemental crystal powder had been condensed into Endurance Potions. Now that he had 30,000 bottles of potions, hehe...

Different potions had to be stored in different bottles. Magic Potions required water elemental magic, spirit potions required wind elemental magic, and Endurance Potions required earth elemental magic. As for Life Potions, they used fire elemental magic. The potion type could be distinguished after a single glance, which was precisely why potion effects could be maintained for eternity, and even slowly improve.

Suo Jia left the secret room to go ask Lan Ruo if she had any news. After learning that nothing had happened, Suo Jia quickly rushed back to the secret room once more to continue making potions. The first reason for doing so was because he had nothing else to do, and secondly...after spending all of yesterday making

potions, Suo Jia had discovered that his magic and spirit powers had faintly increased by a tiny bit. Although the feeling was hazy, Suo Jia was sure that it wasn't an illusion.

As expected, after another day had passed, there were already 70,000 potions sitting in front of Suo Jia. At the same time, Suo Jia could now clearly sense that his magic power had increased by an increment! It had gone up by about 3%. Such an improvement rate was a bit too extreme, right?

In order to confirm that it wasn't an illusion, Suo Jia left the White Villa and headed towards Holy Light City's class union. There... he would be able to confirm his qualifications as a mage, as well as take tests that measured his magic power, spirit power, physical power, and even the formidability of his magic!

## Chapter 162: Class Testing (Part 2)

---

Upon arriving at the class verification union, Suo Jia received a warm welcome. The only reason for this was because they were frequent customers at the White Villa, so the people there were extremely familiar with Suo Jia. The branch head here in particular visited the White Villa several times every week.

Typically speaking, a Mage Apprentice could be served by any random receptionist. However, Suo Jia's identity and status were different. Suo Jia was now the highest ranked Knight. He could be said to be an aristocrat even when compared to all of Holy Light City.

Moreover, everyone knew that the creation of the White Villa wasn't just for the sake of money; more importantly, it was for the purpose of allowing Suo Jia to open up communications and advance in the aristocratic circle. That's why Lan Ruo was extremely close to any potential customers Suo Jia would end up having. Although Suo Jia had never interacted with this old man before and had only met him a few times, the old man had always been told by Lan Ruo while he was waiting for treatment that everything was arranged by Suo Jia.

People are strange creatures. For the sake of face, they would be willing to break necks. If you invited a group of good friends to the highest quality luxury place to eat a meal, the restaurant's manager would come over to deliver incomparably valuable dishes, and even say that it had been gifted by the boss when he had heard of your arrival. The boss was currently busy, and didn't have the time to visit, but hoped that you wouldn't blame him. Then when you paid the bill, they'd give you large discounts. That

way, you'd have face, and have gained benefits. Wouldn't you inwardly feel grateful towards the boss?

Actually, the White Villa had stopped making money ages ago. Especially after gaining Enchantment Zhiyao, the business had suffered losses. Although the entrance fee required large amounts of money, they were ensured worthwhile services, and could enjoy greatly valuable food. This was something that no place else could provide. Not making any money was fine, but losing money was unacceptable.

However, Suo Jia's Life Potion could be said to be a major product. The rate at which he made money was even faster than printing money, and completely ignored those small losses. That's why, contrary to beliefs, Suo Jia's image and status in the aristocratic circle had become number one.

One would have to feel grateful for Lan Ruo and the other maids, who had been trained in their work since they were young, as they could meticulously win favor over someone. On the whole, the White Villa's service was no longer the best in just Holy Light City; even when compared to the rest of the world, nobody would dare to claim that there was any place more luxurious, more high end, and have more lavish services than the White Villa had!

In addition, the current White Villa no longer received common people anymore. Anyone without any bit of rank, status, or family background, didn't have the qualifications to walk through the door. This place had already become the place for aristocrats to interact with each other. Those that entered the White Villa had to have some kind of verification of their identity and status.



Seeing the middle-aged man in front of him act so warmly made Suo Jia feel slightly touched. Suo Jia knew that this was all due to Lan Ruo's efforts. In reality, the White Villa was currently becoming the nobles' own dining halls. Eating there didn't require money. No matter how much money was given, they would always return it. In addition, all the nobles felt that only they could receive such treatment. After all...who had imagined that the White Villa would not only not make money, and instead sustain losses? No such businesses existed.

At the moment...this branch head that was currently over 60 years old, but looked only 40 some years old, was currently regarding Suo Jia with great admiration, worshiping this younger one. The man had gotten quite a few favors from Suo Jia. He now visited the White Villa multiple times a week to eat to his heart's content. Now that Suo Jia had a use for the old man, the old man would have to put his all to help Suo Jia. Otherwise, it was possible he would no longer be able to enter the White Villa. Not being able to eat wasn't a big deal, but not being able to enter the White Villa was extremely shameful, to the point where all the aristocrats might ridicule him.

After inquiring what Suo Jia's reason for visiting was, the branch head immediately patted his chest to show that he'd personally help Suo Jia conduct the class tests. Actually...this was just a mere formality. The class authentication processes couldn't be faked regardless of who performed it; nobody would dare to do such a thing.

Following the branch head's lead, Suo Jia entered the testing room. As soon as he entered, Suo Jia saw a violet light curled

around a crystal ball about the size of a basketball. An old mage wearing a mage robe was sitting there with his eyes closed, clearly meditating.

The branch head was the senior official, so he casually hit the table, waking up the old mage. He then grandly introduced Suo Jia, and told the old mage to test Suo Jia's magic power!

With a nod, the old mage pressed his hands on the crystal ball enshrouded by the violet light and told Suo Jia, "Knight Suo Jia, please place your hands on the crystal ball!"

Suo Jia wordlessly complied. The next moment... the old mage's magic power rushed out, causing the entire crystal ball to suddenly light up. As the violet glow expanded, the old mage said in a low voice, "Knight Suo Jia's total magic power is 779 moles; you are an Advanced Mage!"

After muttering to himself for a bit, the old mage continued, "Knight Suo Jia's spirit power is 763 spirit calories; you are an Advanced Mage!" The old mage retracted his hands.

The old mage then slowly opened his eyes, and took out a form to quickly write something down. Soon after...the old mage fished out a Mage Stamp and stamped it down onto the form a few times. He then passed the form to Suo Jia and said, "Alright. Now bring this form to go test your magic's formidability. If nothing unexpected happens, you should be able to retrieve an Advanced Mage Emblem."

“Aiya!” The branch head cried out in astonishment, “Congratulations, Knight Suo Jia. You’re really amazing to have trained to the realm of an Advanced Mage at such a young age. It seems.... that within the next year, you can become a true mage!”

Suo Jia smiled and nodded. He knew what the branch head meant. When he said a true mage, it didn’t mean that Suo Jia wasn’t currently a mage, but rather it meant the next rank. After the Advanced Mage, he would be a Full-Fledged Mage, then a Great Mage. It was nothing more than the title of the class only.

In reality, Suo Jia couldn’t actually count as a Full-Fledged Mage yet. If anyone asked what his current level of strength was, he’d have to explain everything: was he a Mage Apprentice or a Mage Trainee, an Elementary Mage or an Advanced Mage? Most importantly, an Advanced Mage was not necessarily an Advanced Full-Fledged Mage. There was no higher or lower ranks for the Full-Fledged Mage, only the difference in power. Above the Full-Fledged Mage was the Great Mage rank, and then above that were the Scholar/Magister ranks.

Following behind the branch head, Suo Jia entered another testing room. As time passed, Suo Jia took one test after another, including the auxiliary magic test, the defense magic test, and the attack magic test. Suo Jia easily passed all of them, and eventually received the Advanced Mage Class Emblem.

500+ moles and spirit calories meant that one was an Advanced Mage. However, a Magician had at least 1000 moles and spirit calories; if even the slightest bit less, one wouldn’t meet the standard qualifications.

In terms of the formidability of his magic power, Suo Jia had no way of testing it himself. However, he could definitely test his own magic and spirit powers. But...this required an auxiliary magic item: the Violet Crystal Ball!

The Violet Crystal Ball had many uses. Witches could use them to forecast, mages could use them to measure, and could even use the crystal ball to shoot out special magics. It had an extremely high value, and was something that the average person couldn't obtain. Only the magic union could create a crystal ball of that type.

Suo Jia abruptly stopped in his tracks when he arrived at the entrance. After some hesitation, he said in a low voice, "Um... branch head, can I ask you if you have any extra crystal balls here? I would like to buy one so that I can assess my training level at any time!"

The branch head couldn't help but hesitate at Suo Jia's request. A crystal ball was not only expensive, but also had special features. Typically speaking, they couldn't be privately given away to others. However, since Suo Jia had personally requested it, how could the branch head go back to the White Villa in the future after rejecting Suo Jia's request?

After thinking for a bit, the branch head tightly clenched his teeth and leaned closer to Suo Jia to reply, "I have a personal, small-sized crystal ball that I can give you on behalf of our close relationship. However, you must keep it a secret. If someone discovers it, you must not say that I was the one who gave it you; otherwise, it will be extremely troublesome for me."

# Chapter 163: The Strongest Battle Skill (Part 1)

---

After receiving the crystal ball from the branch head, Suo Jia rushed back to the secret room. He sat cross-legged on the ground, and pulled out the fist-sized Violet Crystal Ball. From the exquisite crystal ball frame, Suo Jia could tell that this was definitely part of the branch head's private collection. The fact that he was willing to be generous enough to give it to Suo Jia was quite surprising. However...Suo Jia obviously wouldn't take it for free; he would definitely repay the old man in the future.

Suo Jia quietly closed his eyes. His spirit power and magic power mixed together and quickly rushed into the Violet Crystal Ball. The next moment...Suo Jia's spirit power was able to sense everything within the Violet Crystal Ball. Following the gauging methods that the branch head had explained to Suo Jia, he was soon able to find out his own magic power and spirit power measurements.

As expected, the numbers were precisely 779 and 763. Suo Jia gently opened his eyes; he knew that once his powers reached 1000, he'd be able to become a Full-Fledged Mage. At the moment, he was still missing around 200, so he had to continue to work hard.

Suo Jia didn't dare to waste time, and he took out his alchemy machine to frantically begin making potions again. The small machine quickly swallowed large amounts of magic crystals, popping out bottle after bottle of potions that formed a messy pile in the corner of the secret room.

Some time later, when the number of bottles in front of Suo Jia had already passed 200,000, Lan Ruo rushed into the room to tell Suo Jia that the girls had finally come back!

Hearing this news, Suo Jia hurriedly ordered all of the girls to enter the secret room. He then closed the pathway; that way, nobody could overhear their conversation.

Seeing the 36 girls covered with red and gold cloaks, Suo Jia furrowed his brows and asked, “Didn’t we decide that you’d come back after half a year? Why did it take you over 8 months?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words and seeing his grim expression, the girls couldn’t help but feel their hearts tremble. Although Suo Jia had grown a year older, he was still only an 11 year old child. Yet in terms of power and influence, he seemed to be growing in each passing day.

After muttering to herself for a bit, #1 straightened her body and respectfully replied, “We apologize, Young Master Suo Jia. We were too absorbed in our training and forgot to keep track of the time. By the time we had realized the time, it was already too late.”

“Oh?” Suo Jia let out a breath at #1’s words. The thing he was most afraid of was that these girls wouldn’t treasure time, and go around playing carefreely. This would really be showing ungratefulness to everything he had done for them. But if it was because they were concentrated in training, then it wasn’t that big of a deal if they were off time.

Suo Jia said in a low voice, “Tell me, how did you girls pass the time during these last 8 months? What did you do? What kind of progress and results did you gain?”

#1 respectfully replied, “These past 8 months, we’ve been going back and forth at the edges of the Magical Beast Forest. While familiarizing ourselves with our special equipment, we were also practicing our battle skills. At the same time, we were able to kill many magical beasts and retrieve their crystal cores.”

#2 continued, “We have used too much of Young Master’s money, so we wanted to hunt some magical beasts, so that we could sell the magic cores and make up for some of Young Master’s losses. However...our strength still isn’t enough, and we are still not able to hunt the extremely powerful magical beasts. That’s why, even after spending 8 months, we weren’t able to earn much.”

Suo Jia smiled and nodded, “Alright, I’ve received your good intentions. However, I want to emphasize that money isn’t something you girls need to concern yourselves with. The only thing you should be worried about is putting all your efforts into increasing your strength. Strength is most important; wealth is simply a materialistic possession. It isn’t something you need to waste your time thinking about.”

Suo Jia paused for a bit before continuing, “Alright, now tell me: how familiar have you girls gotten with your armors the past 8 months?”

#1’s eyes lit up as she excitedly replied, “There hasn’t been a

single problem, absolutely no problems at all. This set of armor is really amazing. After all, it was customized specifically for us, and uses the best materials. Even if we weren't used to it, we would still be able to utilize it. The only difference between the two would be the amount of might that we can draw from it."

Pausing to take a deep breath, #1 then continued to report, "After the last 8 months, we're finally able to grasp 30% of this armor's might. Moreover...the most important part is that we managed to create a completely linked Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes set!"

"What!" Suo Jia abruptly stood up, staring at #1 in disbelief. Although Suo Jia knew that two magic equipments could link together, he hadn't imagined that they could actually all be compiled into a complete set. Didn't this make the armor a bit too powerful?

What shocked Suo Jia the most was that one could only combine the armors with 49 of them. That meant if he wanted to give Aimi and Aila compiled sets of Legendary ranked equipment, it would be extremely difficult. He'd need over a hundred sets to do it!

After thinking about it for a while, Suo Jia suddenly lifted his head and asked #1, "Where is the completely linked together equipment set right now? Who's using it?"

#1 turned around and searched among her sisters for a bit, before reaching out to pull a girl with an extremely good figure towards her. "Right now, that equipment set is on her!"



“Eh!” The girl had an extremely sexy body, with a slim waist and a large chest, alluring to the point where it was on the level of a succubus’. However, Suo Jia was only slightly uncomfortable. Of course, he hadn’t been enticed, but he felt that this girl was too strange; why was her chest so large? It was practically the size of his head. Wasn’t that too abnormal?

To a mature man, just seeing this girl would make them lose their senses. However, to Suo Jia, who was only 11 years old, no matter how slim her waist was, how round her butt was, or how large her chest was, he wouldn’t think of it as beauty. Rather, he’d think of it as abnormal! Only after tasting a woman’s beauty or suddenly understanding love, would he understand what sexiness was. Only then would he be able to enjoy it.

Actually, if this girl walked around the streets without her cloak hiding her figure, everyone would be stunned into a daze. What Suo Jia thought was an abnormally sized \*\* would be a fatal enticement to mature men. That deep valley was enough for their souls to leave them.

However, what made Suo Jia more at ease was that her wind attribute made her curves extremely smooth. From another angle, that could also be said as a type of beauty. Overexaggerated beauty was something that Suo Jia had difficulty accepting.

She was alluring and lovely, extremely bountiful, and her every action exuded the charm of a female. It was a pity that Suo Jia had no way of enjoying it. By the time he was able to, hehe...

Suo Jia turned around to ask #1, “Why did you give her the best one? Aside from having a larger chest, slimmer waist, and a rounder butt, does she have any other special traits?”

“Eh!” The alluring and charming, yet sexy girl, couldn’t help but feel embarrassed. Who spoke like that? What did he mean by ‘larger chest’; that was a girl’s shameful part. How could anybody just talk about it like that in front of the person?

#1 said firmly, “Young Master, she’s the most gifted among us sisters. She not only has the super innate skill, Southern Emperor’s Mythical Flames, she also has the skill, Eastern Emperor’s Divine Winds. Either one is already enough to make her a superior warrior. Now that both great skills are combined in her body, she will definitely become a true goddess of war in the future. That’s why this armor has to be hers, because only then will she be able to help Young Master to her utmost limit!”

Suo Jia’s eyes lit up at #1’s words. Originally...Suo Jia had been envious of Aimi and Aila. They both had peak-grade innate talents that only appeared once every century. However, the two of them combined still paled in comparison compared to this girl.

Both the Southern Emperor’s Mythical Flames and the Eastern Emperor’s Divine Winds were also super innate skills that only appeared once a century, yet now they had both assembled in a single person. How were others even supposed to live after knowing this?

Suo Jia shook his head as he sighed in admiration. He now knew that his Fire Phoenix Earrings and Fire Phoenix Necklace had

finally found their rightful owner. If this girl wore both of these great pieces of magic jewelry, her strength would probably enter the upper realms. In addition, it would help her future training and growth by an incomparably large amount.

#1 continued, “Also, aside from this one set, we also switched parts of the sets amongst each other. Now, every person has the strongest link they can have. In other words, each of us have gained a powerful battle skill! It’s a very crazy, very overpowered, and very explosive battle skill! This is enough to make us become the most powerful, unequalled corps in the world!”

## Chapter 164: The Strongest Battle Skill (Part 2)

---

“Oh?” Suo Jia excitedly said, “Hurry up and tell me, what exactly is this battle skill? It’s actually so powerful?”

Chuckling, #1 proudly declared, “Because of the special effects of this equipment set, we can simultaneously use the fire and wind elemental battle qis on our weapons. We can use the wind to boost its speed forward, and use the fire to increase its explosive attacks. After hitting the target, the fire and wind battle qis will simultaneously burst out. The wind intensifies the fire, and the fire adds to the wind’s might. This can erupt into a formidable, destructive power!”

Without saying another word, Suo Jia stood up and led all of the girls to the back gardens. Based on #1’s description, Suo Jia had learned that this attack could cover a distance of 100 meters. Once activated, it would be as fast as lightning, and could conquer any obstacle. For the sake of testing the might of this magic, they needed to go to a wide, spacious area; even the underwater training area was too small.

Placing a magic target onto a tree branch, Suo Jia and the girls retreated backwards 100 meters. Suo Jia then pointed to the magic target stuck onto the tree branch and said expectantly, “Ok, now you can start practicing. I will await seeing it with my own eyes!”

#1 took a deep breath and stepped forwards. She pulled out the war blade from her back, and the next moment...gold and red colored battle qis wildly gathered around the blade, causing it to

glow both colors simultaneously.

“Hiya!” After storing the energy for 2-3 seconds, #1 suddenly gave a loud shout. She wildly waved her right arm, and in that moment...the large war blade whizzed out, turning into a radiant reddish-gold light that instantly crossed the 100 meter distance, accurately and sharply exploding the magic target.

“Boom!” A powerful bang resounded, and Suo Jia couldn't help but stand there, dumbfounded. The violent attack had shattered not only the magic target, but the entire large tree that the target had enshrouded, exploding it to the point where it was completely smashed to pieces! At the moment...the war blade was currently stuck deeply into a large rock behind the tree. Only the shaking hilt remained outside the rock.

Suo Jia dumbly stared in a daze at the tree that had been completely torn apart. He knew then that this attack was really too fierce. Although the range was a bit short, its speed and might were really ridiculous.

This attack speed was the fastest that Suo Jia had ever seen. It had instantly surpassed the 100 meters distance, leaving behind a bright, thin streak of red and gold in its path between #1 and the large tree that remained there for quite a long time before dissipating. Suo Jia could tell that this was the light formed by the remnants of his vision that had caught the extremely fast attack. From this, he knew that this attack was really too crazy. If a smaller weapon was used and the glow could be hidden, it would be impossible for the naked eye to follow.

Not only was it extremely fast, its attack power was also extremely high. Although the fire and wind attributes restrained each other in some ways, they also boosted each other in other ways. The wind intensified the fire, and the fire added to the wind's might. When the two exploded together, the attack not only had mighty penetration and shock accompanied by it, a powerful explosion was also induced. Thus, the entire, large tree had burst into pieces when the attack had hit it squarely in its center.

Suo Jia knew that the girls hadn't gained much comprehension of this attack, and they had no proficiency with it to speak of, so there was no way they could use all of its power and display its true might. In addition, the girls' current strength was still quite low; if their strength became more formidable, the skills they used would also improve. In that case, how powerful would this attack become?

That's right, the range of the attack would gradually increase, and its speed would gradually go up as well. Its might would slowly grow stronger, and the explosion's perimeter of attack would also widen. Just as #1 had said, if this attack was mastered, they'd really become an unrivaled corps!

#1 said with regret, "Unfortunately, this attack consumes too much battle qi. Every time we use it, it requires us to use 20% of our battle qi, so after using it 5 times in row, we'd completely lose our ability to battle."

"Hehe..." Suo Jia chuckled darkly and said in a secretive tone, "Don't worry about that, just come with me..." As he said this, Suo

Jia immediately began to head toward the secret room, the girls following closely behind. One by one, they entered the room.

Pointing at the piles of various colored bottles lying all over the ground, Suo Jia smiled and said, “Each of you should store some. Remember, store 3000 of each type; there are enough. Don’t take too many, and don’t take too few. Otherwise, there won’t be enough to divide amongst you all.”

The girls stared blankly at Suo Jia for a while, before eventually opening each of their interspatial rings, and crashing sounds could be heard as they poured out all the magical cores stored inside. Not long after, the remaining space in the secret room was completely covered with piles of various colored magical cores. Then...all the girls began to store the little bottles on the ground into their rings as Suo Jia had instructed.

Suo Jia couldn’t help but stare in shock at the large piles of colorful and glittering magic cores covering the ground. The crystal cores that the girls had poured out were of various sizes, and filled half the secret room. The volume it took up was at least 36 cubic meters!

Suo Jia couldn’t help but bitterly smile at this scene. Now, he finally understood; each girl’s interspatial ring could store a total of 1 cubic meter of items. Only after filling all of the rings had they recalled the agreed time to meet up with Suo Jia. If the space the interspatial rings could contain was slightly larger, they probably would’ve still been out hunting magical beasts in the Magical Beast Forest, unaware of the time. This could increase their strength, allow them to familiarize themselves with their equipment sets,

and earn large amounts of money; it was really too addicting!

While he was thinking this, all the girls had already stored the bottles that Suo Jia had instructed them to. They gathered in front of Suo Jia, and looked at him doubtfully. They were unable to understand: just what exactly were those strangely colored bottles supposed to do?

Seeing the questioning gazes of all the girls, Suo Jia didn't bother to explain, and instead directly led all the girls to the underwater training area. There, he commanded each girl to store 1000 Life Potions each. Only then did he nod in satisfaction. This way, unless all the potions were used up, the girls would be able to keep fighting without stopping.

After all the girls had regathered, Suo Jia said, "All of you, listen closely; of the small bottles you just stored, the red ones are Life Potions. If you're injured, then just drink a bottle, and it will be equivalent to receiving a single Hydration Technique's healing. The wounds will completely restore themselves within a short amount of time!"

Hearing these words, the girls couldn't help but become wild with joy. This was really too amazing; now that they had these Life Potions, it was equivalent to bringing along a water mage with them. Whenever they battled from now on, the amount of strength they could use would no longer be affected by minor wounds.

As the sea of girls was currently still enjoying the pleasant surprise, Suo Jia fished out a blue bottle and continued, "This is a



Magic Potion. If your battle qi is ever completely used up, drink this bottle, and it will completely replenish all of your battle qi within a few seconds.”

“Wa!” The girls cried out in shock. This was too extreme; wouldn’t that mean they’d have inexhaustible battle qi? Wasn’t that practically cheating?

Seeing the girls’ shocked expressions, Suo Jia then fished out a yellow bottle and said, “This is a Spirit Potion. No explanation is needed; if you feel that your spirit power can’t last much longer, then drink a bottle, and your spirit power will flare!”

“That...” Mostly likely because the blow had been so great, the girls no longer knew how to react. A sharp cry? Or...

Smiling, Suo Jia fished out a green bottle and laughed, “This is an Endurance Potion. If you feel dead tired, drink a bottle of this, and you will immediately be as lively as a dragon and as animated as a tiger!”

Hearing this, the girls fell into a dead silence. After a long time, #1 cautiously asked, “That...that means that unless we’ve used up all of these potions, we can basically continue fighting without a limit in our strongest state?”

Firmly nodding, Suo Jia excitedly replied, “That’s right, it’s exactly so. As long as you haven’t used all the potions up, you can fight without end. If you consume each of the four bottles every minute, then you can continue fighting for 16 hours straight!”

“Holy crap!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, even the more refined girls in the group couldn’t help but swear in exclamation. This was really too OP. They wouldn’t feel pain, and they wouldn’t have restrictions on their battle qi, spirit power, and endurance. Could they still even count as humans? Especially with the help of the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes, they had basically become as tenacious as cockroaches.

# Chapter 165: Is This Showing Love? (Part 1)

---

Despite seeing the dumbstruck group of girls, Suo Jia's expression was completely undisturbed. He tossed the small bottle in his hand, and narrowed his eyes, "You don't need to be that shocked. Our objective is the Greater Trade Routes, so using some unusual things is to be expected."

Suo Jia suddenly raised his head to stare hard at the girls in front of him and said, "Originally, I had prepared to go out with you all this time to practice. However, I've changed my mind. Our most important task right now is to earn money to maximize equipment. Once every one of us possesses a set of Legendary ranked or higher equipment, it will be time for me to leave."

The girls' eyes all lit up at Suo Jia's words. At first, these words didn't seem very significant or amazing; wasn't it just a set of Legendary ranked equipment? However, when considered closely, they realized just how ridiculous this was.

Suo Jia's one set was different from other's. He included jewelry, armor, weapons, and anything that carried magic cores within them. Otherwise, how could the Angelic Six Winged Phoenixes' currently worn sets be said to be incomplete?

Ten sets of armor and weapons were already together. It wasn't only above Legendary ranked, but even half an Epic ranked. However, this didn't include high-grade jewelry, so it couldn't be called complete in Suo Jia's mind.

But the question now was, aside from the Fire Phoenix set, no other magic equipment specially created for the fire wind girls to simultaneously boost the fire and wind attributes existed in this world. Suo Jia knew that if he wanted to gain such things, then he had to go find a blacksmith and create them from scratch!

All magic armor and weapons were crafted by a blacksmith; this was without question. However, all pieces of jewelry were made by alchemists, and all potions were created by mage apothecaries with Enchantment Zhiyao. If one wanted to obtain something, they'd have to go find the appropriate person to do so.

Originally, Suo Jia had prepared to adventure with the girls. But he knew that he had to first resolve the problem with these pieces of jewelry. Although alchemy still existed, learning it wasn't a mainstream practice. During the last world war, too many alchemy techniques had been lost. There were no longer any people that could create outstanding and superior grade alchemy products anymore.

Although Suo Jia could still technically bring the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes adventuring through the Greater Trade Routes, this was too rushed. Lacking an entire set of jewelry to aid them meant their strength would have a gap of two times, or even greater. In addition, their training speed would slow down by twofold. This wasn't a result that Suo Jia wanted to witness.

Moreover, Suo Jia had also considered other things in his decision to stay behind. Firstly, he hadn't yet managed to gather all the pieces of the Atlantis equipment set. Secondly, the Fire Phoenix set hadn't been completed either. Thirdly, he hadn't yet

earned enough money. Fourthly...he had prepared to test out some alchemy techniques. If he could learn it, he would be able to customize a set of jewelry according to the girls' measurements and unique traits.

And the last reason, as well as the most important one, was that Suo Jia didn't think that he could follow the current Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes; their speed was just too fast. They were able to rush through routes of thousands of miles in just a single week. As a water mage, Suo Jia couldn't possibly keep up with them. Thus, Suo Jia had already decided that once he broke through to the Great Mage realm, he'd be able to go out and travel.

Suo Jia stressed, "Also, you will continue to deliver goods for me. Within a short amount of time, you need to earn as much money as possible, and raise your strength to the greatest level. At the same time...raise your levels as a merchant group, mercenary group, and thief group!"

"Ah!" The girls all cried out in astonishment. After staring blankly at Suo Jia for a while, #1 murmured, "Young Master, our current levels of strength are still too low. There's no way we can become a good merchant bodyguard group. If we try again, we'll be faced with the same problems we did before."

"Hmph!" With a snort, Suo Jia coldly said, "There's no way that would happen. This time... you don't even need to escort them. Your first and foremost task will be to earn more money. That's why...you won't be escorting mercenary groups, but acting as thieves. I want you to steal as much as possible without stopping! Hehe...it's no big deal, looting the money is much faster."

“But...” #1 frowned and said in concern, “If nobody protects the merchant group, then they’ll be completely helpless when they encounter thieves. Aside from running, they won’t be able to do anything else!”

“Hehe...” With a dark chuckle, Suo Jia said, “You don’t need to do anything. Once a thief group tries to steal from a merchant group, you can just let them go as long as you hire people to run after their trail. Then immediately put up a mercenary flag, and go ahead and decimate the thieves, as well as steal all their hidden loot. Don’t they love to steal? In that case, we should also let them taste the experience of being stolen from!”

“Wa!” The girls cried out in excitement. That’s right.... how could they have forgotten that? They were not only members of a merchant group, but also of a thief group and a mercenary group as well. No matter who they were faced against, they could just keep stealing, and stealing, and stealing...

Seeing the girls’ jubilant expressions, Suo Jia smiled and said, “Remember, the most important thing is to hoard money. Being a mercenary group is just a pretense. Normally, if you don’t have anything else to do, you must go steal from other merchant groups. An endless business like this will earn the most money. And if our merchant group gets looted, you will immediately kill your way to the thieves’ den, decimate all of them, and take all their belongings!”

“Mm, mm, mm...” All the girls excitedly nodded in response. If they did this, they would be able to fight endlessly every day. That

way, they would not only gain battle experience, but raise their strength as well. Most importantly, the profits they could earn from this endless business were too great.

While all the girls were thinking this, Suo Jia walked to the side of the wall, and used his finger to point to an enormous map that hung there. “Everyone, look at this. The three cities Glory City, Tidal Granary City, and White Fields City, are all strategic commerce towns. They are the central hubs of communications in all of Holy Light Empire, as well as the most flourishing areas in the entire world. The income of all three cities makes up over 60% of all of Holy Light Empire’s economy!”

“Mm, mm, mm...” The girls nodded in agreement. After all, they had run quite a few trips around the cities to deliver goods, so they at least knew this basic knowledge.

Suo Jia continued, “Glory City is the center core of Holy Light Empire, and is definitely the center of trade, the gathering area of the entire world’s goods and merchandise. It then dispatches and spread the goods to all over the world. Every day, tens of thousands of merchant groups enter and exit that city!”

Tidal Granary City was Holy Light Empire’s sole port city, where shipping and transporting goods were extremely well developed; they distributed goods to all parts of the empire. However, they had higher requirements for their merchandise, so the types of goods they accepted were limited. On the other hand, the quality was definitely high. In addition, they were all expensive in value, and when shipped across distant seas, the goods that were returned in exchange were luxury goods with superior quality, and

thus also extremely expensive.

White Fields City was a city in Holy Light Empire's border region. This place was a strategic commercial city between Holy Light Empire and other empires and dukedoms. The entire world's goods were also transported here, and then sold to neighboring kingdoms of various sizes. At the same time, it admitted the influx of merchandise from abroad as well.

“Pa!” After abruptly slamming his hand onto the map, Suo Jia pointed to the drawing and said, “Glory City, Tidal Granary City, and White Fields City form a perfect triangle. What you girls need to do is to take control of all three trade routes. I hope that in half a year, nobody will dare to even touch the flag attached to our merchant caravans. At the same time...whenever any merchant group passes through any of the three routes, they will have to pay us a fee!”

Suo Jia then turned around and asked the girls, “How about it? Are you girls able to complete this request?”

#1 silently stood up and said resolutely, “We don't know if we can complete Young Master's request after half a year. However...I can guarantee that any thief group that tries to steal from our merchant group will be completely decimated. Any mercenary groups that pass through the three main routes will become our inescapable targets!”

They continued to discuss this throughout the night. At dawn, Suo Jia finally ordered them to go rest. He sat within the secret room, contemplating the situation further. Although he had



already thought through these plans ages ago, it was still, after all, a huge movement. It wouldn't do if he was careless.

In accordance to Suo Jia's ideas, these girls would set these three cities as their objectives. They would rob the merchant groups near here, and then after looting them, deliver the goods to the city behind them. Aside from the required fee of paying Holy Light City 20% of their income, they'd have a net profit of 80%. They would even save the costs of purchasing the goods.

At the same time, the merchant group would form three large groups for cargo transportation and circulate through the three cities to trade goods. They wouldn't have escorts; they'd just stick up the banner of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes. If any thief group dared to steal from them, there wouldn't be any need to resist; as long as they secretly trailed the thieves and located their hideout, everything would work out. All the people involved in the looting would be killed. The entire thief group had to be completely eradicated.

That way, although they only had 36 representatives, they could simultaneously raise their levels as a merchant, thief, and mercenary group. This would make Suo Jia's great objective of taking over the Gold Triangle come true.

“Bang bang bang...” A heavy knocking sound could be heard from outside the door. Suo Jia knew that this meant the girl had arrived. He took a deep breath and called, “Come in, the door is unlocked!”

## Chapter 166: Is This Showing Love? (Part 2)

---

The secret room's door was pushed open. The first thing that one could see was a pair of huge \*\*, then a sexy, enticing female body. Without question, this was the most talented Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix!

Suo Jia narrowed his eyes at the number on her chest: 9. After inspecting her, Suo Jia pointed to the cushion across from him and said, “#9, come and sit here. I have something to tell you.”

#9 looked at Suo Jia with her lovely and enchanting, large eyes, and then complied with Suo Jia's words, sitting in front of him so that she was facing him directly.

If it were any other man, they'd probably turn red, and have troubles breathing with this girl's gaze on them. However, Suo Jia was still a mere child, so he didn't feel anything particular. Instead, he quietly stared back with a pure light in his gaze, instead making #9 feel uncomfortable looking at him.

Suo Jia said, “I want to know you better. What's your name? How old are you this year?”

In response to Suo Jia's question, the girl responded in an especially lovable and coy voice, “My name is Duo Mei, and I'm 19 years old this year!”

“Oh?” Suo Jia sighed in admiration, and muttered, “So young? You're only 19, yet you've already matured to this point. That's

really amazing!”

Hearing these words, the girl couldn't help but blush in embarrassment. Although she looked very mature on the outside, she had actually never dated any boy before, since she entered school when she was young. It wasn't that she didn't want to, but that she never had the chance to. Nobody was willing to interact with the fire wind girls for obvious reasons. Thus, that seductive appearance was simply her natural disposition, not something that she was trying to use for licentious means.

Suo Jia reached out his hand in curiosity and lightly kneaded Duo Mei's large chest and knit his brows, “Don't you think such large things are heavy? Also...don't they drag you down when you fight?”

“Ya!” The girl couldn't help but cry out sharply when Suo Jia reached out to touch her chest. However...when she saw Suo Jia's gaze that was so clear she could see right through him, she abruptly stopped. It was clear to see that Suo Jia was simply curious.

Despite this, a young girl's shameful parts being stroked in such a way was still embarrassing. With a bright red face, the girl internally struggled for a bit before saying, “I used to think they were heavy, and they'd affect my movements in battle. However, ever since I gained the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes, it no longer became an issue. The chest plate in the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes provides very good support.”

“Oh!” Nodding in understanding, Suo Jia slowly retracted his

hand, then sighed, “So soft, they feel really nice...”

“Eh...” Duo Mei couldn’t help but freeze. Seeing Suo Jia’s sincere expression, she wasn’t sure what to do; was she supposed to reject him?

The girl couldn’t help but feel doubtful. It couldn’t be that...Suo Jia had called her over alone just to touch her, right? If he continued to act in other ways, what was she supposed to do? Would she reject or not?

After some contemplation, the girl realized that she wouldn’t refuse him, nor did she want to. Although Suo Jia was still a child, the reason behind her decision was still quite complex. No matter what angle she looked at the situation from, she didn’t have any reason to reject him, nor was she able to.

Suo Jia furrowed his brows and said, “You’re 19 years old, but you’re already #9? Could it be that...all the girls in your group are so young?”

“This...” After some hesitation, Duo Mei replied, “No. According to Big Sister’s rules, our numbers change. The ranking is based off of strength, so #1 is the strongest, #2 is the second strongest, and so on!”

Suo Jia nodded in understanding. He knew that the current #9 was not necessarily the 9th ranked in age...after some contemplation, Suo Jia asked, “Then what is the youngest age in your group? Also...within the group, how are you ranked in terms

of age?”

Without thinking about it further, the girl immediately replied, “The youngest age is 18 years old. However, there’s a total of four 18 year olds in the group. I’m 19 years old, and ranked #31 in terms of age!”

“Holy crap!” Suo Jia couldn’t help but cry out in astonishment. Suo Jia knew #1’s age; she was already 23 or 24 years old. In addition, the first 6 numbers were all that age. At the moment, there were only around a dozen members that were 20 or younger; majority of them were 22-23 years old.

Yet despite being so much younger than the others, Duo Mei’s strength was already ranked #9. This was enough to prove how outstanding her talent was. Suo Jia believed that it wouldn’t be long before she became #1 in the group!

Suo Jia finally came to a decision. With a flick of his hand, he took out an embroidered case from his ring and passed it to Duo Mei. “This is a gift from me to you. I hope that you continue to work very hard, and soon become the group’s #1. When that time comes, I will definitely promote you, and grant you an official title!”

The girl was at first shocked at Suo Jia’s words, but she then blushed furiously. She thought that Suo Jia was definitely currying favor with her because he liked her. Just now, he had touched her, and now...he had even given her a gift. Plus, he’d constantly praised her. Why else would he not treat the rest of her sisters the same way?

“Mn...he’s definitely trying to woo me.” Duo Mei thought to herself with great certainty.

Duo Mei reached out to accept the embroidered case, and gently opened it. The gorgeous Fire Phoenix necklace appeared in front of her. When she saw the necklace with red and gold glows circulating it, Duo Mei couldn’t help but gape in shock, completely speechless.

Suo Jia smiled at her shocked expression and said, “This is a part of the fire element Peak grade equipment set: Fire Phoenix Necklace. It simultaneously increases the power of the fire and wind elements, as well as boosts the two element’s magics and battle qi recovery speed. It also improves one’s relationship with the two elements!”

“Heavens!” Duo Mei couldn’t but tremble as she continued to stare at the necklace. Putting aside the necklace’s abilities, its outer appearance alone was enough to make Duo Mei ecstatic. Moreover...this was a part of the fire element Peak grade equipment set, the Fire Phoenix set. Simply holding it was already a type of honor.

Lifting her head in amazement, Duo Mei said incredulously, “Young...Young Master! Are you really giving this necklace to me?”

Suo Jia bitterly smiled in response. He couldn’t wear this necklace, so if he didn’t give this to her, who else would he give it

to? Under Eldest Sister's guidance, Suo Jia had already gotten used to maximizing benefits in any situation. This necklace would only display its maximum usefulness if he gave it to Duo Mei. After she grew strong, she'd become Suo Jia's extra arm. That's why giving it to her to use was equivalent to Suo Jia personally using it.

Suo Jia said in a deep voice, "Don't get too excited. I am indeed giving it to you. I just hope that you won't ever betray me or leave me. As long as you remain sincere to me, I'd be happy to give you anything!"

Duo Mei tightly gripped the necklace in her hand, and shyly lowered her head. Her enchanting and charming face had long since turned red in embarrassment; the Young Master had confessed to her!

After a long period of shyness passed, Duo Mei finally gathered enough courage to lift her head and say to Suo Jia, "Don't worry, Young Master. Duo Mei will forever belong to Young Master. Even if I die, my spirit will be the Young Master's. I definitely won't betray you, nor will I ever let anyone else betray you!"

# Chapter 167: The Domineering Corps (Part 1)

---

Suo Jia's thoughts weren't very complex. In reality, his words meant that he just wanted Duo Mei to be loyal to him, not at all what Duo Mei thought he meant. After receiving her promise, Suo Jia nodded in satisfaction, but he didn't realize that this was equivalent to accepting Duo Mei's feelings!

Typically speaking, when a girl said to a boy that her life was his, and her spirit after she died was his, she was definitely his without question. At least, she thought of herself as such; she was basically saying that she would marry only him. Unfortunately, although Suo Jia was smart, he was lacking in this field, and thus didn't understand the implication of Duo Mei's words.

The next morning, Suo Jia first went to various unions to establish new names: the Golden Angels merchant group, the Dark Angels thief group, and the Blood Angels mercenary group. Each new group had its own flag as well; the flags all had the image of an Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix holding a war blade in her hand. The only thing that differed between the flags were its colors; the thief group was a black angel, the mercenary group was a crimson angel, and the merchant group was a golden angel.

There was a reason for Suo Jia's actions; if he did this, everyone's sense of belonging would grow stronger. In addition, their cohesiveness would also increase, since all of the names and flags represented them. They'd eventually cherish these three groups the same way they cherished themselves, and make sure that the flags were never sullied in any way.



Also, for the sake of keeping it a secret from the public, Suo Jia didn't want them to return to Holy Light City any more. This place had too many spies, and Suo Jia couldn't possibly keep secrets here. He knew that the only way to protect his secrets was to possess his own territory. It was clear that the White Villa was not truly his; the one that actually controlled it was Wen Ya!

According to Suo Jia's orders, the girls split between Glory City, Tidal Granary City, and White Fields City separately to form a merchant guild hall, a mercenary guild hall, and a thief guild hall as their bases. Communication was kept through the transmission of letters.

A few days later, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes set out once more. This time, they didn't have a set period for their excursion; they would never need to return again. Suo Jia had already calculated it properly: after a few days, the imperial family would bestow him a piece of land. There, he would establish his own circle of influence. This place would be his real territory!

After the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes left, Suo Jia returned to his usual lifestyle. He spent 6 hours every night meditating, and dedicated 6 hours to Zhiyao techniques. Suo Jia knew that, based on the frequency the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes got into fights, these potions would be consumed at a frightening rate! If he didn't make more, the supply would fall short.

Suo Jia didn't consider selling these potions outside; selling the Life Potions was already enough. The potions had many advantages that would be lost once others knew about them.

Currently...in the entire world, only the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix corps had this advantage. This was Suo Jia's greatest capital, as well as what the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix corps relied on most heavily to seize the Gold Triangle.

Suo Jia had already calculated it; although at a current standpoint, he seemed to be losing a lot of money, the amount that they'd earn after dominating the Gold Triangle would be immeasurable. In addition, conquering the Gold Triangle meant that they had to utilize the advantages of the three great potions as best they could!

Suo Jia's evenings were already completely occupied, which meant that his days were obviously also busy. He'd spend them training in the Ice and Snow Pact while meticulously studying alchemy. When he was resting, he'd practice magic. This was Suo Jia's schedule; not a single subject or second was overlooked within the 24 hour time period every day.

Suo Jia never considered going to school. Although the academy also taught alchemy, following their procedure was too slow. Moreover, their method was too unrefined; it was possible that even after learning for 3-5 years, he wouldn't improve much. This was clearly not enough to meet Suo Jia's needs.

Suo Jia's methods were very simple. First, he purchased a set of alchemy teaching materials to understand the basic knowledge. He then went to the library and borrowed all the alchemy-related books. With Suo Jia's current rank and status, something this minor could be done with only a few words.

At the same time, Suo Jia once again issued a request through the various unions to gather all books about alchemy. At the same time, he also requested the unions to gather clues about the whereabouts of Atlantis equipment set parts, as well as the Fire Phoenix set parts.

In that moment, Suo Jia's money, which had poured in like water from the Life Potions, poured straight back out. After half a month, the White Villa's backyard now had a special new building: Suo Jia's personal library!

The library only had one floor. Its overall area wasn't small, and within the spacious library were rows and rows of bookshelves displaying various types of books. However, all of the books were related to alchemy in some way.

Suo Jia would rush to this building every day, lie down comfortably on a sofa, and quietly flip through books with a neat pile of notes next to him. Two of the maids stayed by his side and would help him as he commanded them to.

After only a single month, Suo Jia managed to finish learning all the basic knowledge about alchemy. However, alchemy knowledge was as vast as the sea. Learning only the basics was equivalent to learning 1+1 in maths. What he had to learn next was real alchemy. The path that Suo Jia still had left to walk was very, very long.

Suo Jia also didn't attend the past year's King of Kings Tournament, since he felt it no longer had any meaning. He was already the highest ranked Knight; going any higher would require him to have military achievements or other meritorious

contributions. There were no other ways he could rise in rank.

Suo Jia didn't know who last year's champion was, but Suo Jia hoped that one of the two girls would be this year's champion. After their training from the past year, they would definitely be able to defeat all their opponents with ease.

Putting aside Suo Jia, who was studying diligently, the group of Angelic Six-Winged Angels were currently facing a long line of caravans with excitement shown on their faces. There were bodies littered all around them, and blood had already dyed the entire ground red. There were only a few hundred carriages still stopped there.

This was a secluded trade route 200 km away from Tidal Granary City. It was also the 58th merchant group that the Angelic Six-Winged Angels had successfully robbed. However, this merchant group was also clearly the largest one!

After flipping through the items, one of the girls ran to the girl with #1 marked on her and said respectfully, “#1! The merchandise has all been gathered.”

#1 gently parted her mantle, revealing a sweet and charming face. When one looked more closely, it was clear that she was very beautiful! Ever since Suo Jia had gifted her with the necklace, she had finally become the boss of the group after a month of painstaking training!

Why had she become the boss so easily? Actually, the reason was

simple. Firstly, the Fire Phoenix Necklace had greatly helped. Secondly...the entire set's best equipment were owned by her. Among the whole group, only she wore the completely linked equipment set. The others only had a few links each.

In reality, the current equipment set that Duo Mei was wearing wasn't at all inferior to any peerless experts in the Greater Trade Routes. Considering the great benefits she gained from it, it'd be strange if her equipment wasn't ranked #1. The reason she had been #9 previously was only because she hadn't yet gained the fully linked equipment set.

## Chapter 168: The Domineering Corps (Part 2)

---

Duo Mei looked at the winding caravans, and breathed out, “What are the carriages carrying? Is there anything of value?”

The girl opposite of her said happily. “The carriages all carry precious magic diamonds from the country, Nisa. There are a total of 100 carriages and 1000 boxes of magic diamonds!”

“Gasp!” Duo Mei couldn’t help but inhale sharply. It seemed like this merchant group wasn’t from here, but another country, Nisa. Otherwise, how could they gather so many expensive magic diamonds?

Thinking for a bit, Duo Mei carefully made some calculations. One carriage could carry 10 boxes, and each box most likely had 100 magic diamonds. That meant 100 carriages had a total of 10,000 magic diamonds. Each one was worth about 50,000 gold, so the value of these 100 carriages was 500 million. This was equivalent to half of Nisa’s semi-annual total magic diamond output!

Duo Mei clenched her teeth and loudly declared, “The transport section from the thief group should come and immediately begin moving. Transfer all of these things and bury them in a secret location. For the short term, these things cannot be used. Otherwise, we’ll definitely end up inviting trouble!”

All the girls showed expressions of admiration after hearing Duo Mei’s words. That’s right...one could rob merchant groups

however they pleased, but one couldn't steal from another country's merchant group. Otherwise, the opposite party would dispatch large groups to chase after them. If the other country didn't kill them, the grudge would never end. No matter how large a group was, there was no way they could go up against an entire country, even if Nisa was only a small country.

Seeing the transport group drag the carriages away from the merchant road one by one, Duo Mei couldn't help but survey her surroundings. It was no wonder that this merchant group had had so many powerful warriors and mages. In addition, not a single person had tried to run away, even as they were being completely annihilated. It was all because they were another country's merchant group!

Duo Mei shook her head, and stopped herself from pondering this any further. She would not take pity on those guys; since they had decided to float around outside, it would be hard for them to avoid being attacked from the dark. If they were scared, it would've been better if they hadn't come out at all. The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' last experience on the merchant road had allowed them to mature.

One of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes then ran over and said in a low voice, "Duo Mei, the merchant group just sent some news: our 108th car of merchandise was stolen again. This time, it's the work of a powerful thief corps. Their general headquarters are located in..."

Nodding her head, Duo Mei quickly fished out a map, and quickly circled a location on it based on the girl's report. She then added a

note to it.

After everything had been completed, all of the carriages that had been on the merchant road had been completely moved. Duo Mei looked around and said strongly, “Now that this has happened, someone will surely come and investigate the situation here. Moreover, we’ve probably accumulated a ton of liabilities. That’s why...the Dark Angels thief group will temporarily become the Blood Angels mercenary group and suppress that thief group, getting back everything that they owe us!”

The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes unanimously agreed with Duo Mei’s decision. After handing the aftermath for the thieves’ logistic section to sort out, the girls removed their black thief flag and raised their crimson Blood Angels flag. They then began to head towards the locations of dozens of thief headquarters marked on the map; since they dared to steal the Golden Angels merchant group’s goods, then they had to prepare themselves to be massacred by the Blood Angels mercenary group.

During the next month, the entire Gold Triangle entered turbulent times. The Blood Angels mercenary group attacked and purged all of those that dared to steal the Golden Angels merchant group’s goods. A total of 68 thief groups were pulled up from their roots, and completely eradicated.

Meanwhile, Duo Mei had received Suo Jia’s letter of reply. Within the letter, Suo Jia had scolded their cowardice; so what if the merchant group was from another country? They were a thief group, their business was the exchange of looting each other. If the group was afraid of the repercussions, then they might as well



come home and start babysitting kids. Even if the opposite party was another country's merchant group, it was no excuse for their behavior.

The thief union was a high existence within the country. They received protection from the thief alliances throughout the entire world. Merchant groups from other countries were still merchant groups, and thus were included within a thief group's target range. There was no need for bearing any additional responsibilities; as long as one could undertake the other party's ambitions, everything was OK!

In the letter, Suo Jia also told them that nobody would ever want to resist them that stubbornly. With their speed and strength, even if they couldn't defeat their opponent, they could run. If they couldn't outrun the enemy, then they could wear the opponent down. Those that couldn't be worn down...could be taken down with the help of the potions. Nobody that couldn't be defeated in these ways existed within the Holy Light Empire. The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes weren't incompetent, nor were they just using the potions to play around.

A few days later, after all the thief groups had been eradicated, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes once again changed their flag to that of the Dark Angels thief group, and openly put the 100 carriages of magic diamonds onto the market. In a mere instant, the entire country was completely shocked!

At the same time, the decimation of the 68 thief groups had allowed Blood Angels mercenary group to gain large amounts of treasure. Not only had they made up for the merchant group's

losses, they had even earned millions times more in profits!

Such fearless robbing instantly made the Dark Angels thief group and the Blood Angels mercenary group became the enemies of everyone in the mercenary and thief realms within the entire Gold Triangle. Even the Golden Angels merchant group had been spread as completely abnormal. After all...since their names were so close, and their flags were almost identical as well, even idiots would be able to guess that there was a relationship between these three entities.

Not only that, but just as Duo Mei had worried about, the Nisa country was not willing to just take things lying down. Even if they didn't care for their losses, there was no way they could lose face. Moreover... that was half of Nisa's magic diamonds supply. How could they ignore such losses? That's why...Nisa dispatched a large brigade of people and horses, swearing that they'd completely destroy the Dark Angels thief group!

The current circumstance was like adding frost to snow. Originally...the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes could've simply put away their flag, and vanished without a trace so that the Nisa troop would keep searching aimlessly. However, Suo Jia didn't allow this, since it would be letting a chance to train slip away. According to Suo Jia's orders, the girls could change their identities, but they could only choose between the identities of the Golden Angels merchant group, the Dark Angels thief group, and the Blood Angels mercenary group. In other words, they had to display one of the three flags.

The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes felt as if they were advancing

dauntlessly in wave upon wave, through countless perilous situations, toppling mountains and overturning the seas. Before they had even finished killing off the first wave of enemies, the second wave would already arrive. Not long after their arrival, the third wave would also join in. Helpless, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes could only keep running away, and continue to encounter endless obstacles.

Originally, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' speed made it easy for them to run away. However, Suo Jia had commanded them to never leave the three major trade routes in the Gold Triangle, even if they died. Even if they did manage to escape these boundaries, they'd end up being obstructed by other groups, and the delay would allow their pursuers to catch up once more!

The entire Holy Light Empire was momentarily paying close attention to the movements within the Gold Triangle. Discussions about these events could be heard everywhere in the city. Everyone was trying to guess whether the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes would be eradicated, or if their pursuers would wear them down. The country had even set up a gambling joint for this, and started putting up bets.

There were two choices of bets. The first was that a Great Tri-Alliance between the thieves, mercenaries, and merchants would form and gain the final victory. The second was that the Blood Angels, Dark Angels, and the Golden Angels would emerge victorious. As the bets opened, gold began to pour into the national treasury like a river.

Groups similar to the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had

appeared before, and it had occurred more than once as well. There had also been occurrences where the three great unions had allied together and surrounded and annihilated the groups. These things had occurred at least 1000 times. However, without a single exception, the independent group had always ended up losing. After all...how could individual groups go up against the Great Tri-Alliance?

Pretty much everyone thought that the final result would be the three Angels corps running away in defeat, and the final victory would go to the Great Tri-Alliance. The odds of the bets had already reached a shocking 100:1!

However, the next morning when people ran inside the tavern again, they were shocked to find out that the odds had become 10:1. After some careful investigation, they found out that last night, someone had bet a hundred billion in capital that the three great Angels groups would obtain victory!

This person was none other than Suo Jia. He had extreme confidence in the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix corps. Even if they couldn't overpower their opponents, they could also run away. Suo Jia had no intentions of compromising either. The final result would have to depend on who first became unable to bear the losses and be forced to leave the Gold Triangle.

The reason why he hadn't allowed the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes to leave the three major trade routes was firstly to make them train, and secondly, to tell the entire world through their actions that: 'We are conquering the area. Even if the three great unions form an alliance, they won't be able to do anything. We

welcome anyone to come at us, as long as you aren't afraid to suffer from the losses.'

Suo Jia knew that once they emerged victorious in this battle, the entire Gold Triangle would become the three great Angels groups'. At that point...the three major cities' commercial transports would be handled by the Golden Angels merchant group. All the merchant groups that passed through would have to pay a protection fee to the Blood Angels mercenary group. All the thief groups that attempted to steal within the area had to hand a fixed percentage of their earnings to the Dark Angels thief group! Suo Jia's objective remained unchanged; the first was to earn money, and the second was to train in strength.

Although the battle was arduous, and could even be described as bitter...as the battle continued on, everyone gradually began to realize that the situation wasn't quite right. No matter how long the fights went on, these Angelic Six-Winged Angels would seemingly never tire. Their battle qi was inexhaustible, and their consciousness and spirits were always at a newly energized state, as if they had just woken up. Their physical strength was also as vigorous as always, and their bodies seemed to be impervious to sword and spear. What exactly was going on?

Faced against these fierce, domineering, invulnerable Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, everyone began to feel fear. However, the crusade had already begun; they couldn't just start strong and finish weak. The Great Tri-Alliance couldn't lose face. No matter how difficult it was, they had to continue charging forwards. They had to drive away these three great Angels corps out of the Gold Triangle!

# Chapter 169: Attending The Tournament Once More (Part 1)

---

The battle continued for eight months, yet it didn't show any sign of stopping. The Great Tri-Alliance had suffered unimaginable losses. Yet it was precisely because of this that they had no way of stopping. Otherwise, they'd have absolutely no way of reporting it to the chief of the Great Tri-Alliance!

Within these eight months, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had experienced countless purges of blood and fire. Their battle skills had become more proficient, and their battle experience had reached a new level. They faced different types of enemies of various professions. This made all of the girls into battle experts!

Moreover, the endless battles during this period had greatly increased their battle qi. When in life-or-death situations, humans improve extremely quickly, to the point where one has to admire it. It could be said that the experiences from the past eight months were enough to have more than doubled the girls' might. This amount was even greater than the sum of all their improvements from the past 20 some years.

At the same time, as the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes continued to improve throughout the battles, they also began to get more and more excited, as well as gain more self-confidence. They could clearly feel themselves improve every day. After every battle, they'd be able to detect any imperfections in their battle skills, and continuously hone it, sculpting it to perfection. All of the girls had gradually unified, but they still had their own unique battle skills. Thus, within this eight month period, all the girls had improved by

leaps and bounds.

Of course, the girls also knew that the only reason they were able to fight without rest was entirely due to the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes, their war blades, and most importantly, their inexhaustible supply of potions. If it weren't for the Magic, Spirit, and Endurance Potions, they wouldn't have been able to battle endlessly.

During the past eight months, each one of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' appearances had changed quite a bit. They now had spears hanging from their waists. These weren't ordinary spears, but magic-conducting weapons that Suo Jia had specially made!

After coming to understand each of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' unique traits, Suo Jia had realized that activating a condensed version of all the fire wind battle qi together as a single, powerful attack using their weapons wasn't appropriate. But what kind of warrior fought without a weapon in hand? Thus...for the sake of matching their battle skills, Suo Jia had made a belt for each of the girls, each with 36 sharp spears sticking out from it. These spears could activate and shoot out the most powerful, condensed fire wind battle qi attack.

This spear was a product of Suo Jia's alchemy. Currently, each of the spears could only be used once. After shooting the attack, it would explode into dust, with no way to recover it. This was the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' strongest attack. A single volley of fire was enough to instantly eradicate their enemies.

After eight months of training, this attack could cover a distance of 200 meters, and its power had also been doubled. Suo Jia named this move: Thousand Feathers!

Of course, as an elementary alchemist, the things that Suo Jia created were still lacking. They didn't have any boosting effects. However, with the combination of magic crystals and some metals, they could temporarily store the fire wind battle qis into a magic-conducting item. This could perfectly replace a weapon, and become the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' method of long-ranged attack!

Now, all the enemies during every battle would watch the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' actions very closely. Whenever they placed their hands on their belts, the enemies would immediately evade cautiously. Otherwise, if they were hit by the attack, they'd end up heavily injured, if not dead. There was nothing they could do; this powerful and explosive attack was not something that the enemy could merely block.

As the battles advanced, the enemies gradually discovered that the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes were pretty much perfect warriors. Their close-ranged attacks were as swift and wild as a tempest, and if they were a bit further away, they had Thousand Feathers, which had a destructive power that could easily kill. Aside from missing an actual long-ranged attack, they were pretty much a perfect corps.

The most headache-inducing fact for others was that once these Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes felt that they had fought enough, they'd immediately leap up. With the help of fire wind battle qi,



they'd jump high into the air and then open the six cloaks behind them to sail through the air. In that instant, they'd be able to completely leave the fight. Aside from dumbly watching them, nobody could do anything else. Common arrows were also completely unable to break through the girls' sturdy armors. The more powerful attacks were dodged, or diverted with a knock of their hands. There was no way anyone could contend against the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes.

Time slowly trickled by. Finally...everyone understood that this battle's outcome wasn't at all something they could determine. It mainly depended on whether or not the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had played around enough. However, judging from their current states, it seemed like they were still playing energetically. There wasn't any indication that they had finished!

Gradually, groups began to leave the alliance. First, one left, and then two, and then three... eventually, leaving had become a trend. Within the short period of a month, the Great Tri-Alliance had lost over half of its members, and was continuing to lose members at an alarming rate.

It was at this time that the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes received Suo Jia's order: after being chased for so long, it was about time to counterattack. From now on, they wouldn't wait for the enemy to find them, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes would directly go to the enemy instead. Using the different identities of the three great corps, they'd be able to expel all the groups within the Gold Triangle!

As a result, the people watching this event were shocked to

discover that in nine months, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes that had been pursued this whole time finally struck back. In addition, they were extremely merciless with their fierce counterattacks, leaving no survivors!

Faced against these cruel Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, many of the groups left the alliance extremely quickly. Eventually...10 months after the fights had first begun, all the merchant routes in the Gold Triangle were now completely empty. Despite this, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes still didn't dare to leave the matter at that. They had to spread the word that no matter if it was a merchant group, mercenary group, or thief group, appearing in the Gold Triangle would mean being pursued by the three Angels corps until the opposite party was completely powerless.

Faced with the seemingly peerless Angel corps, the Great Tri-Alliance had no choice but to step up their game. They discussed the current matters, and after a while, finally came up with an agreement.

From that moment on, any affairs on the three major trade routes would be completely under the Golden Angels merchant group's control. Of course...even if they didn't withdraw, the Dark Angels thief group would wholeheartedly welcome them! If they didn't steal the family's fortune, they couldn't call themselves the Dark Angels thief group!

The other merchant groups that passed through the Gold Triangle had to pay a protection fee worth 10% of their goods to the Blood Angels mercenary group. Now, the safe areas in the Gold Triangle were under the Blood Angels mercenary group's

jurisdiction. If anything within this perimeter happened, it would be the Blood Angels' responsibility to fix it. If they couldn't, then they'd compensate appropriately!

At the same time, the Gold Triangle didn't welcome any thief corps. Of course, they could still come and loot however much they wanted, but before they did so, they had to first secure their family property, and then buy a coffin. If they could, it was best if they came to loot with their coffin in hand. Otherwise, roaming around in that wilderness would be a bit too pitiful.

The Great Tri-Alliance was furious when they heard the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' request, but how could they refuse? Besides...Holy Light Empire's trade routes numbered over 1000; giving away 3 of them wasn't that big of a deal. The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes weren't the only corps that had seized a few trade routes, this had happened in other places as well.

After mutually signing the contract...after a period of 10 months, Suo Jia's original objective had finally become a reality. From then on, the transport and trade routes between the three major cities would be completely left to the Golden Angels to handle. Aside from them, no other merchant group would be able to transport anything on these routes.

The Blood Angels were responsible for keeping every merchant group that passed through the Gold Triangle safe, while the Dark Angels group was...well, they really had nothing else to do. They couldn't go and rob from the group that the Blood Angels were protecting, right? Wouldn't that just be fighting themselves?

Of course, they could go to other places to loot. However, during the signing of the agreement, the Great Tri-Alliance had already stated that the aside from within the Gold Triangle, the Angels corps weren't to act anywhere else. That's why, for a period of time, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes would have nothing to do.

The merchant group would be completely safe as they passed through the three major trade routes; nobody dared to touch them. There was nobody stirring up trouble on the trade routes, so the mercenary group only displayed their name to receive protection fees. The Dark Angels also had no place to loot from. Thus, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes could do nothing but rest and reorganize themselves, as well as collate and combine their profits from the last year as they waited for Suo Jia's next order.

Just as the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes entered closed-door training, Suo Jia, along with Aimi and Aila, had rushed back to Holy Light Academy to participate in the annual King of Kings Tournament.

# Chapter 170: Attending The Tournament Once More (Part 2)

---

Ever since Suo Jia had first entered Holy Light, the water element was no longer the weakest element. In fact, it was the exact opposite; water elemental Mage Apprentices had defended the championship for three consecutive years. If they won this year as well, it'd be the fourth time.

Although Suo Jia hadn't attended last year's competition, the championship had been won by the group that Aimi and Aila had formed. The outcome of this year was also unquestionable; the current Aimi and Aila had long since surpassed the formerly 8 year old Suo Jia. In addition, they were no longer the youngest students in the academy; by the end of this year, everyone would be 12 years old.

With Suo Jia in the lead, the two girls wearing blue mage robes followed behind him with slightly lowered heads, and all three quietly entered the King of Kings Tournament arena. The reason Suo Jia had come today was because he wanted to personally witness the girls' showdown!

However, nobody else knew this. When they suddenly saw Suo Jia appear, all of the people present gasped in shock. Who was he? Everyone in the academy, regardless of male or female, new admits or graduates, knew of him.

They also all knew that once he appeared, the championship would have no suspense. It wasn't that Holy Light hadn't produced any super talents; actually...the number of geniuses in Holy Light

was 80% or above of the students. Only 20% or below weren't geniuses. Everyone knew that because the academy only accepted 100 students every year, it'd be extremely hard to enter without being a genius.

As soon as Suo Jia entered, the Holy Light Academy's headmaster welcomed him with a wide smile. Originally...since Suo Jia was a mere student at the school, the headmaster wouldn't have acted this way. However, Suo Jia was already a high-ranked Knight. If anyone dared to act disrespectful to him, he could easily challenge the offender into a fight legally approved by the empire!

Although the headmaster wasn't afraid of being challenged...only idiots would try to provoke Suo Jia, as everyone knew of his relationship with the imperial family. It didn't matter if one had a higher or lower noble rank.

Moreover, Suo Jia was a rare expert in the academy that only appeared every 1000 years. In addition, the headmaster personally frequented the White Villa to eat, and he had been quite well catered to. At this point, he wouldn't be willing to not give face to Suo Jia.

With a smile on his face, the headmaster rushed up to Suo Jia and laughed, "Knight Suo Jia, why have you come here today? Could it be..."

With a smile, Suo Jia shook his head and interrupted the headmaster firmly, "Don't bother guessing. I didn't come to attend the tournament; I just came to watch."

The headmaster nodded in response and continued, “That’s right, even if you did win, it would be useless to someone like you. In that case, let’s go over there together to watch the competition. The view there is better!”

Suo Jia glanced around from the corner of his eyes, and then nodded. Accompanied by the headmaster and under the gazes of over 10,000 students, Suo Jia and the headmaster began to walk toward the platform.

“Gasp!” Seeing the headmaster and Suo Jia sit down on the platform, the students couldn’t help but sharply inhale. What exactly was he doing? He even dared to brazenly sit next to the headmaster?

Seeing the shocked crowd of people below him, Suo Jia smiled. Truth be told, he was also slightly uncomfortable. However...he was already the highest-ranked Knight, a true aristocrat. Receiving this much courtesy was to be expected. On the contrary, if the headmaster hadn’t offered, that would’ve been a mistake. Aristocrats and commoners had to be differentiated in this way.

Although Aimi and Aila also held noble titles, their ranks were still too low, and couldn’t qualify as genuine aristocrats. They couldn’t even count as pseudo-nobles. In general, if they really had to be ranked, they would only be minor nobles. They didn’t have money or power, and even the commoners didn’t pay them any attention.

Suo Jia smiled as he looked at the two girls behind him. He had always wondered exactly which of the two was more powerful.

Although the two frequently trained together, it wasn't a competition, so it was hard to make them actually go all out. Normally, they'd stop the practice once contact was made. Suo Jia knew that only at today's competition would he be able to truly examine their strengths!

At the moment, the two girls were covered with large blue cloaks that covered their entire bodies and their heads, and they were standing there quietly with their heads lowered. Suo Jia knew that they were currently resting, preparing themselves for the upcoming tournament.

For the past few years, these two girls hadn't actually participated in the King of Kings Tournament. They had only gained the crown within their age group. That's why...these two girls were extremely foreign existences to the academy's people. The people were only concerned about whether or not Suo Jia would participate in the tournament, and nobody even thought of the two girls.

However, the reason for Suo Jia's return was precisely because of the two girls. In his opinion, the champion could only be one of these two. There were absolutely no other options. Their given Legendary ranked magic equipments alone were already things that no student here could currently stand up against.

Time slowly passed by. Eventually, it was time for the competition to start soon. Under the referee's command, each of



the champions from the various age groups appeared on the stage. Just then, Suo Jia lightly snapped his fingers, and then made strange gesture with his hand.

Receiving Suo Jia's message, the two girls respectfully nodded, then quietly left the platform and walked towards the competition arena. Only after they had arrived at the center of the arena did they stop in their tracks.

"This..." Seeing this scene the headmaster couldn't help but be confused. He didn't understand, why had Suo Jia's companions gone there? Were they trying to cause a commotion?

Noticing the headmaster's puzzled expression, Suo Jia smiled and said, "They are also students of the academy. Moreover, they're my classmates. The reason I came today was because I wanted to watch them have a showdown!"

The headmaster couldn't help but shake when he heard Suo Jia's indifferent words. Theoretically speaking, students of the same age group couldn't possible encounter each other in the competition, unless they both charged their way through to finals. This was something Suo Jia must've known. In that case, why had he said those words as if they were obviously inevitable?

Both the headmaster and the other students were extremely puzzled. When they saw the two figures in blue in the arena, they couldn't figure out who the girls were. Why had they come here? Could it be that...they were also participating in the tournament?

As everyone was wondering this, the students from the lower age groups all chose their opponents. Afterwards...the King of Kings Tournament began. The course of battles was uneventful. Although there were no lack of dark horses that appeared, there also weren't any highlights to the battles to speak of. It was simply borrowing the power of magic equipment to gain advantages. Even if people won, it wasn't anything strange.

Finally, it was the girls' turn to appear. Under the gazes of over one hundred thousand students, the two girls easily overturned all the other contestants, defeating opponents with their overwhelming might as they attacked separately. Not much time had passed before they had managed to clear all of Holy Light Academy's contestants! Nobody had lasted over 10 seconds against them, regardless of whether they were warriors or mages.

Finally, the only two remaining figures on the stage were the two girls covered in blue. However, up until now, their identities remained unknown to everyone. They had never once removed their cloaks, even in battle.

The headmaster shot Suo Jia a shocked glance. The situation had really gone as Suo Jia had anticipated; it had really become a showdown between these two girls. However...considering their strengths, any other result would've been abnormal. They had already far surpassed other people, and had reached the realm of an Advanced Mage!

Under the numerous gazes of the audience, the referee declared that after a half hour break, the King of Kings' final round would officially begin. However, to everyone's surprise, the two girls

shook their heads, indicating that the round could start now.

Since neither party had any objections, the referee obviously didn't object either, and immediately declared for the two to prepare themselves. The round would officially start a minute later. Faced with this announcement, the two girls inwardly began to feel excited. The competition until now had just been a good warmup. Now they'd be able to actually compete, and bring out their strength to the fullest!

# Chapter 171: Arduous Training (Part 1)

---

The girls didn't dare hold back against each other. Their levels of understanding towards each other were unlike any others'. They had always trained together since they were 8 years old. During the last 2-3 years, they had been together day and night. They knew as much about each other as they knew themselves.

If they were faced against other people, perhaps they would brazenly keep their cloaks on while battling. However, faced against each other, where there was little difference between their strengths, they didn't dare to keep their cloaks on. Wearing the cloaks barely affected them, but in this situation, the slightest bit of difference could determine the outcome of the battle!

Finally, the two girls slowly removed their cloaks under everyone's gazes. Immediately...two bright glows shone in the center of the arena. When the audience saw the two human-shaped glows, they were instantly shocked!

"That...what is that?" The headmaster stood up in astonishment as he stared at the two figures in disbelief.

Suo Jia glanced at the headmaster while shaking his head with a bitter smile. He knew...that an entire set of Legendary ranked equipment was indeed extremely terrifying. Moreover, two complete sets had just appeared at the same time!

Most importantly, these two Legendary ranked equipment sets were glittering. Although all magic equipments Legendary-ranked

and above glowed in some way...it was normally a faint, hazy light. It was definitely not like the eye-piercing, bright glow that these sets had.

A linkage was necessary for the equipment to light up like this. The two sets had linked closely together, which was why they glowed so intensely. Moreover, the glows covered the girls from head to toe. It was evident that they did not only have Legendary ranked equipment, but a completely linked Legendary equipment set!

Dumbfounded, the headmaster said to Suo Jia incredulously, “That isn’t possible. How exactly did you do that? This is the first time I ever heard that Legendary-ranked equipment sets can form links!”

Suo Jia merely smiled in reply as he continued to gaze at the girls. Those two equipment sets had used up an entire year of Suo Jia’s income. This also included the hundreds of thousands of riches that the Angels groups had earned!

Indeed, going by typical methods, it was impossible to collect an entirely linked equipment set. However, Suo Jia had used his great wealth to achieve it; moreover, he had compiled two completely linked sets! Historically, these two sets were the only Legendary ranked equipment sets that had ever been completely linked!

Suo Jia’s method was extremely simple. No matter who it was, as long as they had a water elemental Legendary ranked equipment, it would be exchanged at the White Villa for two things. Faced with such benefits, nobody could possibly reject the offer. One

piece of equipment could be exchanged for two; this kind of offer was something that even idiots wouldn't refuse.

Thus, during the past 6 months, Suo Jia had gathered a total of over 2000 pieces of water elemental Legendary ranked equipment. This number already far surpassed the total number of Legendary ranked equipment within Holy Light Empire by around four times. It could be seen that this movement had shaken the entire world!

Of course, Suo Jia alone didn't have that great of an ability, nor did he have much credibility. Only after paying a large amount of promised fees and costs did Suo Jia earn the Adventure Union's protection, which allowed him to go through with this operation.

From amidst the 2000 pieces of Legendary ranked equipment, Suo Jia chose out 2 sets that were comprised of 40 interlinked pieces of Legendary ranked equipment. Not only were they linked, they were also extremely compatible with each other. This formed the most well fitted, most powerful linkages! Swapping around and pairing two equipment set pieces for all possible combinations had taken 3 months' time. After all 2000+ Legendary equipment sets had been assembled appropriately, the completely linked Legendary equipment sets had appeared.

Everyone knew that Legendary ranked magic equipments were 20% or more powerful than Epic ranked equipments in terms of boosting effects. Now that completely linked sets had appeared, these effects had exponentially increased even further. In terms of might, it had already surpassed Epic ranked equipments by around 50%-60%. The only thing that it was lacking was the ability to aid advancing in training, which was inferior to an Epic ranked

equipment's ability by 50%.

However, that was the only thing. These two equipment sets could already be on par with the Atlantis set. Their total power was both 200. The difference was that the Legendary ranked equipment set had 150 in magic formidability, and 50 in accelerating training, while Epic ranked equipment had 100 in magic formidability, and 100 in accelerating training. Which one was better or worse couldn't exactly be judged.

While everyone was thinking this, the two girls had already begun fighting. Under everyone's gazes, both parties began to fiercely burst out attacks at each other. Ice Arrow, World of Ice and Snow, Rainstorm, Water Arrow...various types of magics whizzed back and forth between the two people, exploding around each other. At that moment, it was completely impossible to differentiate the outcome of the battle.

These basic magics weren't the only things flying about. After their equipments had linked completely, the two girls' magic hadn't only become more formidable, but their activation speeds had also increased. More importantly, the linking granted them the ability to activate large-scale AOE magic attacks that were beyond powerful! The audience could only dumbly watch the scene in front of them.

"Ai..." Suo Jia sighed and shook his head as he watched the two girls blast attacks at each other. Originally...he had thought that the outcome would've been able to be determined by this point. However, he hadn't imagined that there still wouldn't be a difference to be seen, and that the result would remain unknown.

If a clear outcome wanted to be known, both sides would have to suffer in the end!

If Suo Jia could see this, the headmaster and referee could obviously tell as well. No matter how formidable Suo Jia was, he was still, after all, very young. How could the 80 some year old headmaster and the 60 some year old referee be any inferior? In terms of experience and knowledge alone, Suo Jia was still very lacking.

“Dong!” A loud sound of a bell rang out, and the two girls unwillingly stopped. This was a rule of the tournament; once the bell rang, any that dared to continue moving would immediately be stripped of their qualifications to participate in the competition, and must forfeit the match! That’s why nobody dared to violate the rules. Once they lost the competition, they’d essentially be losing a noble rank. Who dared to risk such a thing?

Seeing the two girls stop, the referee tilted his head, and then said a few words to the headmaster. Afterwards...the referee gravely turned around and declared the outcome of the battle as....a tie! Neither of the girls needed to lose their a noble rank, nor would they gain one.

Aimi and Aila could only bitterly smile at each other at this result as they helplessly exchanged glances. They knew that although in terms of skills, the two had some faint differences, with respect to this competition alone, Aila undoubtedly predominated. An ice mage was more suitable for single-elimination open tournaments like these, while water mages were more suited for group battles!



However, after the appearance of two completely linked Legendary ranked equipment sets, there was absolutely no way of determining who was stronger. Their abilities were still unable to allow them to break through the defenses of the completely linked Legendary equipment. Continuing to blast attacks at each other would be meaningless.

Of course, people could say that in such a case, they could just remove their equipments and fight. However, this clashed with Suo Jia's opinion. To him, a person's strength didn't rely on just their physical body. True strength depended on a person's original strength with the addition of the might of magic equipment and one's ability to utilize it.

This is like comparing two miners. You cannot ask both parties to throw away their picks and fight with their bare fists. Although it may be fair, the outcome wouldn't be reliant on the two people's true strengths!

Actually, Suo Jia wasn't the only one who thought that way. The academy, as well as the entire world, thought the same. When two people were dueling, prohibiting magic equipment was pointless. As long as one side could kill the opponent, they could use whatever they wanted. In the first place, magic equipment was a factor in one's strength.

Perhaps people would look down on Suo Jia, since he had some stupid money that just served to show off that he was a hedonistic son of rich parents. If he was stripped of his money, his formidability might cease to exist.

However, Suo Jia completely ignored such discussions. These magic equipments weren't things that he just picked up. For the sake of exchanging several equipments, Suo Jia had used up a whole year's worth of his income to obtain the pieces of those two Legendary ranked equipment sets. Such great investments would naturally give back rewards. Good tools were the prerequisite to the successful execution of a job, after all.

Although Suo Jia was not satisfied with the outcome of the competition, he didn't really want the girls to keep going until a victor emerged. Sometimes, being locked at a stalemate would motivate the two girls' fighting spirits, and make them more determined to surpass each other's targets. This would make them work even harder.

## Chapter 172: Arduous Training (Part 2)

---

Besides, it wasn't like the girls didn't know the feeling of defeat. They would be effortlessly suppressed by Suo Jia every day. Even if the two of them teamed up, they would still be easily defeated by Suo Jia. There was nothing that could be done about it...Suo Jia's battle skills were too powerful. Even if they had a whole set of linked Legendary equipment, the girls still weren't able to stand up against him.

Suo Jia's training speed wasn't something that the girls could compare to. The effects of the Atlantis crown alone was enough to make the girls feel powerless. Suo Jia could remain in the state of meditation 24 hours of a day, 365 days a year. With the addition of the Faerie's Soul and others, the equipments' effects to boost training far surpassed the auxiliary effects of superior grade Legendary ranked equipment. The more time passed, the greater the distance between the girls and Suo Jia would become.

After a year, the emblem on Suo Jia's right arm was now the emblem of a Great Mage. Both his magic and spirit power had reached over 3000. On the other hand, the two girls hadn't yet broken through 1000. In terms of just meditation alone, Suo Jia's training time was at least triple of theirs!

It could be said that the equipment on Suo Jia's body barely boosted the might of magics. However at the same time, it had the effect of boosting training advancement by 200%. It was precisely due to this reason that Suo Jia was still much stronger than the girls even if he didn't wear those magic equipments that could increase magic formidability.

Most importantly, Suo Jia had mastered the exclusive passive magics: Precision Strike, Spirit Lock, Acceleration Drive, and Berserk Impact. This made his activated magic stronger by severalfold!

Although Suo Jia was currently still a beginner Great Mage, he could already say that he was able to defeat any other Great Mages. This was because aside from his equipment, Suo Jia also had the help of these four great battle skills.

Passive battle skills actually didn't need to be directly activated. They automatically helped other battle skills. Precision Strike aimed, Spirit Lock traced, Acceleration Drive...after mastering, would become an instinct. For example, a skilled warrior could just lift their weapon and the attack would automatically hit its target. That's because the warrior had already mastered the use of Precision Strike and Spirit Lock.

There was no way to improve passive skills aside from constantly using them. After one used them enough, the battle skill's power would increase. Having self-confidence meant that one had to have practiced a lot. The more one trained in something, the more they'd naturally believe in their ability.

After 10 months of training, and at the same time Suo Jia turned 12 years old, his Precision Strike, Spirit Lock, Acceleration Drive, and Berserk Impact had all been trained to the second realm. The might of his magic power had exponentially increased compared to the him of 10 months ago. Combined with his equipment and his original strength, as well as his proficiency with magic and level

of mastery, Suo Jia's overall strength surpassed the girls' strengths combined by severalfold.

Within the secret room, Suo Jia was currently facing a wall. He raised his right hand, and a blue line of light flashed, causing a fine hole about the girth of a chopstick to silently appear on a magic target across from him. What was this? This could only be the Ice Arrow Technique that Suo Jia had mastered.

Although it was an ice attack, its speed rivaled a Wind Blade's, and its force of impact rivaled a Violent Fireball's. In terms of sturdiness, it rivaled an Earth Pike, and at the same time, it had the same freezing effects of an ice magic. It was an extremely formidable attack, and was the result of Suo Jia training nonstop for 10 months.

Lightly retracting his hands, Suo Jia fished out a blue colored potion and drank it. He then lifted his right hand once more, and shot out a few dozen Ice Arrows in succession. Lines of blue light continued to flash between Suo Jia and the magic target; these lines were the afterimages left from the Ice Arrows!

During these past 10 months, Suo Jia had activated the Ice Arrow Technique 10,000 times each day. As the most powerful singular ice elemental attack, Suo Jia knew that he had to train this to its limit. This was the most powerful, and most effective singular magic in 1v1 battles.

Activating the Ice Arrow Technique had many benefits. It could not only allow one to become more proficient with the Ice Arrow, it could also improve one's comprehension of the Ice Arrow's

might. At the same time, it could help one train in all four passive attacks. Most importantly, it could quickly increase magic and spirit power.

Humans were just like this; everything they used more often would become more formidable. If one never used something, it was possible that their skill would deteriorate. For example, a person that runs every day would naturally become faster, and his leg power would also be boosted. It was this kind of practice.

Magic power and spirit power were like this as well. The more one used them, the faster the powers would improve. This wasn't training, but practice. It was hard work and numerous revisions that improved spirit power and magic power. This made the energies more refined, and more resilient!

It was exactly these dull and monotonous types of training that Suo Jia had done during the past year. This had allowed him to raise the four passive magics to a new realm. These passive magics had a total of only three realms. The peak of training was the combination of all three of these magics, which formed an entirely new passive magic: Magic's Core! Nobody really knew what effects it had. Only those that managed to achieve this realm would know what kind of state it was.

Time slowly trickled by. From beginning to end, Suo Jia stood there, monotonously activating the Ice Arrow Technique over and over again. He'd occasionally pick up one of the three colored potions and drink it to replenish his magic power, spirit power, and physical strength so that he could continue training nonstop.

After some amount of time passed, Suo Jia finally breathed out in satisfaction. He fished out a handkerchief to wipe the sweat off his brow, and then turned around to leave the room and towards the backyard.

There were currently 10 girls sitting at a long table in the backyard's new building. They were so concentrated and preoccupied in their work that they didn't even notice Suo Jia's arrival. As their hands continuously moved back and forth, exquisite spears would form from their hands.

These 10 girls were slaves that Suo Jia had bought from the market. They were Suo Jia's alchemy helpers. Being youthful and beautiful weren't their strengths; in fact, it was their sharp and bright alertness that made them special! These were also the standards at which Suo Jia had chosen them.

As soon as he entered the building, one of the maids walked over and passed a dozen letters to him while respectfully saying, "Young Master, these are the letters you've received these past few days."

Suo Jia nodded and took the dozen letters. After flipping through them, Suo Jia first chose to open the letter from the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, and he read it closely.

Suo Jia's face soon broke out into an excited smile. During the 10 month period, the girls had finally achieved it; they had conquered the Gold Triangle's trade routes just as Suo Jia had ordered them to. These were the empire's most flourishing and profitable major trade routes. Glory City was its center, while Tidal Granary City and White Fields City were its horns, perfectly forming the Gold

Triangle. The profits from this area were definitely something that a typical person couldn't even imagine.

However, after a period of joy, Suo Jia also became distressed. He knew that now, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had nothing to do. After seizing the Gold Triangle, they no longer needed to move about, nor were they allowed to. From a training standpoint, Suo Jia needed to quickly find them a new objective!

Suo Jia didn't continue to ponder it, and casually destroyed the letter. He then opened the second letter. This was sent from the Adventure Union. Its contents were simple; someone had provided information about the pieces of the Atlantis set!

Suo Jia's eyes flashed, and then he calmly stuffed the letter into his interspatial ring. He then opened up the fourth letter; after a careful read, he discovered that it was from the Empress. The letter said that the Emperor was no longer well!

There was no point in guessing; when it said he wasn't well, it didn't mean that he was dying or anything, but that his skills in bed were no good anymore. He couldn't get it erect or very hard anymore, and even when it did, it wouldn't last long. He had begun to turn impotent, and ejaculated prematurely. However, after thinking about it, it made sense; the old man was already 54 or 55 years old. After encountering the Empress' wonders and falling to her attacks, it was something inevitable.

In the letter, the Empress begged Suo Jia, saying that he had to help her. She had already prepared a pair of Fire Phoenix bracelets as a thank you gift. In addition...the Emperor had agreed that as



long as Suo Jia could recover his youthfulness, he'd raise Suo Jia's rank by another level. This would make Suo Jia into an absolute aristocrat: a viscount!

Suo Jia destroyed the letter with a smile, and continued to look at the next letters. These were all sent from the major unions to notify him of the Golden Angels, Dark Angels, and Blood Angels corps' rise in rank. After casually sweeping a glance at the letters, Suo Jia destroyed these letters as well; there was nothing significant.

# Chapter 173: The First Battle (Part 1)

---

After finally reading the last letter, Suo Jia began to plan out what to do next. But just then, Lan Ruo walked in and respectfully said, “Young Master! There’s a group of people outside requesting to meet you. They claim that they’re the people you’ve been looking for the whole time!”

“Oh!” Suo Jia’s eyes lit up at Lan Ruo’s words. The past year, he had only ever searched for one group of people; however, Suo Jia didn’t know the group’s name. He only knew that these were the people that had given them the 44 interspatial rings, as well as the dagger and blue glove.

Refusing to tarry any longer, Suo Jia urged, “Hurry...Lan Ruo, tell them to come find me in the parlor!”

Seeing Suo Jia’s impatient expression, Lan Ruo could tell that this group of people was extremely important to the Young Master. It was normally very rare to see him so anxious. Although he was still only a child, Suo Jia was always calm, and wasn’t any different from an adult in that aspect. He was probably even calmer than most adults.

5 minutes later, the doors to the parlor opened, and three robust figures walked in. One of them was a knight with glittering armor, the other was a fire mage wearing red mage robes, and the final one was an earth warrior wearing green armor!

As soon as he walked in, the silver armored knight said, “I heard

you've been looking for us? For what reason?"

Suo Jia didn't directly reply, and instead first gestured for them to sit down. He then ordered a servant to bring tea. In reality, after researching alchemy for a dozen or so months, Suo Jia was now extremely interested in the Atomic Alchemy Lab.

Originally, Suo Jia had thought that the location of the Atomic Alchemy Lab was something that everyone knew. However, when Suo Jia researched it, he discovered that this wasn't the case at all. He had managed to find the locations of some of the Atomic Alchemy Lab's workshops, but was unable to figure out where the headquarters was located.

But Suo Jia was sure that the place that the silver armored knight and his group had adventured had to be near the location of the headquarters. They had simply not realized this fact.

Suo Jia wouldn't have thought of this months ago either. But after learning alchemy for so long, although he was still only an elementary alchemist, Suo Jia's understanding of alchemy was extremely rich now. If the place where so many precious treasures had been found wasn't the headquarters, then where else could it be?

Suo Jia went straight to the point and said, "The reason I was looking for you this time was mainly because I wanted to know if you guys have made any new discoveries, or found any new equipments. If you have, I can buy them from you for high prices!"

The reason he said this was because Suo Jia didn't want them to realize the importance of this location. Suo Jia believed that they definitely hadn't excavated the area very closely. There were bound to be many things that they didn't recognize, but actually had priceless value as alchemy items and information. Suo Jia wanted to obtain all of this priceless alchemy information. Even a missing page was already an unimaginable loss!

Historically, the Atomic Alchemy Lab was the most accomplished laboratory in the alchemy world. Their alchemy had risen to a frightening level. It was said that...they had even used alchemy to create a sub-Divine Artifact. It was precisely due to this reason that they suffered from tragic disaster.

Passed down from ancient times, it was said that when the numerous gods left the world, they had left behind 10 Divine Artifacts. These Divine Artifacts were actually magic-conducting tools created by the Gods. Aside from these 10, the next most powerful device was the Atomic Alchemy Lab's sub-Divine Artifact. It was man-made, and the most powerful magic-conducting device. Below it were Epic ranked equipment sets, and then Legendary ranked equipments.

Thus, the matter of the Atomic Alchemy Lab's location was extremely important. Suo Jia definitely didn't want anyone to know of it, unless they had thoroughly searched for it already.

The silver armored knight smiled and said, "We do, we definitely do...we haven't just been playing around these past 2 years. Although we don't have that many good items, it's not like we have none at all!"

The silver armored knight and his two companions all opened their interspatial rings to pour out a large amount of magic items. It was clear that their profits from the past few years were more than usual; they even had Legendary ranked equipment.

Although Suo Jia was no longer interested in Legendary ranked equipment, he still put on an excited front. He continued to push words through his mouth as he talked with the three people, making discreet inquiries about any news they had, as well as stories from their adventures.

These three were all adventurers; moreover, they were from the same adventure group, and had traveled all over the world to explore historical sites. The number of occurrences that occurred around them was too great.

Finally, Suo Jia chose two of the Legendary ranked equipment. He had already heard all the information that he had wanted to hear as well. Yet the three people were still immersed in excitedly telling their stories as they continued telling their tales.

In order to not draw their suspicions, Suo Jia patiently listened to their stories, and even spent a large amount of money to buy the two Legendary ranked equipments. He then hospitably entertained them.

It was deep in the night when he escorted the three out. Suo Jia then sat cross-legged by himself in the secret room, silently pondering future plans. First of all, he had to bring Aimi and Aila

to meet the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes. Then, he'd have to find the person with the Atlantis armor, and obtain it for himself through fair or foul means.

Afterwards, the group would rush to the remains of the Atomic Alchemy Lab. The 36 girls would stay there and be responsible for watching over and excavating the area, while Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila rushed back to the capital to help the Emperor. At the same time, he'd be able to bring the Fire Phoenix bracelet back, as well as raise his rank. He could retrieve a piece of land while helping Aimi and Aila gain some real life experience.

Finally, after helping the Emperor, Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila would rush back to the Atomic Alchemy Lab and complete the excavation. Then, he'd bring all the girls with him towards his newly acquired land. He hadn't yet decided what to do from there, but he'd deal with it when the time came.

---

NSFW

---

After thinking this through, Suo Jia opened his eyes and quietly stood up. He then began to head towards the place where the two girls were training. When he pushed open the door to the underwater training area, he saw that there were a hundred naked girls currently bathing in the Hydration Technique. Seeing this, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile. He immediately stripped off his own clothes, and walked to join the crowd of girls.

All the people within the White Villa were girls. Aside from Suo Jia, there were no other males. That's why nobody bothered to

keep their guards raised. The only male that could possibly enter here was Suo Jia.

When they saw Suo Jia enter, they couldn't help but clamor in amusement. The girls were now 12 years old, and had started developing a bit early. They had already begun their journey to maturing into girls. The small buns on their chests had already begun developing, and were no longer as flat as before.

The 12 year old girls' EQs were at least equivalent to a 14 year old boy's by now, and were perhaps even higher. They could now faintly understand how to be embarrassed and reserved. They knew the differences between boys and girls. However...although they would raise their guards around strangers, Suo Jia was different. He was too familiar of a figure now. After 4 some years of bathing together, practically every day, they were all used to his presence. He wasn't their sister, but was rather someone better than a sister.

However, because they were used to Suo Jia's existence, it was still a fact that Suo Jia was indeed a male and could not be forgotten. Even if they forgot that fact, they would instantly remember that if they were to look at at Suo Jia, there would be an extremely obvious long thing sticking out from him.

Although he still couldn't get an erection, Little Suo Jia had grown quite large as Suo Jia had grown older. It was already 10 centimeters long and a decent girth, like a small rolling pin. In this regard, Suo Jia's assets were quite adequate, and Little Suo Jia could be considered a leviathan. This sight attracted the eyes of the girls, who couldn't help but sneak a look.

The group of girls walked on over where Aimi and Aila suddenly came into view. Aimi stuck out her hand as if accustomed to the act, and grabbed onto the the little brother of Suo Jia and laughed. “You scoundrel, were you trying to take a peek at us girls taking a bath?”

Furrowing his eyebrows, he looked at the two obvious bulges on Aimi’s chest. Suo Jia had to admit, out of every girl here, Aimi had developed the best and the “greatest” ones. However, she still couldn’t act so unbridled!

Seeing Suo Jia frown, Aimi knew that he was already having difficulty bearing the feeling. He was always like this; once she grabbed him below, he’d always twitch and fidget around unbearably. Yet, Suo Jia never objected to her actions. She continued to move her hand up and down in an unbearable yet pleasurable manner.

After Suo Jia had frowned, Aila’s icy cold came calling out towards them. “Times up, switch with me!” Aila grabbed Aimi’s hand and...immediately replaced it with her own icy cold hand on Little Suo Jia.

Seeing this scene, all the other girls were shocked. They went quiet for a moment before they suddenly clamored over. They wanted to see and touch it for themselves. These girls had pretty much seen Little Suo Jia grow, and were naturally familiar with it. Caressing it was a method of showing their closeness to it.



Finally, after the girls gently stroked it one after another, the waves of stimulation were finally to the point where Suo Jia couldn't take it anymore. To the shock of every girl there, he finally had his first ever erection in front of them...

## Chapter 174: The First Battle (Part 2)

---

There wasn't much to arrange, the White Villa's matters didn't require Suo Jia to be responsible in the first place. Thus, after a single mention of his leave, Suo Jia left the White Villa, bringing Aimi and Aila with him, and they began to head towards their destination.

Although this wasn't their first time traveling far, Suo Jia had to admit that it was a bit too eye-catching. Two girls with beautiful, jade-like faces accompanied by an extremely cute boy traveling alone would definitely catch anyone's attention.

In reality, based on his record, this was Suo Jia's second time traveling to a distant place. The first time was when he came to Holy Light from his hometown. However, back then, his mother had accompanied him. Moreover, they had taken a carriage here, and from beginning to end, they had stayed within the dark, cramped carriage the whole trip. When they had gotten off the carriage, they had already arrived at Holy Light City.

However, this time was different; Suo Jia didn't want to take a carriage. He needed to practice, as did Aimi and Aila. Although they were still young in age, Suo Jia was now a Great Mage, which was enough to go out traveling.

For the first few days, nothing happened. Although they had drawn people's attentions, they hadn't attracted any evil. It was only after a few days that Suo Jia suddenly sensed that they were being followed!

In the beginning, everyone had thought that they were only 3 children. There wasn't any profit in doing anything to them. However, when Suo Jia had stopped to eat, many people with ulterior motives had noticed Suo Jia's luxuries.

One couldn't blame Suo Jia though. For the past few years, he had gotten used to luxuries. He had difficulty eating normal food, and the dishes in restaurants seemed extremely dirty to him, making it hard for him to swallow the food down. Thus, Suo Jia couldn't help but take out his own golden plates and bowls. Only then was he comfortable enough to eat. By doing so though, trying to avoid showing off his wealth was impossible. In any other's' eyes, he now looked like a plump little lamb.

After eating, Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila all headed to the west. After progressing a few kilometers, Suo Jia discovered that there were some faint, crafty shadows flashing behind them. Although he wasn't willing to believe it, Suo Jia knew that they were probably being followed!

Faced with such a hostile situation, Suo Jia couldn't help but feel excited. Since he had decided to go out and travel, encountering danger was impossible to avoid. Suo Jia knew that this fight, which was essentially the first in his entire life, would begin soon. A true battle was something that Suo Jia had been anticipating for a very long time.

Although Suo Jia had fought that fire warrior in Holy Light Academy before, it had just been him being beaten. After a few years, Suo Jia was no longer the same as he had been before. If he encountered that fire warrior again now, Suo Jia would definitely

be able to easily kill him in a mere second!

If Suo Jia was so powerful, then why hadn't he gone back to get revenge? In reality, Suo Jia had already forgotten nobodies like him. Although he had humiliated Suo Jia, it wasn't worth especially looking for him, and gathering a large force to beat him.

Suo Jia believed strongly in fate. He believed that the heavens arranged everything out. If the fire warrior was destined to pay up for his actions, then the two of them would naturally meet again. At that time, the debt Suo Jia owed the fire warrior would be returned with interest. After all, Suo Jia never allowed unpaid debts.

"Freeze!" A voice roared out from in front of them. A dozen figures suddenly jumped out from the shrubbery ahead! The figures wildly flashed, and they instantly appeared in front of Suo Jia to block his way.

Seeing this, Aimi and Aila quickly drew the staffs on their backs, and glared at the crowd in front of them. They could also sense that today most likely wouldn't be boring!

Smiling, Suo Jia stopped in his tracks. He didn't take out his staff, and instead raised his hands to say, "Why are you stopping us? Could it be...that you guys are those rumored thieves?"

"Hehe..." A man with a beard walked out from the crowd. Suo Jia noted that this guy's body was short, but fat. There was a black, sheathed dagger at his waist. His face was meaty, and showed his

ferocious appearance. A single look was enough to discern that this man wasn't virtuous.

Greedy looking at Suo Jia, and then the two figures covered by blue cloaks next to him, the bearded man loftily said, "Hand over all the money on your persons, and I can spare your lives. Otherwise, the awesome me will kill you without holding back!"

As Suo Jia watched the opposite party say these amusing lines, he smiled and shook his head, "That's not possible. Not only do I refuse to hand over my money to you, I demand that you hand over your money instead!"

Suo Jia then reached into his pocket to take out a golden, glittering emblem. He gently placed it on his chest. At the same time, Aimi and Aila began to look at Suo Jia with expressions of envy.

What Suo Jia now wore was a gold and green designed emblem. In the middle of the pentagram shaped emblem was a green angel. What Suo Jia represented was the newly created fourth group aside from the Dark Angels, Golden Angels, and the Blood Angels: the Emerald Angels adventure group!

Suo Jia lovingly caressed the emblem. Suo Jia had put a lot of his heart's blood into creating this adventure group. Even Aimi and Aila didn't have the qualifications to join. The members of this adventure group would inevitably be the members of the main force leaving for the Greater Trade Routes. Unless their strength was recognized by Suo Jia, nobody had the qualifications to join this adventure group!

After stroking the emblem for some time, Suo Jia lifted his head and excitedly looked at the dozen or so figures in front of him. He said in an earnest voice, "Right now, I'll return your words right back to you. Immediately hand over all the money on your persons, and I can spare your lives. Otherwise...don't blame me for being merciless!"

"Gah!" The thieves were all shocked by Suo Jia's words. It wasn't that they'd never been yelled at by someone before, but this was the first time they'd ever been yelled at by such a young child!

Aimi and Aila simultaneously began to gather their magic power. A powerful amount of magic power began to fluctuate around the two girls, as it surged out and spread through the area surrounding them. In that moment, an invisible vortex had already begun to spin around the area.

Seeing this, the bearded man's expression abruptly changed. He shouted, "Damn! Those two are mages! Hurry up and attack them before they can activate their magic!"

In response to the bearded man's command, the thieves all drew the daggers from their waist, and wildly began to charge at Suo Jia and the two girls. Seeing this, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile. He made a gesture, signaling to Aimi and Aila not to attack.

The thieves quickly covered the few meters distance. The next moment...the thieves were flocking over to suppress Suo Jia and the girls. Seeing this, Suo Jia cruelly smiled and lightly stamped

his right foot on the ground. This instantly activated the Diamond Charge!

Without any precedence, rows and circles of diamond-like ice crystals began to form with Suo Jia as the center. The crystals fanned out and shot out explosively. Each ice crystal glowed brilliantly as it refracted the sun's rays.

Faced with such a powerful attack, the thieves really wanted to evade. However...the Diamond Charge's attacks were too concentrated together. Moreover, its speed was as fast as lightning. By the time they'd even thought of dodging, they'd already been hit by it.

"Ah..." Miserable cries rang out as dozens of thief bodies were sent flying through the air as they were hit by the Diamond Charge. Their figures flew up many meters into the air before falling back down. Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila all watched as they shattered into a millions of shards on the ground with a 'ping'!

At the sight of such a devastating scene, the magic power around Aimi and Aila immediately dispersed, as they were unable to hold back their urges to vomit at the sight. Underneath the sun's rays, a dark red color, as well as the glittering pieces of the corpses, filled their visions. How could this possibly be the human world? It was clearly the terrifying realm of the Underworld!

Suo Jia also felt uncomfortable inside, but it wasn't extreme. This was already his second time witnessing such a scene. The first time had been in front of the palace. However, that time couldn't really count as a fight since...those fellows had only tried to hold

the Empress back. They hadn't dared to actually attack. Thus, Suo Jia still thought of this as his first battle. It was very clear to see that...this first fight of his was a direct victory!



# Chapter 175: The Pinnacle Showdown (Part 1)

---

As they advanced further, Suo Jia and the two girls encountered multiple attacks from bands of thieves in succession. However, without an exception, none of these minor thieves had any formidable strength. In the beginning, Suo Jia had been excited to do the job himself, but in the end, he completely lost interest. Whenever someone obstructed their way, he directly told Aimi and Aila to battle instead.

Aimi and Aila combined also had peerless might. Although they weren't able to suppress the enemies as easily as Suo Jia could, they still weren't people that ordinary thieves could possibly rival. They managed to travel to their arranged destination with little delay.

The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had too many enemies. For the sake of maintaining a peaceful environment, they had chosen a narrow cave as their temporary training area. A few dozen large caravans were their temporary living quarters.

When Suo Jia arrived, the 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes were currently mock-fighting each other. Their figures blurred together, and loud booms resounded through the air again and again. It could be said that their fighting was beyond the ordinary definition of lively.

“Holy crap!” Suo Jia couldn't help but get excited by the sight. Without another word...he charged into the crowd. How could he miss out on such a fun activity?

Seeing this, Aimi and Aila refused to fall behind either. After a journey full of victories, they had accumulated enough self-confidence. No matter who their opponent was, they were sure that they could shake the opposite party!

After 10 months, Suo Jia discovered that these girls now possessed blazing murderous auras. Although they had previously emitted such auras as well, the difference between them then and now was way too great.

Back when they were still at Holy Light Academy, they had already possessed murderous auras. However, it wasn't very clear back then. But now was a different story. When they battled, their murderous auras seemed to leak out from their bodies. Mixed with the blazing battle qi around their bodies, it formed a red aura cocooning them. As it enveloped the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, one couldn't even differentiate their facial features.

As Suo Jia charged over, a clear shout rang through the air and a red gold figure suddenly dived down from dozens of meters above him. The large war blade in the figure's hand carried an unimaginably imposing air, and it whizzed down at Suo Jia with a bang.

Faced with this thunderous attack, Aimi's and Aila's expressions couldn't help but change. However, Suo Jia smiled instead. He lightly pressed his foot down into the ground. A ripple formed around Suo Jia's right foot, and the waves undulated through his surroundings. At the same time, Suo Jia's body leapt up into the air like a fish jumping out of water!

“Rumble!” As Suo Jia leapt up, the opposite party powerfully swung their blade, which directly bombarded the ground. Red light shot out in all four directions, sending rubble flying everywhere. This showed just how formidable this single attack was!

At the same time, Suo Jia was still flying upwards. He adjusted his body's position, and pressed his right hand down. The four auxiliary magics, Precision Strike, Spirit Lock, Acceleration Drive, and Berserk Impact, all automatically activated. Meanwhile, Mysterious Ice Arrow instantly activated as well!

“Chi!” A sharp whizzing sound rang through the air as a bright blue streak of light instantly connected Suo Jia and that red gold figure. Due to Suo Jia's accurate attack, the red gold figure was violently blasted backwards. Only after leaving a dozens of meters long indent in the ground did the figure finally stop skidding.

Seeing this scene, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes couldn't help but abruptly stop in their tracks and look towards the sky. There, Suo Jia currently had his arms crossed in front of his chest as he looked down at everyone with a smile. What really shocked everyone was that Suo Jia had actually stopped in midair. Waves rippled out from under his feet one by one, as if he was standing on water.

After a while, the red gold figure that had been miserably thrown across the ground slowly crawled up. She awkwardly rubbed her head and said, “I was careless just now. I hadn't imagined that Young Master's reaction would be so fast, and that your

counterattack would be so powerful. You pretty much evaded the attack the same time you attacked. My loss was to be expected!”

Suo Jia smiled as he shook his head and said, “Who said you lost? I don’t think I defeated you at all!”

Hearing this, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix on the ground was dumbfounded for a moment before she asked in confusion, “But...I was already accurately hit by you. If it weren’t for the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes, I would’ve already...”

“Wait a minute!” Before she had finished speaking, Suo Jia frowned and said, “I don’t understand. Why must you exclude the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes?”

“That...” Everyone couldn’t help but be at a loss after hearing Suo Jia’s question.

Helplessly shaking his head, Suo Jia said, “You guys should know that I spent much of my blood and spirit on everything you’re wearing. It was always a part of your strength. No matter who you face, unless they can break through your armor, you haven’t been defeated. Even that attack I hit you with just now is the same!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the red gold figure walked out from the line of other Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes and said in a clear voice, “Young Master is right. As a warrior, a loss is only when one can no longer move. As long as one can still act, can still counterattack, then it cannot qualify as a loss! The battle’s outcome is still far from determined!”

Nodding his head in praise, Suo Jia replied, "That's right. Although you were hit by me, it hasn't taken away your ability to resist. In addition, it had little impact on your strength. You all must remember that this armor cannot break. Although it's hard to avoid encountering an attack...there is nothing in this world that can harm this armor. That's why you shouldn't be afraid of getting hit. No matter how precise the enemy's attacks are, as long as you can still counter, you will not lose!"

All of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' eyes lit up at Suo Jia's words. Everything that had occurred the past 10 months was already more than enough to confirm the truth of Suo Jia's words!

That's right, in all of the Gold Triangle, their strength wasn't actually the most powerful out there. In reality, if they got rid of their clothes, it'd be quite good if they could even be counted as average rank. If there were a total of 100,000 warriors on the entire Greater Trade Routes, there would at least be 30,000-40,000 people stronger than them.

However, it was just as the Young Master said. Although they couldn't evade all attacks, and were perhaps no match for these attacks, so what? With the protection of this peerless armor, they weren't afraid of any attacks. With the help of the four colored potions, even if they couldn't defeat their opponents, they could run away. Even if they couldn't escape their opponents, they could wear down the opponent so that they'd lose their physical strength and be unable to continue chasing them. Otherwise, the girls would've died ages ago.

Suo Jia smiled at the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix across from him and said, “Duo Mei, right? Long time no see. Let me test exactly what realm your strength has reached. Come...go ahead and attack me!”

Duo Mei’s eyes lit up. Although the Young Master was still young, his strength wasn’t low. The Young Master from 10 months ago might’ve been stronger than any of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes in terms of strength, but Duo Mei believed that now, she absolutely wouldn’t lose!

After 10 months of arduous battles, with the help of the completely linked pseudo-Epic ranked equipment set and the Fire Phoenix Necklace, Duo Mei’s strength had increased quickly. One could even describe the growth as ridiculous. The current her had long since surpassed her other companions, and she had become the absolute strongest among the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes!

Young Master was strong, extremely strong. However, Duo Mei still believed that the current her was stronger than the Young Master. Just as he had said, she essentially couldn’t be defeated by attacks!

Seeing that the two were prepared to engage in battle once more, all of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes scattered. Without question, the previous Young Master had been far superior to any of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes. However, Duo Mei was the same now. She was the absolute strongest Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix. Now...the two strongest existences were about to fight! Exactly who would win, and who would lose?

## Chapter 176: The Pinnacle Showdown (Part 2)

---

Excitedly looking at Suo Jia, Duo Mei confidently waved the long blade in her hand and loudly asked, “Young Master, can I use the spear and the four colored potions? If not, I’m fine as well.”

In response to Duo Mei’s question, Suo Jia darkly smiled and said, “This is a battle, not a friendly competition. We only have one goal: to obtain victory over our opponent using any methods, despicable or evil...as long as we can defeat our opponent, we can use anything. There aren’t any taboos at all. Just come at me!”

Aimi and Aila couldn’t help but sharply inhale at Suo Jia’s words. They really couldn’t understand why the Young Master had decided on such ruthless rules. Everyone was close friends, so why do this?

However, the 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes couldn’t help but sigh in admiration when they heard Suo Jia’s words. If it were before, they probably would’ve reacted the same way as Aimi and Aila, naive enough to think that such cruelty shouldn’t be allowed. However, after the past 10 months of bloodshed, they understood that Young Master’s method was the smartest way. The winner was the just king, and the loser was the foe. As long as the enemy was defeated, it was righteous!

Duo Mei slowly lifted the war blade in her hand and tightly grasped the blade’s hilt. Although she was completely confident that she could defeat Suo Jia, as a proper warrior, she had to maintain her mentality of needing to defeat her enemy until the

battle ended. With this mentality, she'd be able to focus all her energy into achieving victory. This was a warrior's greatest asset!

At the same time, Suo Jia's expression had grown heavier. Although...in terms of attacking and evading, Suo Jia wasn't afraid of his opponent, Suo Jia knew that his defense was extremely lacking. He didn't have that type of peerless armor! Once he was hit, he would most likely lose.

In terms of attack, support, and recovery, Suo Jia believed that he had already reached equivalent realms compared to Duo Mei. However, in terms of defense, he was still inferior. Although he had the Glacial Armor, it was only effective as a defense at long range. It wasn't very useful against powerful, explosive attacks at close range. This was also why mages were so afraid of close combat.

In addition, truthfully speaking, Suo Jia didn't actually like the Glacial Armor. While it protected Suo Jia's body, its chilly air also froze him. Wearing the armor was equivalent to Suo Jia freezing himself. Magic didn't differentiate friend from foe.

If one wanted the Glacial Armor to be harder and sturdier, the temperature had to be lowered. Moreover, since it was worn on the body, the Glacial Armor's extremely low temperatures would have the same invasive attacks on the user's body as the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' fire wind battle qi damaged their skin.

After a while, Suo Jia came to a decision. He decided it was best to put some distance between them to prevent close combat. If the opponent activated Thousand Feathers, he'd use the Space Shield



to block. Suo Jia had tested the interspatial ring before, and was able to materialize 10,000 Space Shields in succession without a problem. It was evident that the interspatial ring could release infinite Space Shields with the help of the crystal stone.

It was fortunate that the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix's Thousand Wings wasn't invincible. Although it was extremely fast, and very explosive, it required a certain amount of time to store up energy for it, around 3 seconds. Thus, it wasn't impossible to detect, and one couldn't hide its presence from the opponent. It mainly depended on how accurately the other party could shoot it, and whether or not they could dodge.

At the moment, Suo Jia had the limitless Space Shields, as well as the four colored potions. That's why...the Thousand Feathers wouldn't have that much of an effect on Suo Jia. What he really needed to worry about was his opponent gaining on him until the attacks became close range. With the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix's speed, a single mishap would result in a struggling fight, and end in a loss before he realized what had even happened.

Suo Jia slowly raised his right hand. With the support of the four great auxiliary magics, an ice strip about the size of a chopstick whizzed out once more. A line of blue light instantly connected the space between the two people.

“Chi...Tang!” The Ice Arrow was accurately blocked by Duo Mei's blade, the sound resonating powerfully through the air. The war blade in Duo Mei's hand, as well as the surface of her armor, quickly began to condense into large pieces of ice!

Seeing this, Duo Mei couldn't help but start. She soon realized that although she had managed to slice the Mysterious Ice Arrow, her attack had released its freezing air, which had begun to freeze her body and the war blade in her hand. If she didn't react soon, she'd become an ice cube!

Not daring to tarry any longer, Duo Mei wildly raised her battle qi. Her entire body flashed with a red glow, dispersing all of the icy mist surrounding her. However...before she could even take a breath, a second ice arrow instantly crashed into her armor-plated chest. The powerful momentum fiercely blasted Duo Mei down into the ground, dragging her backwards until she had formed another meters long scar in the ground!

"That..." Faced with the powerful Suo Jia, the girls couldn't help but stare blankly. Although in terms of speed, the ice arrow couldn't be compared to their Thousand Plumes, it wasn't that much more inferior. At the most, shooting at a distance of 100 meters meant it was pretty much undodgeable. Its speed was too fast, it practically hit its target the same time it was released.

"Tch..." Miserably crawling back up from the ground, Duo Mei finally focused her concentration. She faced Suo Jia, who was slowly stretching his right hand towards her, Duo Mei abruptly spread her arms. With a shout, blazing flames ignited and leapt into the air. Duo Mei stood amidst the whooshing of the fire and wind, much like a goddess of battle.

"Hehe..." Duo Mei smiled and proudly declared, "Young Master, this is the Fire Phoenix Necklace's strongest battle skill: Fire Phoenix Protection. With this shield, nobody can freeze me!"

Faced against an abnormal existence that could control both water and ice elemental mages, Suo Jia couldn't help but sigh in relief. Fortunately...such a mighty treasure hadn't been given to anyone else. Otherwise, if Suo Jia ever encountered it, he would've regretted his decision to death.

Suo Jia tentatively shot out another ice arrow. Against Suo Jia's attack, Duo Mei didn't dodge. Instead, she swept her war blade through the air, and accurately blocked the ice arrow as Suo Jia watched carefully. As expected...the ice arrow's freezing air was instantly swallowed by the flames rising from Duo Mei's body. It hadn't given rise to any freezing effects at all.

Suo Jia furrowed his brows. He knew that at the moment, the Ice Arrow Technique could only be used as distraction now. Wanting to rely on it to defeat Duo Mei could only be a delusion.

In reality, the Fire Phoenix Protection greatly consumed battle qi. However, Duo Mei had the four colored potions, so her battle qi was essentially limitless; she wasn't afraid of the consumption at all. Thus, Suo Jia could only get rid of his plans on winning with the Mysterious Ice Arrow.

Duo Mei abruptly reached her hand down to her waist, and a red gold spear appeared in her hand. Battle qi wildly gathered there... and then Duo Mei fiercely swung it, activating a full strength Thousand Feathers!

Faced against the Thousand Feathers attack, Suo Jia really

wanted to resist with the Mysterious Ice Arrow. However, this would be extremely difficult. Putting aside the extreme speed of the Thousand Feathers, simply making two chopstick-sized attacks collide with each other midair wasn't something either Suo Jia or Duo Mei could achieve.

Suo Jia stretched out a hand, and calmly opened the Space Shield. Moments later...the red gold Thousand Feathers silently disappeared without a trace. All of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes were shocked into a daze at the sight.

Duo Mei looked at Suo Jia suspiciously, and didn't continue to attack. Instead, she asked in confusion, "Young Master, the Space Shield can indeed block my Thousand Feathers, but it can only block three times, and I have 36 spears!"

"Hehe..." Suo Jia smiled and scratched his head in embarrassment, "I always forgot to tell you all, but my interspatial ring is different from yours. Mine can release Space Shields infinitely!"

Ah!

At Suo Jia's words, Duo Mei was first stunned, but she then violently shook her head, "You can't do that, you're really shameless! How can you fight that way? You're being too ridiculous! There's no way I can obtain victory!"

Calmly looking at Duo Mei, Suo Jia shook his head and said, "No, how can that be invincible? You can't forget, the Space Shield

requires a moment. As long as you pull apart the distance between us and use your extremely fast frequency of activating attacks, I won't have the time to activate my Space Shields. That's why... mages are afraid of close combat!"

All of the girls' eyes couldn't help but light up after hearing these words. That's right...although the Space Shield was unrivaled, they didn't have to make that their target. As long as they could get closer, their attack speed and frequency would make it impossible for Suo Jia to block, even with the Space Shields!

Duo Mei laughed at the thought. Her body suddenly leapt over without a warning, and she first used her blade to slice up all the Mysterious Ice Arrows Suo Jia had activated. Soon after, she wildly sliced at the floating Suo Jia, much like a bullet!

# Chapter 177: By Any Means: Fair Or Foul

## (Part 1)

---

Faced with the violently charging Duo Mei, who was almost as fast as a rocket, Suo Jia couldn't help but let out a bitter laugh. Without a strong defense, Suo Jia would definitely not be able to fight against a warrior in close combat. Furthermore, against someone as strong as Duo Mei, he had no choice but to dodge her attacks. However...obviously, Suo Jia would not simply rely on dodging throughout the entire match, as that would only delay his death. Launching an attack while evading was the true way of the King.

With a press of his left foot, layers of ripples diffused through the air. Suo Jia's body seemed to turn into that of a swimming fish as he elegantly rose in a slanted direction, evading Duo Mei's blast. At the same time, the Ice Arrow instantly pierced through the space in between them once more.

Faced against this unavoidable ice arrow, Duo Mei remained calm and merely waved her left hand. A Space Shield materialized, causing the ice arrow to disappear silently without a trace. At the same time, the cloak on her body suddenly flew out from behind her, forming a streamer of red and gold as it began to drift into the air like wings.

During the following 2 minutes, Suo Jia finally witnessed the might of the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes. With its help, along with the support of the fire wind battle qi, Duo Mei was like a mounted, propelled rocket. She charged around violently in midair like a phoenix bathed in flames, and continuously activated

attacks in Suo Jia's direction, wave after wave.

On the other hand, although Suo Jia did not have as much explosive power, he was still extremely fast. With each step, more ripples dispersed from underneath his feet, and like a fish, Suo Jia leisurely and easily dodged Duo Mei's incoming attacks. As he dodged, he continuously returned attacks back at her as well.

In reality, Suo Jia had many battle skills that could bring him to victory. For example, the close range water manipulation, Ice Stream, Diamond Charge, Freezing Touch...however, all of these required him to be within close quarters to activate. Against Duo Mei, doing so would be a gamble!

Although Suo Jia had a lot of attack methods at close range, the slightest fault or lack of effects would result in Suo Jia being instantly defeated by Duo Mei, and he wouldn't be able to put up any resistance. His defenses for close combat were just too weak, which was why Suo Jia kept evading.

Of course, in this kind of battle, Suo Jia definitely needed to obtain victory, and Duo Mei was the same. With the assistance of the four colored potions, they could keep battling without end, not stopping until a victor was decided.

For a moment, the two figures constantly weaved through the sky in pursuit of each other, and the audience on the ground was watching in a daze. However...regardless of whether it was the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes or Aimi and Aila, everyone was greatly benefiting from viewing this battle. The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes could learn many things from Duo Mei, while

Aimi and Aila could learn various usages of water magic from Suo Jia.

Finally, Suo Jia was unable to stay deadlocked any further. The world was ruled by strength; as a boss, how could his strength not be greater? Although it was risky, Suo Jia knew that he had to obtain victory!

Suo Jia gritted his teeth and tilted away for some distance. He then abruptly turned around, and an ice arrow pierced through the air as it shot head-on towards Duo Mei.

Duo Mei, who was currently focusing all her energy on chasing after Suo Jia, suddenly saw him turn around and activate an attack directly at her. She couldn't help but feel shocked, however...her many months of battles weren't in vain, and she immediately focused her attention and sliced the incoming arrow into pieces with her blade. At the same time, the power of her blade didn't decrease at all, and she continued to fiercely slash it in Suo Jia's direction. She chose to not hold back, nor did she need to, since she knew that Suo Jia wouldn't be defeated so easily.

Everyone watched as Suo Jia and Duo Mei quickly neared each other like suicidal planes. It looked like they were about to collide, and for a moment, everyone grew anxious. In a direct collision, Duo Mei definitely wouldn't have any problems, but that wasn't true for Suo Jia. He didn't have any armor, and he was a mage. Naturally, he would be smashed into pieces if they made contact!

As everyone was worrying over this, Suo Jia suddenly reached out with his left hand and opened a Space Shield, which instantly



blocked Duo Mei's war blade. If everything went as planned, Duo Mei would ricochet off of it!

However, Duo Mei's experiences during these past few months were extremely important. After gaining tons of battle experience, she was able to judge the situation in that split second. The instant the blade hit the Space Shield, its power suddenly disappeared without a trace. After the light attack broke the Space Shield, Duo Mei skillfully released her energy once more. Red and gold light burst outwards as her war blade slashed explosively towards Suo Jia like a thunderbolt.

Suo Jia couldn't help but be taken aback by Duo Mei's experience and wisdom. He hadn't imagined that she would see through his plans and successfully initiate an attack after breaking through his Space Shield!

The Space Shield worked like this: while it had an absolute defense, a single touch was enough to disperse it. Even a three year old child could break it with a single fist. Just now...Duo Mei had first lightly broken through the Space Shield, managing to avoid encountering a rebound. She then suddenly gathered her power within the close quarters and slashed outwards. In such a situation, Suo Jia definitely wouldn't be able to block it; he hadn't even summoned the Glacial Armor yet.

Suo Jia knew that against the war blade's incoming slash, he didn't have the time to deploy a second Space Shield. However...he didn't believe that he would lose so easily. Although it was risky, it didn't mean that it couldn't succeed!

Suo Jia crossed his feet in a strange formation. The instant the war blade chopped at his chest, he nimbly shifted horizontally, and successfully avoided being cut in half by a hair's breadth!

“Wa!” Seeing this scene, all the girls cried out sharply. Suo Jia's figure was really too abnormal; his speed wasn't any slower than a bird's, and more importantly, his nimbleness was at an unfathomable level!

If Duo Mei was said to be a phoenix that was as fast as the wind, then Suo Jia would be an elusive fish. Although in terms of absolute speed, Suo Jia wasn't on par with Duo Mei, in terms of agility and spontaneous movements, Suo Jia had far surpassed Duo Mei.

Duo Mei was like a bird. Although her speed was fast, she was extremely slow at turning, and had to fly in an extremely large arc to circle around. It was impossible for her to turn at a right angle while flying at high speeds.

However, Suo Jia was different. He was like a fish darting around within the waters. When one tried to catch him, he'd simply wriggle his tail and instantly dodge to one side. As for turning in corners, he wouldn't show any signs of doing so beforehand, and wouldn't stop for a single moment to turn. He'd still be charging full speed straight ahead the second before, but after that second, he'd have already moved horizontally dozens of meters.

He lifted his head to drink a Magic Potion and a Spirit Potion. His chain of movements just now had consumed a lot of Suo Jia's magic and spirit powers. Seeing Duo Mei looking at him in shock,

Suo Jia returned with a gaze of praise.

In their exchange just now, Duo Mei had displayed her plentiful battle experience and knowledge. In contrast, Suo Jia had revealed his monstrous ability to move around mid-air. It could be said that if one of the two of them were the slightest bit lacking in skill, the battle would've ended in that instant.

“Defense capability!” As Suo Jia looked at Duo Mei, he began to realize just how important defense was. Without a powerful defensive ability, he'd have no way of entering close combat, nor any way of resisting against warriors. At best...he'd only be able to block a single blade strike! However, the current reality of the situation was that aside from dodging, he couldn't possibly receive a single attack from Duo Mei's blade!

“Tch...” Clenching his teeth, Suo Jia didn't think much before quickly attacking Duo Mei once more. Regardless of who won or lost, the battle's outcome had to be decided.

# Chapter 178: By Any Means: Fair Or Foul

## (Part 2)

---

Duo Mei didn't take Suo Jia's attack lying down. With the cry of a phoenix, the war blade increased in speed and dauntlessly danced through the air as it headed towards Suo Jia.

“Dong!” A soft sound resounded as Duo Mei once again softly broke through the Space Shield. Her blade lit up once more, and she tossed it towards Suo Jia with all her power. This time, Duo Mei swore to watch closely and see exactly how he was dodging!

“Diamond Charge!” Just when Duo Mei thought that Suo Jia would retreat again, he didn't, and instead an explosive sound resounded. A blue light burst out from Suo Jia as he instantly activated Diamond Charge to wildly attack her.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Three sounds rang out through the air as Duo Mei's body was hit by three waves of the Diamond Charge. Even with the Fire Phoenix Protection, she couldn't avoid the instant freezing power of the attack!

Although Duo Mei's entire body was wrapped in ice, Suo Jia wasn't going to naively think she had been completely frozen. In reality, she was only temporarily sealed by the ice. As long as she exerted power, she'd be able to break from it. Suo Jia knew that the result of the battle would come from this moment. If the victor wasn't determined from this attack, then this technique would no longer be of any use even if utilized again!

Suo Jia didn't dare waste any time. He quickly used his hands to make an ice stream materialize, and it firmly wrapped itself around the sealed Duo Mei. As his right hand tightly grasped the tail of the ice stream, Suo Jia activated a full power Freezing Touch! At the same time, Duo Mei had begun to erupt in flaming battle qi. The ice surrounding her became a brilliant red, and the inner walls of the ice layer quickly began to melt.

Suo Jia smiled darkly. He knew that this fight was his victory. He activated Freezing Touch one after another, replacing the layers as soon as they melted. At the same time, the thickness and sturdiness of the ice walls increased as well.

It could be said that at the moment, the two were fiercely competing their battle qi and magic power. However...Duo Mei had been completely sealed by the ice, so she couldn't drink any potions. On the other hand, Suo Jia was completely free to drink Magic Potions whenever he wanted, and could continue attacking without end. Everyone knew that Duo Mei had lost. If Suo Jia didn't stop, Duo Mei would be destined to be unable to escape the ice cube once her battle qi was exhausted.

After activating the magic a few times in succession, Suo Jia finally stopped, as he could already see Duo Mei helplessly stop releasing her battle qi from within the layers of ice. It was clear to see that she had also already understood that it was her loss.

Smiling, Suo Jia dispersed the ice layers releasing Duo Mei's body. She looked at Suo Jia with admiration as she sincerely said, "I definitely lost this time. Moreover, it was a complete loss. However...it won't be long before I will definitely surpass you!"

“Haha...” Suo Jia nodded with a smile. He knew that she wasn’t just saying empty words; with her talent and intelligence, she could surpass anyone as long as she worked hard. It definitely wasn’t just a dream. However...Suo Jia wasn’t a pushover either.

Suo Jia had already realized that although it wasn’t like he had no defensive abilities, it could only be used against long range attacks. Against a warrior’s close range attacks, Suo Jia wouldn’t be able to put up any resistance. As long as he found a way to resolve this weakness, Duo Mei would have to stake her all in order to surpass him.

Suo Jia’s eyes lit up. Making up for this weakness wasn’t impossible. What he needed to do next was...to find the Atlantis armor. That would be the best solution!

Suo Jia declared, “Alright. We’ll be training here for a month. After that, we can head out.”

Suo Jia paused for a moment before he continued in a serious voice, “Based on Duo Mei’s outstanding performance this past year, I hereby announce that Duo Mei has been specially appointed as the captain of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, and bestow her a part of an Epic ranked equipment set: the Fire Phoenix Earrings!”

“Wa!” All the girls cried out after hearing Suo Jia’s words. Although they knew the Young Master was extremely wealthy, they hadn’t imagined that he would casually give away even a

piece of a peak grade Epic ranked set. Following a boss like him was really amazing!

At the same time, Duo Mei was inwardly rejoicing that Suo Jia had appointed her a role and bestowed a reward. In her eyes, this was just another way of Suo Jia trying to win over her heart. Giving away presents would officially seal her. Suo Jia's intentions were abundantly clear!

Duo Mei sweetly accepted the case that Suo Jia passed to her, and after bashfully thanking him, she opened it in front of everyone. A bright red glow blinded all of the girls' eyes. Seeing the delicate and exquisite earrings, the girls were envious to death. When would they be able to get rewarded by the Young Master? It looked like...they'd have to work harder, and make sure that Duo Mei wasn't the only one hogging it all.

Suo Jia continued to declare, "Also, I made a new Emerald Angels adventure group. Based on Duo Mei's performance, I've decided that...she will join it!"

"Wa!" The girls jumped up. This adventure group couldn't even be compared to the mercenary group; aside from the captain of the adventure group, only six members could join. Less people was possible, but more wasn't allowed! Now, one of the spots was already taken by Duo Mei. That meant there were only 5 more places to fight over. If they didn't hurry up and work harder, they would lose their chance.

Everyone knew that although the Emerald Angels adventure group was the smallest of the four corps that Suo Jia had

established, it had the highest position. The seven experts in the Emerald Angels adventure group were the real elites and the backbone of the group. These people were core members that Suo Jia strongly believed would be stronger than anyone that challenged them.

During the next month, the 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, as well as Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila, fully immersed themselves into training. They were extremely busy fighting against each other every day in the valley. Only after the month had completely passed did they leave the area, and begin to head towards their objective.

...

Soaring Dragon City. Inside the Soaring Dragon Villa, a purple-faced, middle-aged man sat with his brows tightly knit together. He looked at the letter in his hand with a grave expression. Although it only contained a few words, these words were enough to make it impossible for him to relax.

“No matter what, I need to obtain the Atlantis armor. How much does it cost, name your price! If you don’t exchange it, I’ll come and retrieve it myself.” This was what the letter said. It was simple and clear-cut. It was also difficult to refuse, as it contained a threat as well.

As the treasure that guarded the Soaring Dragon Villa, it absolutely couldn’t be sold or exchanged. No matter what, this armor couldn’t be transacted in any way!



However, although the Soaring Dragon Villa's military fame couldn't be said to have a power that could shake the empire, it was still quite powerful. For the opposite party to dare say these kinds of words, it meant that he most likely had some kind of assurance behind him.

The purple-faced man gently placed the letter down on the table, and slowly stood up from the lord's seat. He loudly ordered, "Men, spread my orders. For the next few days, strengthen the garrison!"

After receiving the purple-faced elder's commands, the entire Soaring Dragon Villa sprung into action. At the same time, the elder immediately replied to the letter, rejecting the transaction. The Soaring Dragon Villa definitely wouldn't hand over their guardian treasure just because of a threatening letter. If the other party wanted it, they'd have to rely on their strength to come retrieve it!

It was midnight. The full moon shone brightly, and the sound of wind could be heard outside. A group of figures in red cloaks suddenly appeared in the training area located outside the Soaring Dragon Villa's entrance. Seeing the figures mysteriously appear, the guards first started, and then immediately shouted for men to surround the group. The alarms rang through the air as the entire Soaring Dragon Villa lit up. People flowed in like water from all directions, gathering in that same area.

Soon, the 30 some figures in red cloaks were surrounded by three inner layers and three outer layers comprising of over a thousand Soaring Dragon Villa guards. Afterwards...the guards split apart as

the lord of the Soaring Dragon Villa, the purple-faced man, walked out with an imposing air.

He swept his gaze over the group of red cloaks and said in a deep voice, “The letter from earlier was sent by you guys, right? However, I must apologize. The Atlantis armor was passed down from our ancestors, and it definitely cannot be exchanged for any price!”

One of the red cloaks slowly walked over and said in a lovely voice, “Sire, may I offer your esteemed self some advice? It’s still best if you hand it over. No matter how valuable the Atlantis armor is, it isn’t as important as human lives. If you give it to us now, we can satisfy any price or conditions you desire!”

“Hmph!” The lord sneered and firmly replied, “Don’t speak any further. My intention has already been expressed very clearly. The Atlantis armor won’t be exchanged for any price or condition!”

The red cloak coldly responded, “You’d better think this through clearly. Don’t just refuse a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit. If we act and forcibly take it from you, you will not only gain no benefits, you will also be losing a large number of your people’s lives in vain!”

Having received the red cloak’s provocation, if the lord continued to hold back, he wouldn’t be worthy of his position. He fiercely waved his hand and roared, “Seize them!”

Following his command, the surrounding guards all unsheathed

their weapons, and shouted as they charged at the 30 some figures. At the same time, the purple-faced lord also took out the staff on his back, preparing to join the assault at any moment.

# Chapter 179: Grasping Success (Part 1)

---

Despite the crowd of people crazily charging at them, the 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes weren't the least bit afraid. During the past several months, they had seen scenes like this a few times, a few dozen times, and many more. They saw this kind of stuff every day, and had long since become numb to it.

All of them reached to pull out the spears hanging at their waists. Their fire wind battle qi rushed out, and red gold glows varying from faint to strong all lit up. Then...with a uniform shout, the 36 red gold figures instantly dispersed like lightning.

“Wa! Ah...” In that moment, the area was filled with miserable cries. The 36 Thousand Feathers had sent hundreds of people to their deaths. In a mere moment, the entire area had become more like the underworld.

“Stop!” The purple-faced lord bellowed out after coming out from his shock.

Hearing this, all of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes pulled out their second spears, and quietly began to accumulate their energy again. At the same time, one of the red cloaks came out and said in a low voice, “What? Did the lord change his mind?”

The purple-faced lord shook as he looked at the figures in front of him, and couldn't help but curse at himself for being so blind. This was clearly the Angels corps that had thrown the entire Gold Triangle area into disarray just a while back. If he had just been a

bit more attentive, he wouldn't have had to suffer such major losses. Those hundreds of guards had essentially died in vain.

The purple-faced lord was confident that as a mage, he had surpassed these warrior Angels in terms of strength. However, he also knew that these Angels' armors were something a normal person couldn't break through. In addition, their speeds were abnormally fast. If he acted, perhaps he'd end up fine, but the entire Soaring Dragon Villa would most likely be unable to avoid catastrophe.

However, although he knew the villa's guards weren't a match for the girls, he still couldn't hand over the Atlantis armor, which had been passed down for dozens of generations, so easily. That was definitely impossible. For a moment, the purple-faced lord frowned at the difficult situation.

After a while, he finally raised his head, and firmly said to the red cloaks, "I admit that you are indeed very formidable. However... even if you kill all the people in this villa, don't even think about finding what you want!"

Duo Mei couldn't help but knit her brows at these words. She understood this reasoning as well; however, just as the Young Master had said, if the opposite party wasn't beaten to submission, they wouldn't consider this matter. In this world, everything had solutions.

Duo Mei sneered and said, "Distinguished lord, being able to find it or not is our own problem. However...your entire villa, including the old and sickly, as well as your children and wives,

will all lose their lives over this armor. Do you think that's worth it? Do you think that an armor that has been passed down for a thousand years is more important, or the villa that has been passed down for a thousand years?"

The lord frowned even fiercer at this. He looked at the spears already fully charged with energy in the 36 girls' hands, and then thought of all the lives in the villa. For a moment, the lord's response was completely lost.

Gritting his teeth, the lord angrily shouted, "No matter what, walking away with my armor just like that won't happen unless you guys challenge me one by one. Otherwise, even if you kill every single person in the villa, don't even dream of finding it!"

"Fine!" Duo Mei shouted in response, and resolutely said, "In that case, I'll comply. If you want a fight, I'll fight with you!" Duo Mei stepped forwards.

Seeing Duo Mei walk out from the group, the lord was excited as he said, "If I lose, I naturally won't have anything else to say. If my abilities aren't enough to protect this armor, I'll automatically give it to you. But what if I win?"

Duo Mei furrowed her brows. She knew that Young Master Suo Jia had to get this armor. Regardless of whether she lost or won, they couldn't give it up.

Duo Mei raised her head. Just as she was about to reply, a clear and sonorous sound suddenly rang out through the night,

“Distinguished lord, if you win, we’ll turn around and leave, and will not cause any further disturbance!”

Hearing the faintly discernible sound, the lord couldn’t help but inquisitively raise his head to look in the direction it had come from. However, he wasn’t able to find any trace of the voice’s owner. At the same time, Duo Mei grew excited; she knew that the Young Master was confident that no matter what, she’d surely win!

Duo Mei abruptly drew the war blade on her back and said to the lord opposite her, “Fine then, let’s begin our fight. The Young Master has already said that if you defeat me, we’ll turn around and leave without any further disturbances!”

“Fine!” The purple-faced lord roared and suddenly waved his hand to pull down his long robe. This revealed the armor that circulated a blue glow underneath his robe!

“Pa! Pa! Pa...” The purple-faced lord patted the armor on his body, and laughed, “Truth be told, this Atlantis armor has always been worn by the villa lord. Since you’ve agreed to my request for a battle, then let me show you the Atlantis armor’s might!”

As he spoke, the staff in his hand lit up. In that instant...a sapphire blue light shield rippled as it materialized around the purple-faced lord’s body, safely wrapping his body within the center of its perimeter.

Seeing this, Duo Mei didn’t dare waste any time. She abruptly

swung the spear in her hand that had long since been filled with magic power. A red gold glow flashed, and the purple-faced lord's water magic shield was suddenly hit with a powerful attack.

“Bang!” A muffled sound rang out as the spear accurately hit the rippling magic shield. Although it appeared to be gleaming waves reflected by the sunlight rippling through the air, it was actually the water elements condensing to form the magic shield. It was incomparably flexible and strong, but it wasn't actually a physical entity! After receiving Duo Mei's attack, it remained completely undamaged. It simply shuddered a few times, but aside from that, there was no other visible reaction.

“Hehehehe...” The purple-faced man chuckled darkly and said in disdain, “Although your attack is quite good, very powerful and very explosive, it's still just considered a small tickle to me!”

As he spoke, the purple-faced man's staff lit up once more as he bellowed, “Hailstone!”

Following his shout, a whistling sound suddenly came from above Duo Mei. With her body as the epicenter, a shrieking storm arose as frost began to condense. The storm covered a perimeter of about 10 meters, and rained down fist-sized, sharp-edged ice balls, and the air turned to a freezing, bone-chilling temperature!

Faced against the large hailstones and the cold air pouring out from the sky in all directions, Duo Mei frowned heavily. She powerfully waved her war blade to guard herself. Only now did she realize that her opponent for this battle was the lord of a villa that had been passed down for thousands of years!



From his external appearance, the purple-faced lord seemed to just be an ordinary, middle-aged man. However, he was already 60 some years old, and had trained in magic for over 50 years. His tremendous magic power couldn't be compared to a normal person's!

In addition, his status as the villa lord meant that he wasn't lacking in either family secret techniques passed through generations, or magic items that supplemented training. After so many generations, he was definitely well-prepared, to the point where one would call it excessive. This old guy's strength was absolutely superior in might!

Realizing that frost was quickly freezing the outer layers of her armor, Duo Mei didn't dare to waste anymore time on thinking. Her body quickly leapt up, and using her war blade to open up a path, she instantly charged out of the 10 meter circumference area that the Hailstone Technique covered. Battle qi then burst from her body, instantly shaking the ice layers on her armor off onto the ground.

As she turned to give a shocked glance at the purple-faced leader, she saw that he was currently standing there with a leisurely smile. He said to her, "Although you girls are powerful...it's impossible for you to defeat me!"

The purple-faced lord then laughed loudly, "Originally, if you girls had teamed up, I would've been unable to defeat all of you, even with the help of the Atlantis armor. However, if it's just a 1vs1 battle, the aid of the Water God's Shield from the Atlantis armor

will definitely lead me to victory!”

“Tch...” Hearing the purple-faced lord’s words, Duo Mei couldn’t help but inwardly curse at him. She wildly waved her right arm, and a red gold glow instantly crossed the space between them, exploding fiercely into that light blue magic shield.

Although it had received such a bombardment, the magic shield simply rippled a few times and shook once more. It still showed absolutely no signs of falling apart!

Meanwhile, having received this attack, the purple-faced lord refused to take it lying down. He raised his staff, and countless rays of blue light instantly appeared within an 100 meter perimeter, the rays all gathering at Duo Mei: Mysterious Ice Coffin!

Seeing this scene, Duo Mei first froze, then became alarmed as she discovered that numerous sparkling and translucent layers of ice quickly gathered around her body. The brief moment it took her to notice was enough for dozens of centimeter-thick ice layers to condense!

Shocked, Duo Mei hurriedly increased her battle qi output, prepared to burst the ice layers apart. However...by the time Duo Mei had finished raising her battle qi, the thickness of the ice layers had already surpassed 1 meter!

Everyone watched as Duo Mei was soon sealed by a rectangular ice coffin 1 meter tall, 2 meters wide, and 2 meters long. A single glance was enough to see that the coffin looked exceptionally

beautiful, like a piece of art.

## Chapter 180: Grasping Success (Part 2)

---

The purple-faced lord couldn't help but laugh at the scene, "How about it? This move is awesome, isn't it? Unless your strength far surpasses mine and you use powerful battle qi to disperse the cold stream within 100 meters while being frozen, you will definitely turn into an ice sculpture!"

Hearing the lord's words, the surrounding villa guards couldn't help but cheer. They knew...that their lord was a Magister. In addition, with the Atlantis armor he was wearing, he would be able to defeat any normal person!

"How ignorant!" A freezing cold voice echoed through the air.

Hearing this, the purple-faced lord couldn't help but tilt his head back to look up in the sky. As he did this, he failed to notice that Duo Mei, who was sealed within the ice coffin, began to shoot out brilliant red rays of light in all directions. That's right...it was the Fire Phoenix Protection!

The purple-faced lord's magic power was indeed too powerful. Duo Mei had been completely sealed by the ice coffin, unable to resist. However...the Fire Phoenix's protection could melt the ice layers. In addition, the purple-faced lord hadn't continued to lower the ice coffin's temperature. Duo Mei only needed a few seconds before she was able to move once more.

As expected, just as the purple-faced lord was looking upwards, Duo Mei managed to raise her war blade with difficulty from inside

the ice coffin. Raging flames suddenly rose from the blade, and the surrounding ice layers quickly melted. Then...Duo Mei used the blade to open a path and escape. During that single instant the lord had looked away to observe the sky, she quickly leapt out.

Hearing the winds change, the lord abruptly returned to his senses, and was shocked to discover that Duo Mei had leapt forward as fast as lightning. He quickly raised his staff, and a Mysterious Ice Arrow instantly shot out, piercing towards Duo Mei.

Seeing the ice arrow flying towards her, Duo Mei suddenly jumped up. As the ice arrow whizzed by, skimming the area beneath her feet, her cape abruptly flared out. Her cape faced the wind, and borrowing this vertical impetus, Duo Mei poured all her energy into her blade as she slashed it towards the lord.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Duo Mei attacked thrice in succession, leaving absolutely no margin between each slash. From her previous experience, a mage, regardless of how powerful he was, couldn’t oppose three explosive slashes in succession. The battle had already ended!

However, outside of Duo Mei’s expectations, the three consecutive attacks only caused the entire magic shield to violently shake as its shape changed from the blade’s fierce attacks. It still didn’t break!

These three attacks had already used up all of Duo Mei’s battle qi. Although she didn’t want to retreat, she had no other choice. Her feet jumped off the ground, sending her body flying upwards. High

up in the sky, her large cape split into six, making it look like six wings. The wind blew upwards, supporting Duo Mei's body as she quickly glided in a semi-arc!

Duo Mei hurriedly downed a Magic Potion, as well as a Spirit Potion. Without daring to waste any time, her body weaved around in the air and she wildly sliced downwards at the purple-faced lord from another angle.

The purple-faced lord couldn't contain his shock from seeing Duo Mei's attack. The staff in his hand swiftly danced, sending three ice magics pouring out in succession. They randomly shot upwards to oppose Duo Mei's attacks coming down from all directions.

100 meters up in the sky above the area, Suo Jia hung in the air as he watched Duo Mei's crazy strikes from above. That endless slew of attacks still wasn't able to break the sapphire blue magic shield; how was that possible? Was this the might of the Water God's Shield?

After receiving 30 of Duo Mei's explosive attacks, the sapphire blue shield momentarily shriveled. At the same time, the purple-faced lord stared at the lunatic-like Duo Mei. He couldn't understand, he just really couldn't fathom how the opposing party's battle qi was even stronger than his own! The same time his magic power and spirit power had been completely exhausted, the opposite party's seemed to have exponentially increased. This was completely impossible!

Facing the paralyzed lord, Duo Mei quickly brought her blade up to hold it horizontally against the lord's throat. She then used the

tip of the blade to lightly poke the azure armor.

Reading Duo Mei's gesture, the lord bitterly laughed. He knew... that regardless of the reason, he had already lost. He shook his head as he chuckled, and took off the armor, wordlessly handing it over to Duo Mei.

Duo Mei couldn't help but smile happily as she accepted the armor. The six streamers behind her fluttered as she and her 36 sisters rose into the air. Just like 36 large birds, they glided through the air and disappeared into the boundless night.

30 minutes later, inside a camping tent outside the city, Suo Jia excitedly put on the Atlantis armor. After possessing the armor, all the problems with his defense were finally solved. In addition, it had become his strongest point.

In reality, during today's battle, the magic shield hadn't been blasted apart by Duo Mei. Although the shield had received 30 explosive slashes in succession, forcing the shield to break was extremely difficult with Duo Mei's current level of strength. Her destructive power wasn't great enough. The reason the magic shield had been defeated was only because the purple-faced lord's magic power and spirit power had been exhausted.

Suo Jia knew that Duo Mei's victory today was simply a fluke. Firstly, it was because of the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes' physical defense, as well as Duo Mei's fire attribute's resistance against freezing. Most importantly, the Fire Phoenix Earrings that Duo Mei wore, as well as the Fire Phoenix Necklace, had majorly helped her during critical moments. Without these

two pieces of jewelry, Duo Mei would've lost very early on.

Of course, the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes were great, the Fire Phoenix jewelry were great, Duo Mei's original fire battle qi and battle skills were great as well. These were simply things that Duo Mei relied on to avoid losing. However, to defeat the opposite party, this was still not enough.

Battle qi and spirit power were bound to run out eventually. It was at that moment that one needed to rely on the four colored potions. It could also be said that although the purple-faced lord seemingly lost, he had actually won. If Duo Mei hadn't had the four colored potions, she definitely would've lost to the lord much earlier. After all...the difference in their strengths was still there.

The Atlantis armor was created from the skin of a mythological water beast. Because this beast was extremely close to the water elements, the Atlantis armor could boost the speed at which the elements condensed by 200%. It also contained the Water God's Shield magic, and increased its might by 10000! It even input magic power into the Water God's Shield at the rate of 1000/second.

The armor didn't really have any defensive abilities by itself. Its defense originated entirely from the Water God's Shield, which was an ultimate magic shield that had an absolute defense. Its set power was 10000, and the armor itself could automatically pour magic power into the Water God's Shield at a rate of 1000 moles/second. In addition...one could use their own spirit power and magic power to reinforce the magic shield!



If one wanted to harm the person within the shield, they needed to rip off the shield layer entirely. Otherwise, regardless of the attack used, the person within the shield wouldn't be affected by the attack at all. The flexible and strong Water God's Shield could absorb and buffer off any possible attacks.

Originally, this type of armor had extremely strict limitations. Once the Water God's Shield was activated, it would be incomparably powerful. However, typically speaking, the armor didn't have a thread of defensive abilities. A single jab would be enough to break through it; it wasn't any different from normal leather. Of course...as an Epic ranked equipment, the Atlantis armor couldn't be broken. However, this indestructibility was established from its quick self-repairing ability, not like how the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes physically couldn't be broken.

Suo Jia caressed the sapphire blue armor, his smile so large that he couldn't close his mouth. Although this armor had its deficiencies, it flawlessly matched the Monarch Armor that he wore underneath. Even if the magic shield suddenly broke, it would be extremely difficult for Suo Jia to get injured.

The opponent would first have to break through the unbreakable chain mail, then break through the soft yet magic-immune Black Dragon scales. These were pretty much impossible things.

However, that didn't mean that Suo Jia was unrivaled. Blunt weapons and shocks could still break Suo Jia. For example, if Suo Jia dropped down from a height of 100 meters, he'd unconditionally turn into mush.

# Chapter 181: So Frightening (Part 1)

---

“Bang! Bang! Bang...” Suo Jia stood unyieldingly with a Magic Potion in one hand, and a Spirit Potion in another. Opposite him, Duo Mei was currently fluttering around with clenched teeth as she wildly swung her blade around. Following her attacks, the sapphire blue Water God’s Shield continuously shifted. It constantly changed shape, but didn’t break at all!

After a few tests, Suo Jia knew that to break this shield, one had to either output 10000 moles of magic power in a single go, or charge at it so that the magic shield wouldn’t have enough time to repair itself. In other words, one’s attack would have to be 1000 moles/second, and the attack would have to continue for a duration of at least 10 seconds.

If Suo Jia didn’t use his own magic power and spirit power to amplify it, Duo Mei would need to attack 10 times in succession in order to break the magic shield. However, after he amplified it with his own powers, it wasn’t as simple; only after 15 cuts would there be hope of breaking through.

Of course, this was if Suo Jia was in a completely defensive state. After activating the Water God’s Shield, he also had to activate attacks, which meant that the consumption of magic power and spirit power would be greater, and would quickly drain. Fortunately, Suo Jia had the four colored potions, so he could easily maintain the shield.

The Water God’s Shield had a base strength of 10000, but this wasn’t a set value. The user could utilize their magic power and

spirit power to strengthen it. The higher one's magic power, the greater the defense would increase. The higher one's spirit power, the greater the amount it would charge itself per second.

For example, the purple-faced lord could use the support of his magic power and spirit power to raise the Water God Shield's strength to 100000, and its ability to replenish energy to 10000/second. If it weren't for his fierce attacks leading to the consumption of spirit power and magic power, Duo Mei definitely wouldn't have been able to break it.

However, the purple-faced lord couldn't be blamed for his actions. He thought that as long as he defeated his opponent, he'd be able to resolve all problems. Thus, he simultaneously activated large-scale magics, and his magic power and spirit power quickly dried up. In addition to maintaining a stable and strong water shield, his magic power and spirit power had obviously been exhausted.

As he saw Duo Mei wildly hack without stopping, Suo Jia laughed. He first drank a Magic Potion, then he stamped his foot, instantly activating Diamond Charge. Before Duo Mei could react, three consecutive attacks froze her once more. Afterwards, an ice stream coiled out and Freezing Touch was instantly activated, leading to a smooth, easy victory.

Of course, since it was just a spar, Suo Jia didn't continue to fight after he had already won. He smiled as he dispersed the ice stream. After making up for his defensive power, Duo Mei was no longer able to fight evenly with Suo Jia.

A red light flashed, and the ice layers surrounding Duo Mei's body quickly melted. She looked at Suo Jia in shock as she said incredulously, "You're too ridiculous! You resisted my attacks head-on, and even defeated me! Are you sure you're a mage?"

Suo Jia laughed, "Ok, ok, this Water God's Shield is indeed pretty awesome. But you don't need to get discouraged, you have the entirely linked Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes. If you manage to gather the entire Fire Phoenix jewelry set as well, you'd definitely be a super-domineering existence. When we go to the capital this time, I can help you find the Fire Phoenix Bracelet. By then, your power will greatly rise again!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Duo Mei's eyes lit up. Every powerful magic equipment could exponentially increase her strength. Now that she heard there was hope of gaining the Fire Phoenix Bracelet, how could she conceal her happiness?

Seeing her excited expression, Suo Jia suddenly turned solemn as he stressed, "But Duo Mei, although magic equipments can be quite powerful, you cannot depend too much on them. If your own strength is too weak, magic equipment won't be of any use regardless of how powerful they are!"

Duo Mei smiled in embarrassment and she nodded, "Don't worry, Young Master. I definitely won't slack off. I only hope that I can use any methods possible to hurry up and get stronger, and become more formidable! But I won't relax just because of that."

Suo Jia smiled and nodded. In reality, Suo Jia was also like that. He definitely wouldn't ever let anything that could boost his

strength escape his hands. However...after obtaining the said items, he wouldn't simply be satisfied with that. Instead, he'd continue to train arduously, making himself even stronger.

The next morning, Suo Jia led the group towards the scheduled destination. They trained hard along the journey, and after half a month, they finally entered an boundless mountain range. This place was the location of the Atomic Alchemy Labs' headquarters.

Based on the silver-armored knight's description, the group of people arrived in front of a man-made cave. From the mottled marks on the cave walls, it was clear that although the cave had originally been natural, it had clearly gone through construction to cut it further and build what it was now.

After walking through a long, dark, and slightly damp passage through the cave, Suo Jia and the group entered a narrow yet exceptionally beautiful ravine. A sinister-looking ancient castle appeared in their line of sight.

This great castle was made of limestone. Judging from its outer appearance, it had completely crumbled. The inner parts of the ancient castle had mostly collapsed, and countless unknown bird species could be heard emitting eerie, ear-piercing cries that echoed around the empty castle.

Although it looked extremely dark and sinister, Suo Jia knew that this place had already been inspected by the silver-armored knight, which meant there weren't any dangers. Thus...Suo Jia led his companions straight into the castle.

After searching around for an entire day, they ended up empty-handed. Only after night had fallen did Suo Jia and his group finally stop searching, find some empty rooms, and rest up. Although Suo Jia believed that this place definitely still had some overlooked treasures, they weren't things that could be unearthed over 1-2 days.

The second morning, Suo Jia issued a task to the Angelic Phoenixes, as well as Aimi and Aila. He then began to head to capital alone. There...the Emperor was still waiting for his help.

Nothing significant happened along the journey. One week later, Suo Jia arrived at the capital. There, he went directly to the palace to meet Empress An Rong, who had been waiting for him for many days now. After spending some time fixing up the Empress's appearance, the two began to chat.

Just as Suo Jia had anticipated, during the past year, Empress An Rong had only spent time with the Emperor twice a month. This drew the Emperor into becoming obsessed with her. During that period, the Emperor pretty much never went to his other concubines, and instead spent every day with the Empress. Even if the Empress tried to pressure him to do otherwise, he wouldn't agree.

However, the Emperor was, after all, already over 50 years old, nearing 60 now. The functions of every part of his body were beginning to deteriorate. He was no longer as domineering and potent as he was during his youth. Even if he still wanted to be like he was in the past, he was already impotent.

In reality, this was a course of events that everyone experienced, and the Emperor knew this fact. However...after the Empress had miraculously recovered her youthfulness, the Emperor couldn't help but feel hopeful as well. If Suo Jia was really that amazing, it was possible that he'd be able to help the Emperor regain his youthful vigor.

After hearing the Empress tell him this, Suo Jia furrowed his brow and said, "Your Highness, I don't dare to say I can cure His Majesty's problem right now. This is something due to the aging of his entire body. It's different from losing weight; this is literally going against the heavens! Nobody knows if it's possible!"

The Empress knew that this was Suo Jia asking for another reward. However...if Suo Jia really could achieve this, then so what if she had to give away some things? These mere worldly possessions couldn't possibly be more important than the Emperor's happiness.

The Empress pulled out an embroidered case and handed it to Suo Jia with a smile, "No matter what, please try your utmost. Regardless of the outcome, this Fire Phoenix Bracelet is yours!"

Suo Jia's eyes lit up upon seeing the exquisite case. He didn't bother holding himself back, and took the case in his hands, throwing it into his interspatial ring. He then laughed, "Alright, for Your Highness's sake, I'll try my best. However, I have to stress now that I can't guarantee it'll be successful!"

The Empress nodded with a smile, then shouted towards a side door, “Alright, Your Majesty, you’ve been listening for long enough. Isn’t it about time for you to come out and meet Knight Suo Jia?”



## Chapter 182: So Frightening (Part 2)

---

“Gah!” Hearing the Empress’s words, Suo Jia couldn’t prevent his jaw from dropping open. What was that? This Empress had actually asked the Emperor to eavesdrop? It was a good thing his words hadn’t overstepped any boundaries just now. Otherwise, he would’ve.....

Following the Empress’s words, a tall and sturdy figure slowly walked out from the side door. Upon close inspection, it was indeed the Emperor. Seeing this, Suo Jia didn’t waste any time and hurriedly stood up to pay his respects.

Suo Jia knew that the Emperor had planned to do this because he had his worries. He was surely a bit suspicious about whether or not Suo Jia and the Empress had any shameful matters between them, so he hid there to secretly listen in.

Fortunately, Suo Jia and the Empress really didn’t have such a relationship. Even if they wanted to, they couldn’t. That’s why, from beginning to end, everything the Emperor had witnessed was the naturally calm, unhurried, and indifferent Suo Jia. If the Empress’s eyes weren’t so sharp to have seen the Emperor’s figure outside the door, Suo Jia probably still wouldn’t have realized the Emperor’s eavesdropping.

Seeing the Empress’s slightly indignant expression, Suo Jia quickly determined that this hadn’t been arranged beforehand. Otherwise, the Empress wouldn’t have such an expression. It was fortunate for them that the relationship between Suo Jia and her were just feelings of mutual respect. There wasn’t anything

shameful going on between them. Otherwise...

But despite this being the case, the Empress was still quite angry. She knew that the Emperor didn't trust her, and suspected that she would cheat on him. The fact that the Emperor suspected that she'd be unchaste and not stay true to their marriage really wounded her.

Her face slightly twitched, but the Empress quickly returned to her normal appearance. However, her heart had already frozen over. She looked at the Emperor with an indifferent, expressionless gaze and said flatly, "How about it? Is Your Majesty feeling reassured now?"

The Emperor's face flushed at her words. He knew that he shouldn't have come today. However, he had originally thought that with his Light Harmonization Technique, nobody would discover him. He hadn't imagined that, when he saw the Empress hand the precious Fire Phoenix Bracelet to Suo Jia, the shock had disrupted his attention. Because his spirit wasn't concentrated for a moment, his Light Harmonization Technique had dispersed!

The Light Harmonization Technique was the legendary magic that warped light using the magic-conducting weapon that the legendary Light Mage Deity had created. The most special part of it was the fact that it could keep the body in a concealed state even while the user was moving or attacking. How long it was maintained depending on one's magic power and spirit power.

Because the Emperor had the light attribute, he could keep his body concealed for as long as it took for his magic power and spirit

power were exhausted. However, if a person without the light attribute tried to do it, the results wouldn't be as good. Based on just a ring, one could only hide themselves for approximately 3 seconds. If one activated it three times in succession, they could even release the light attribute Dazzling Light Technique, with the effect of temporarily blinding a person for three seconds.

The Emperor didn't know how to respond to the Empress's question. He knew that the Empress must have already guessed his thoughts. In addition, the situation had confirmed that the relationship between the Empress and Suo Jia really was pure. At most, they didn't have any entanglement of emotions. Even if one insisted there was, they could only point out that the Empress had secretly given precious magic equipment to Suo Jia. However, the Empress had the rights to do so.

In addition, even if she didn't, this bracelet had been given away for the Emperor's sake. It wasn't really a secret present; the reason the Empress did it was all for the Emperor. This was also why he had been shocked earlier.

Suo Jia was an intelligent person. Sensing the subtle sentiments between the Empress and Emperor, he quickly guessed the reason for it. Suo Jia knew that the Emperor's suspicions weren't baseless. Suo Jia had first helped the Empress restore her face, and then helped her settle the dispute with the chamber of the concubines. He'd even helped the Empress successfully re-capture the Emperor's love. It would be stranger if the Emperor wasn't suspicious of their relationship.

In addition, Suo Jia had meticulously helped the Empress fix up

her appearance again. He'd also accepted the bracelet. In their conversation, they had also touched upon the matter of how to win over the Emperor's favor. For example, the situation of accompanying the Emperor only twice a month.

Suo Jia smiled at the Emperor. He knew that he had to explain the situation properly today. Although there was already proof that the relationship between Suo Jia and the Empress wasn't anything ambiguous, that didn't mean other things didn't exist. For example, the issue of power and privileges was possible.

Suo Jia indifferently said, "Your Highness, it's best if you go rest for a bit. Having just gotten treatment, sleeping a bit will help stabilize and strengthen the effects."

The Empress sighed and cast a meaningful glance at the Emperor. She then politely said to Suo Jia, "Then I will go and sleep. I will have to trouble Mister Suo Jia over the Emperor's matters!"

Suo Jia smiled in response and said, "Don't worry, you know of my temperament. Since I've already accepted the item, I'll naturally try my best to help you. Just go and rest."

The Empress nodded, then bid farewell to the Emperor and walked to the bedroom in the back. In a moment, the only ones left in the spacious and empty hall were the Emperor and Suo Jia. The atmosphere around them felt slightly awkward.

Leisurely sitting on a chair, Suo Jia picked up a cup of tea and delicately sipped it as he calmly said, "What? Does the Emperor

suspect that Suo Jia and Her Highness have a love affair?”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Emperor was first slightly shaken, but he then calmly replied, “That's right. Originally, I was concerned about that. However, I now know that I had blamed An Rong wrongly. She isn't that type of person.”

Suo Jia swept a glance at the Emperor and indifferent replied, “Your Majesty isn't to blame. I think....that there must be a reason behind your actions. Your Majesty would never suspect Her Highness without reason. I'm sure someone had given Your Majesty quite a bit of pillowtalk.”

“That...” Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Emperor was suddenly at a loss. That's right....the only reason he had come to eavesdrop today was because he had heard so many suspicions about the two while he was with his concubines.

Suo Jia smiled and continued, “That's why, in this world, the palace and the brothel are the filthiest places. For the sake of some power and status, anything will happen. Empress An Rong has really been suffering.”

Suo Jia turned around to look at the Emperor. “For the sake of maintaining peace in the chamber of concubines, An Rong has only been willing to be with you once a month. At most, twice. All the other times, she's been pushing you towards the other concubines. Why do you think she did this?”

“That...” The Emperor struggled to reply to Suo Jia's question.

Suo Jia looked at the Emperor as he angrily said, “Your Majesty, all women get jealous. Have you ever considered how the Empress felt when she pushed her most beloved person towards the embraces of other women? Your Majesty, you can’t think that you’re the only one feeling jealous. Think about it for a bit, would you be able to bear pushing Empress An Rong into other people’s arms?”

“Sou!” Hearing Suo Jia’s disrespectful words, the Emperor grew agitated and indignant, and he suddenly stood up. However, just as he was prepared to blow up, he noticed that Suo Jia’s expression was still calm. After thinking for a while, the Emperor sat back down.

Blankly looking at Suo Jia, the Emperor began to think to himself: That’s right...he wasn’t the only one that couldn’t tolerate the Empress being disloyal or unchaste; the Empress felt the same for him. She had clearly been unable to accept it, but for his sake, for the entire family’s sake, she had still pushed the Emperor out. How open-minded was she to do this!

Suo Jia smiled when he saw the Emperor’s concentrated expression. He continued, “Your Majesty, none of Her Highness’s actions have ever gone too far. For the sake of reaching your love, she’s considered many things. You know, when you were enjoying the happiness of endless pleasure with other concubines, Her Highness was crying. But did she ever tell you of her suffering?”

“In addition, Her Highness requited evil with good by pushing you towards other concubines. But what did the other concubines

do? They repaid her kindness by blaming her, and even talked bad about her behind her back to frame her. It's no different from Imperial Concubine Hua before, they're still plotting to usurp the chamber of concubines. Your Majesty, let me ask you; do you really think they are qualified for the Empress position with that kind of behavior? Do you really think anyone loves you more than An Rong does, and is more suited to be your Empress?"

Faced against Suo Jia's questions, the Emperor couldn't help but begin sweating profusely. He had never felt the situation was wrong in any way. But now that Suo Jia said it in such a way, the Emperor suddenly realized that he had really made a huge mistake.

## Chapter 183: Miracle Cure (Part 1)

---

All males were lecherous, and wanted fresh experiences. They thirsted for the enjoyment of more women's \*\*. They wanted to sample more women's flavors and amorous feelings, but at the same time, deep within their hearts, all they wanted was a true love.

The Emperor knew that, for him, all the women were like cakes on a plate. They were all there to fulfil his sexual desires. He might be infatuated with some, but never for long. Once he had eaten enough, he would never eat them again to the point that even thinking about that made him feel disgust.

Deep in his heart, Empress An Rong was still the one he cared for the most. But... even genuine feelings were unable to bear attacks from lies and slanders. Just like the last time, when Imperial Concubine Hua had started rumors all over the place and slandered An Rong's image, what had the result been? That's right...the result was him agreeing to depose An Rong, and make Imperial Concubine Hua the Empress!

Seeing the Emperor's expression, Suo Jia could pretty much guess his thoughts. He smiled and said, "Your Majesty, it's not that An Rong isn't jealous, but she could only taste the feeling of pain alone for your sake. She also wanted to monopolize you, but what would happen to your concubines if she did?"

Suo Jia looked the Emperor up and down before saying enviously, "Your Majesty, truth be told, having such a good Empress is enough to make everyone in the world jealous of you.



Have you ever thought about that? If you had let Imperial Concubine Hua become Empress back then, with her sinisterness and jealousy, would she have tolerated the existence of any other women? I can bet you that all the girls you pamper would've been persecuted by her, and disappeared from your life one after another. But yet you were still bewitched by such a woman."

"Stop!" Hearing Suo Jia's unceasing torrent, the Emperor abruptly waved his hand and guiltily said, "Don't continue any further, I understand. An Rong's good traits are things that no other woman can compare to. Only she would never say bad things about others in my presence. All her thoughts are for my sake."

"Tch..." With a sneer, Suo Jia said in disdain, "No really? Only she can become your wife, your lover. All other women simply see you as a source of money, a throne of riches, honor, and privileges. I believe that you yourself can understand this reasoning. Men can be lecherous, but abandoning their own wife for their lustful desires is definitely wrong."

Hearing Suo Jia's unrestrained words, the Emperor couldn't help but flush in anger and shame. He really wanted to retort, but he knew that everything Suo Jia had said was correct. Aside from An Rong, all the other women just wanted to earn was his attention, and then things like money, status, and privileges. Only An Rong didn't request such things, and sincerely just hoped for his well-being.

Seeing that the Emperor was feeling ashamed, Suo Jia smiled and said, "Men can live carefree, loose, cheerful lives. After all...there are so many women in this world. You're the Emperor, nobody

would dare to say anything to you. But I want you to remember that mingling with other women is already your fault. How could you treat the Empress badly just because of this?”

The Emperor sighed and said firmly, “Don’t worry, I won’t do it again. In addition....even if I wanted to do so, I no longer have the power to, ai...”

Seeing the Emperor sigh, Suo Jia couldn’t help but smile, “That’s the purpose of my talk with you. I may be able to help you recover your youthful vigor and re-stimulate you once more. However, I don’t wish for you to continue mingling with other women and harming Her Highness once more as a result of my help. If that happened, my sin would be too great.”

“What!” The Emperor suddenly raised his voice as he angrily shouted, “Do you mean to say that if you help me, I can’t go find other women, and can only stay with the Empress alone?”

“No, no, no...” Quickly shaking his head, Suo Jia replied, “That’s your business, it has nothing to do with me. I just don’t want to see your other concubines continuing to slander the Empress and wound her in such a way. This is too harmful, and can secretly influence your vision and impression of Her Highness. Unless Your Majesty doesn’t believe that talking bad about a person behind their back is immoral?”

The Emperor narrowed his eyes and said in a heavy voice “Your words have reason. However...what I really don’t understand is, why are you so considerate towards the Empress? I’ve looked into it, and the two of you don’t have any relationship at all. I want to

know, what is your goal? Money, privileges, status, riches, glory... exactly what do you want that leads you to help her?"

Suo Jia started, and exclaimed in shock, "Heavens! Your way of thinking is really complicated. I don't understand; if you're so shrewd and suspicious, why were you bewitched by those concubines? You were even willing to depose your most beloved woman!"

The Emperor couldn't help but flush in shame at these words. He rolled his eyes in discontent at Suo Jia, immediately deciding that there was absolutely no way Suo Jia and the Empress had any ambiguous relationship. All his years of experience allowed the Emperor to determine that this brat was still only a kid, and was definitely still a virgin. If he had even slightly tried the taste of a girl before, he wouldn't be saying such words.

When a man and a woman were crazily in love with each other, they'd combine their essences within the woman's body. When the woman that gave endless pleasure was intimately within the man's embrace, and softly spoke to them about various things, it wasn't something that any man could resist. It was practically hypnosis. No matter how amazing a man was, they couldn't possibly guard against pillowtalk.

Suo Jia shook his head and said, "I know that you don't understand at all why I help the Empress this way. I can clearly tell you now that I firstly help her because I think she's pitiful. She is willing to give away everything for the sake of her lover, yet was forced to face abandonment. I cannot just sit still and watch that happen."

The Emperor clearly wasn't satisfied with this answer. He furrowed his brows and said, "But if that's true, then why does the Empress want to give you such precious items? Isn't that a business transaction?"

Suo Jia shook his head and calmly replied, "No, no, no...you're missing something. That bracelet alone isn't enough for me to help you. The Empress agreed that if I help Your Majesty regain his youthful vigor, you must also raise my noble rank by one!"

"What!" The Emperor shouted in agitation, "You mean to say that as a Holy Light citizen, serving the Emperor requires a reward?"

"Ai..." Sighing helplessly, Suo Jia gave a bitter smile and said, "If Your Majesty says it like that, then fine, I'll do it all for free..." As he said this, Suo Jia fished out the case containing the Fire Phoenix Bracelet and lightly tossed it on the table.

"You..." Seeing Suo Jia's actions, the Emperor couldn't help be momentarily frozen, at a loss on what to do.

Suo Jia surveyed the Emperor up and down a few times before helplessly shaking his head, "I really apologize, Your Majesty. I do want to help you, but....now that I've seen it personally, I've suddenly discovered that your entire body's functions have deteriorated with age. Even I cannot help you. I'm very sorry." Suo Jia closed his eyes, leaned back on his chair, and didn't speak another word.

“What!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the Emperor abruptly stood up and furiously looked at Suo Jia as he shouted, “If you cannot help me, then don’t give me false hopes. Don’t you know how great of a blow that is?”

Suo Jia’s eyes remained closed as he stayed calm and collected, “I’m really sorry, Your Majesty. It’s not that I don’t want to help you, but that I really cannot. I am powerless to fix your situation. Go find someone else instead. I believe....there must be someone in this world that can help Your Majesty.”

“You!” The Emperor choked at Suo Jia’s words. Although he was the Emperor, what could he do if the other party couldn’t help? It wasn’t like he could force someone to do something they weren’t able to do. An Emperor couldn’t be so unreasonable!

## Chapter 184: Miracle Cure (Part 2)

---

He looked at the calm Suo Jia, and then back at the case on the table. In that instant, the Emperor understood everything. It was clear to see that...this brat didn't act without some incentive. He was self-centered, and wouldn't even make any allowances for those close to him. Unless there were enough benefits for him to gain, even the Emperor wouldn't be able to make him do anything. It was because the Empress knew of Suo Jia's habits that she had given away such a precious item to him. She hadn't asked him for anything aside from trying his best to help the Emperor.

As the Emperor, he had the privileges to command any person in Holy Light Empire to do anything. However, the one thing he couldn't do was make someone willing to do it. Even if he made an all-out effort, it would simply be a deferent from the outside. Only if one offered enough benefits would it work. Regardless of who stood in front of Suo Jia, there was no point in asking him for anything if one didn't have anything to offer.

Helplessly looking at Suo Jia, the Emperor couldn't help but smile bitterly. He knew that this was checkmate for him. If he was unwilling to give the items away, then Suo Jia wouldn't help him. Even if he was the Emperor, it wasn't like he could force someone that was powerless to help, right?

The Emperor gently reached out to press the case down and push it towards Suo Jia. "This was given to you by the Empress. Since she's already given it to you, there's no reason for me to take it back. You can keep it."

Suo Jia lightly opened his eyes. He didn't bother putting on a front, and just accepted the case on the table. He then sized the Emperor up, and soon afterwards, hit his own head as he shouted, "Aiya! I was mistaken just now. Looking closer, it seems like I could've helped Your Majesty from the beginning. It's just...there's a small difficulty that I cannot solve at the moment!"

Seeing Suo Jia's carefully poised expressions, the Emperor couldn't help but laugh bitterly. If it had been anyone else, he would've long since dragged them out and beheaded them. However, this small one had done a great favor for both him and the Empress. Besides, even if he did behead Suo Jia, who would help the Emperor then?

The Emperor gloomily looked at Suo Jia. He knew that this brat had already seen through this point, which was why he dared to act so unrestrained. However, for his own sake, he'd have to accept it.

The Emperor shook his head with a wry smile and begrudgingly said, "Alright, alright, you can stop pretending now. Don't worry, as long as you help me recover my former youthful vigor, I will definitely raise your noble rank to a viscount. I definitely won't break my promise!"

"Hehe..." In response to the Emperor's words, Suo Jia remained unmoved, and simply smiled to himself. Suo Jia greedily looked at the Emperor's right hand and said, "Aiya...Your Majesty's ring is really pretty! I love it to death. I wonder where Your Majesty bought it? I also want to buy one and wear it!"

“Eh!” Seeing Suo Jia’s avaricious gaze, the Emperor couldn’t help but be taken aback, but he soon returned to his senses. This brat just couldn’t accept his anger just now, and wanted to get him back fully. He even dared to blackmail the Emperor in such a way, he was surely courting death.

But strangely enough, the Emperor didn’t seem fed up with the greedy Suo Jia at all. Instead, he felt Suo Jia’s pureness and genuinity. Looking at the glowing ring on his hand, the Emperor gritted his teeth and pulled it off. He then tossed it at Suo Jia and said, “Fine, I’ll just give you this ring. Now...you should be able to help me!”

Suo Jia caught the flying ring and quickly threw it into his interspatial ring. At the same time, his expression turned serious. “Alright. Since Your Majesty is so generous, Suo Jia wouldn’t dare to not try his utmost. Your Majesty, don’t worry, I won’t just restore that particular part of your body, but will help Your Majesty’s entire body recover its original state of youth and vigor!”

Although Suo Jia’s expression was serious, he was actually beyond ecstatic inside. The ring the Emperor wore all the time couldn’t possibly be inferior in any way. In reality, Suo Jia could tell from a single glance what this super powerful ring was.

The Ring of Light Harmonization was the legendary magic ring that the legendary Light Mage Deity created. It could warp light to conceal the body, and allow one to escape at full speed without revealing any trace. However...it couldn’t hide sound. This was its greatest drawback.



To Suo Jia, this ring didn't have much use. After all...he could only use it three times in succession, and each time would only last for 3 seconds. In terms of effects and uses, it wasn't any more useful than a thief's concealment ring. However...to a thief, this was a precious item that they would even trade a Divine Artifact for.

With this ring, a thief would be able to attack without revealing any traces. From the beginning to the end of the attack, one wouldn't be able to see the user's figure. This was too frightening. With the addition of the thief's original Stealth Technique, they would be so powerful that people would go numb just from the thought of their might.

Suo Jia didn't actually plan on wearing this ring. Actually, he planned to trade it with the thief families as exchange for the Fire Phoenix Ring. It was said that this ring was in the hands of one of the ten great thief families. Suo Jia believed that he'd definitely be able to trade this ring for the Fire Phoenix Ring. However...he'd still have to add on a bit to his side of the transaction for it to work.

In the past, Suo Jia had racked his brains over the physiological anatomy of the human body. He could guess which organ had what effect on the body, and from there, he could quickly diagnose the problem; the four fleshy lumps were the deciding factors.

The first pair of fleshy lumps was located behind the waist, and the second pair was right in between the Emperor's legs. Suo Jia knew that as long as he could use the combine his water manipulation and the Moisture Technique, he could restore the vigor of all four fleshy lumps. Everything would be OK; it would be

a simple matter to accomplish.

Of course, Suo Jia didn't dare to go too fast either. Otherwise, giving someone so many gains didn't seem quite worth it either. Thus, as he helped the Emperor recover that place's functions, he was also treating the Emperor's entire body. Suo Jia fixed up the Emperor's face, and returned the vigor of his internal organs. After busily working for an entire week, he finally finished.

Retrieving the snow-white towel from a maid, Suo Jia wiped the sweat off his forehead and said to the Emperor, who was currently lying down on a chair, "Your Majesty, everything is already done. Feel around a bit, do you feel like you've been given a new life?"

Quietly opening his eyes, the Emperor felt his spirit being refreshed. His mind was also more clear-headed than it had ever been, and his entire body was refilled with the youth and vigor that had faded away over the years. He knew that this definitely wasn't an illusion, it was reality!

The Emperor slowly stood up from the bed and walked up to the mirror, silently surveying himself. His wrinkles had decreased drastically. Even if a few remained, they were shallow, and not only didn't worsen his appearance, but rather gave him a more dignified and mature charm!

As for the body, there was a type of indescribable feeling that originated from within him. He knew that this was the feeling of youth, the feeling of vigor. During the span of a week, Suo Jia had made him at least 20 years younger! He had reached the state of a 30 year old. Although he still hadn't tried it, the Emperor knew

that Suo Jia hadn't addressed only his particular problem. It was just as Suo Jia had said; what he had given the Emperor was a new life!

Seeing the Emperor's expression of admiration, Suo Jia smiled and said, "Alright, Your Majesty, it's basically done. I'll help touch you up once a year, and you should be able to maintain this state. Haha...how is it? The price you paid is definitely worth it, right?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Emperor started and said incredulously, "Then Knight Suo Jia, what I want to know is, what if this state can be maintained forever? Wouldn't that mean one could live for an unlimited amount of time? I can feel that my body did indeed become younger. Does that mean...this is really going against the heavens?"

"That..." After pondering for a bit, Suo Jia shook his head and said, "I cannot answer your question. I also don't know what the final result will be. However...I can guarantee that the Emperor's life span will be stretched by at least twofold without a problem. The problem is just whether or not you can become immortal."

"Gasp!" The Emperor couldn't help but sharply inhale. This was too ridiculous. Typically speaking, a person's life span was less than 100 years. But according to what Suo Jia had just said, he could at the very least live up to 200 years old. He could possibly even become immortal! This was something that all Emperors had yearned for since ancient times.

Suo Jia laughed at the Emperor's shocked expression and said, "Don't be too hopeful yet. There are many things that I cannot

determine yet, these are only guesses. However, what I can guarantee is that as long I, Suo Jia, am here, I can ensure that the Emperor can forever live at 30 years old! This is the exchange for what you've paid."

Suo Jia picked up the cup of tea and took a small sip, "Perhaps you don't know me very well. However, I can tell you now that if you don't pay a sufficient price, I will not help you. In addition, the extent to which I help you depends on the price you pay. Since I've already accepted your Fire Phoenix Bracelet and the ring, as well as the noble rank, I will do my utmost to help you. I do the same for both you and Her Highness."

Suo Jia put down his cup with a smile, and neared the Emperor to say, "Your Majesty, I'm a bit concerned. Tell me...from now on, do you think that people will say that Your Majesty no longer loves women, and instead likes men, and had some kind of homosexual thing with me?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Emperor first stared blankly. He then lifted his head to laugh out loud, and he looked at Suo Jia in amusement. He had finally understood something; this little fellow was definitely greedy with money. However, at the same time, he would never make any person pay anything in vain. He would always use his own methods to compensate for the price that the opposite party paid.

# Chapter 185: The Viscount's Land (Part 1)

---

The more the Emperor hung around with Suo Jia, the more he became aware of Suo Jia's charisma. Although they had only been around each other for a week, the Emperor had discovered that he had grown to like the candid little guy. The Emperor could see pureness and genuinity from Suo Jia, something that couldn't be found in the palace.

He couldn't deny the fact that Suo Jia was extremely greedy. Even Suo Jia himself admitted to this fact. In addition, he never bothered to conceal it. However...his greed had class and style. Not everyone could bring his greediness out; the only things that could were definitely matters worth celebrating for, since everything Suo Jia gained was always much more than the price the other party paid.

Suo Jia and the Emperor were currently sitting across from each other in a small pavilion. The best china was on the table in front of them, and a fragrant scent wafted through the air, one that would easily calm the spirit of anyone that smelled it.

Lightly taking a sip of green tea, Suo Jia sighed in satisfaction with shut eyes, completely enjoying the taste. After a while...Suo Jia said, "Your Majesty, from my knowledge, Holy Light Empire's great catastrophe will start soon. Have you finished preparing for it?"

"Catastrophe?" The Emperor put down his teacup in confusion as he stared at Suo Jia.

Slowly opening his eyes, Suo Jia said in a profound voice, “Your Majesty should be around 55 years old this year. According to the empire’s political system, you’ll retire in 4-5 years. In other words, you have to confirm who the crown prince is, and decide who will seize this country!”

“Mm...” The Emperor nodded and indifferently replied, “I know all this already. But I don’t think any disorder will occur; the crown prince is decided by me, and nobody can interfere.”

“Tch...” With a sneer, Suo Jia said in disdain, “Isn’t that a given? Of course I know that the crown prince is chosen by you. But can’t your decision be influenced by others? Besides...have you ever considered what would happen if you didn’t have the ability to decide?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the Emperor couldn’t help but furrow his brows as he gazed intensely at Suo Jia. “I understand, just say it straight out. Which prince are you speaking for?”

Stunned, Suo Jia froze and stared blankly at the Emperor. He then bitterly laughed and shook his head, “Your Majesty, don’t always be so suspicious. Why do I have to be speaking for a prince? Can’t I just consider the problem from your point of view?”

The Emperor didn’t shift his gaze at Suo Jia as he said in a heavy voice, “I really cannot believe that. With your age, I believe that....you should be currying favor with a prince, not the old man like me who’s about to lose his position. Moreover, I set up appropriate arrangements for the matter of the princes ages ago. Even if they jump to the skies, they will never be able to flip out of

my palms. There definitely won't be any commotion."

Suo Jia rolled his eyes in exasperation and said angrily, "I really think you're beyond saving. Let me just tell you straight out; I'm not speaking for any prince. I really am just thinking for your sake. Haven't you ever considered the fact that with my help, you can forever be 30 years old? In that case, why give up your Emperor position? If you really give away the position, then how will the you that's accustomed with power survive the next 100-200 years?"

"That..." Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Emperor was abruptly stunned. That's right....with the current state of his body and spirit, why did he have to hand over his Emperor position? Power was something that nobody would be willing to let go of, unless their body and spirit couldn't bear it anymore.

Overwhelmed by shock, the Emperor continued to stare at Suo Jia blankly. Only now did the Emperor suddenly realize that Suo Jia really did want to help him, and had actually been thinking of him. It was just as Suo Jia had said: with his energy, how was he supposed to use it if he wasn't the Emperor?

The Emperor knit his brows and said, "But, according to the ancestor's traditions, I cannot do that. As long as I am 60 years old, I must hand over the position. Even the Emperor cannot change such matters."

"Hehe..." Darkly chuckling, Suo Jia said in a low voice, "Your Majesty, I didn't ask you to change the system. My meaning is simple; as long as you create a conflict between the princes, they'll mutually destroy each other. Once they've committed enough

crimes, they'll lose their qualifications of inheritance one after another. By then, even if you wanted to hand the position over, who could you possibly give it to?"

"That..." The Emperor stood up and paced the room in deep thought. After a while, the Emperor said with difficulty, "Your idea won't do. They're still my own flesh and blood after all; I can't possibly commit such a deed to them. In addition...if I really did kill all of them, wouldn't I be lacking a successor?"

"My god..." Hearing the Emperor's words, Suo Jia couldn't help but feel his voice go hoarse, "I say, Your Majesty, what in the world are you thinking? You're the old Emperor. Don't you only need to say a single sentence to determine whether they die or not? If you don't let them die, how can they die? You just need to make them lose their qualifications to inherit the throne. Why must you kill them?"

"Eh!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Emperor was first stunned for a moment, before he suddenly laughed out loud. That's right...how could he have not thought of such a simple matter? His sons were his sons; as long as they lost their qualifications to inherit his power, with his life span, even his grandsons wouldn't have the chance to take the throne. His great-grandsons wouldn't be able to either. Most likely, only his great-great-grandsons would be able to inherit it.

After thinking about it some more, the Emperor looked over at Suo Jia, and earnestly said, "You're such an amazing little guy. I really want to know now, why are you thinking for my sake? I cannot imagine a reason behind it. In my opinion, it would make



more sense for you to choose a prince to vow loyalty and devotion to!”

Rolling his eyes, Suo Jia patiently replied, “First of all, you’ve already paid a price sufficient enough to become my customer. I naturally have to think more on your behalf. I do this for anyone, including Her Highness and Your Majesty.”

Suo Jia paused for a moment, then laughed, “Don’t think that becoming my customer is a simple matter. Currently, including you and Her Highness, there are only four of you that are my customers. The other two you also recognize: Emma and Wen Ya.”

Seeing the doubtful expression on the Emperor’s face, Suo Jia continued, “Think about it for a bit; with our relationship, wouldn’t doing anything be a piece of cake? I believe....that in the future, you won’t treat me any worse than Her Highness. Would you say otherwise?”

“That...” Faced with Suo Jia’s words, the Emperor suddenly realized that he really didn’t have any way of retorting. If Suo Jia didn’t help him, he’d quickly age. In other words, he probably had to treat Suo Jia even better than he did to the Empress. This was pretty much a destined result.

Suo Jia continued, “To me, although you’re already 55 years old, there isn’t that big of a difference between us. You can at least live another 200 years, and as long as you live, I can maintain your current state. That’s why, 55 years old is not only no longer an inconvenience to you anymore, but it provides you the maximum capital you can obtain.”

Every time a prince inherited the throne, the entire country would always go through turmoil. Since every emperor had a personally chosen cabinet, great commotions in both the imperial court and the commoners would arise. In addition, the crown prince was still young after all, and was thus lacking in experience and capability. How could he compare to the current Emperor, who had already become an old fox? As long as the old Emperor was there, nobody would dare to even dream of bullying Holy Light!

Hearing Suo Jia's praise, the Emperor couldn't help but smile with satisfaction. This was because he knew that Suo Jia wasn't merely flattering him, but was actually saying the truth. Suo Jia was a fellow that could be described with the word 'genuine'. He wouldn't go around flattering others for no reason. If they were able, then they were able; if they weren't able, then they weren't. It was straightforward and simple.

Just as the Emperor was about to laugh in satisfaction, Suo Jia patted the Emperor's shoulders without restraint and said, "Old man Emperor, my personal decision is that, being able have a relationship with you is definitely better and more comfortable than having one with any prince. You have experience, capability, and our relationship is so close. I'm not afraid of you hurting me, and just for the sake of the Empress, I can't watch you age away until your death. To me, you and the Empress are like a linked magic equipment; helping one means that I must help the other as well!"

The Emperor looked at Suo Jia in understanding, clearly realizing his intention. On behalf of the Emperor's love for the

Empress, Suo Jia had to help him. On behalf of the Emperor's face, Suo Jia had to help the Empress. Regardless of what either of them did, the matter would simultaneously possess two reasons behind it.

The Emperor sighed in praise as he looked at Suo Jia. He knew that they had probably already boarded the same ship. This brat had really grabbed the opportunity with such good timing. With their firm relationship, how would Suo Jia's future prospects be lacking in any way? Becoming a prince was a given, and he wouldn't have to worry about obtaining land either. In terms of power, status, and wealth...his gains in all respects would be boundless!

## Chapter 186: The Viscount's Land (Part 2)

---

Three days later, Suo Jia underwent a formal ceremony to become a viscount of the Holy Light Empire, and turned into an absolute, important aristocrat. In addition...he had also gained a very special plot of land.

Originally, a piece of land being bestowed was chosen by the Emperor. However, because of Suo Jia's relationship with the Emperor, he was naturally allowed to choose as he wished.

The old man Emperor had even told Suo Jia that he'd bestow Suo Jia a plot of land already owned by another person if it caught Suo Jia's eye. Such a matter wouldn't be a problem at all; a single sentence was enough to hand it over. The original owner of the land could be deployed off by the Emperor.

However, Suo Jia couldn't possibly do this. The Empire was so large, and the size of the land was vast. Why would he have to choose from someone else's land? A noble man shouldn't steal other's precious things.

Suo Jia followed behind the Emperor and entered the imperial family's tactics room. He pulled open a map dedicated to territories, and began to earnestly choose. Seeing the various drawings of world on the large walls, Suo Jia couldn't help but sigh in admiration as he shook his head. Originally...he'd thought that Holy Light Empire was already quite large. But compared to the entire world, Holy Light was so small that it was equivalent to only a city!

Under the Emperor's guidance, Suo Jia found a map of Holy Light Empire, and made some approximate assessments. If, for example, the world's entire area was 10,000 units, then Holy Light's area was only 10 units. Perhaps even less.

Following the Emperor's finger, Suo Jia quickly discovered that there was a total of 6 countries within the area around Holy Light Empire. Among the 6, Holy Light was the fifth largest. The largest was ten times larger than Holy Light, and its population was over tenfold!

In reality, although he had thought of Holy Light Empire as a large country, it was definitely small compared to the over 100 countries in the world. If mentioned to foreigners, nobody would even know of the country. In addition...Holy Light didn't represent the first 100 powerful countries; it was an area in the borderline zone that was both recognized and ignored by wanderers.

Suo Jia shook his head and immersed himself deeply into enjoying the world map. Originally...he had thought that Holy Light was so big that one couldn't run across. But now he knew that this was just him acting like a frog in a well who hadn't realized how large the sky was.

"Viscount Suo Jia, look...shouldn't we be choosing a plot of land?" Seeing Suo Jia seemingly intoxicated by the map, the old man Emperor couldn't help but urge him.

Suo Jia abruptly returned to his senses and finally looked back at the maps covering all four walls. He looked at one specific wall for

a bit, where a Holy Light Empire map about the size of some tofu jerky was stuck on. He then walked towards the large central table where the map specifically for plots of land in the Empire was displayed.

The map was quite large, and its notes were very detailed as well. The bordering countries were also included. Although only the boundaries were shown, Suo Jia could already determine that there was a total of 6 countries in that map!

Although Holy Light Empire's area could be completely overlooked when on a world map, it was still extremely large on its own individual map. Even Holy Light City, which was such a large city, was only a large red dot on this Empire map. As for small cities, their sizes were so tiny that they were represented by thin, very small dots.

Suo Jia's eyes continuously surveyed the map, back and forth. He then chose the location he wanted most. Originally...Suo Jia had wanted to turn the Gold Triangle into his own plot of land. However, a single glance had been enough to tell him that this area already belonged to someone. In addition, that territory was split between four people in total.

When choosing the land, Suo Jia first stressed profits. It would only be acceptable if it brought in a large amount of income. Suo Jia definitely wouldn't choose a remote and desolate place to become his territory. Money was something that one could never think themselves as having too much of.

His eyes continued to search across the map. Finally...Suo Jia's

gaze landed on a specific point on the map. A bright light flashed across his eyes as Suo Jia abruptly pointed at it and said, "I've made my choice. I want this place!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Emperor was beyond excited. He really wondered what kind of land Suo Jia had chosen to become his own territory.

It actually turned out that not looking at it was better. After a single glance, the Emperor bitterly smiled and helplessly lifted his head to look at Suo Jia. "You really know how to choose. I can't believe that you'd actually choose such a place. Unfortunately, I cannot grant this area to you!"

"Ah!" Suo Jia stared at the Emperor in astonishment and exclaimed, "Why not?"

Shrugging his shoulders, the Emperor pointed at the map and explained, "Look here, this place has 3 lines. These lines combine to form a shape like “艾”. In reality, these three lines divide the six countries' boundaries. The place you chose is exactly the center of this “艾”, and it represents an unregulated area that belongs to all countries, but also doesn't belong to any at the same time. Even if I wanted to give it to you, I don't have the power to do so!"

"Damn..." Suo Jia couldn't help but inwardly sweat at this. Originally....the reason this place had caught his eyes was because of its unique shape. Although the area wasn't large, it simultaneously touched all six countries' borders. The other six countries appeared to form a circular shape that distributed its surroundings. This piece of land was the circle's center.

Of course, Suo Jia's thoughts had been quite simple. Since this place simultaneously bordered all 6 countries, doing business there would be much more beneficial than in the Golden Triangle. As the center of the six countries, the advantages of this place were millions of millions times more in number than for the Gold Triangle. The three cities' incomes couldn't possibly compare to those of the six countries.

He stared at the map with regret. At the same time, the Emperor explained, "In addition, even if this location did represent our Empire and I conferred it to you, you would most likely be unable to defend it. That place is where smuggling runs wild. There are countless thieves within that circle of the six countries, and it is the most chaotic area!"

"Hm?" Suo Jia's eyes couldn't help but light up. He had been worried about how the girls wouldn't have any place left to train. But this was perfect, wouldn't this place be the most suitable for training?

Suo Jia quickly scanned the map. Finally...he abruptly pointed to a point and eagerly said, "Your Majesty, can this piece of land become mine?"

Following Suo Jia's finger, the Emperor saw that where he pointed to was in the surrounding area of that central point. It was Holy Light Empire's fort: Dawn City. This was the gateway to Holy Light Empire; any of the six countries could pass through at any time to entire Holy Light's territory. It was an important place that represented military affairs. How could the Emperor bestow this to



someone?

Originally, the Emperor had decided to refuse. Aside from here, Suo Jia could choose any place he wanted. But he still stuck to his previous words; now that he wanted to retract his previous words, he couldn't.

After struggling with himself for a long time, the Emperor finally smiled wryly and said, "You really choose so well. I don't understand at all; this place is the military fort near the border area. Why did you have to choose this location? This place doesn't give you a lot of profits! Look...why don't we change to another place?"

"No, no, no..." Furiously shaking his head, Suo Jia excitedly said, "I definitely won't change it. I just have one question: Can I take this as my land or not?"

After staring wordlessly at Suo Jia for a long time, the Emperor begrudgingly sighed, "You can, but you must know that this place is a common passage for all six countries. Anyone can pass through this place to enter another country. It represents a military fort; even if you gain it, you can't possibly manage it!"

"Fort, huh?" Suo Jia stared at the map with bright eyes as he firmly said, "So what if it's a fort? This is exactly what I wish for. I have already made my decision; I want this place!"

"I....you..." After struggling for a bit, the Emperor finally sat down in his chair with a thud, and blankly stared at where Suo

Jia's finger was. At this point, it seemed like not giving it would be impossible. If he had known this earlier, he wouldn't have dared to speak so magnanimously, even if he was beaten. The one place that couldn't be chosen was still chosen in the end. Wasn't this purposely giving him a hard time?

With a sigh, the Emperor stood up and took out a map from the scrolls cabinet on one side. He passed it to Suo Jia with a bitter smile and said, "Alright, this is the certification of your possession of the land. At the same time, it's also a detailed map of the area. Take it and look over it."

Accepting the map from the Emperor, Suo Jia directly placed it into his interspatial ring without looking at it closely, and bid farewell. This was because he could already see that the Emperor hadn't actually wanted to hand this plot of land over to him. If he stayed any longer, it was possible the Emperor would go back on his word.

As he stared at Suo Jia's figure gradually disappearing, the Emperor realized that another fort would have to be built behind Dawn City. After all, the safety of the empire couldn't be placed into a single person's hands.

# Chapter 187: Super Magic Automaton (Part 1)

---

Suo Jia left the capital with the deed of his land ownership, and began to head towards the Angelic Phoenixes' location. One week later, Suo Jia finally returned back to the worn-down ancient castle, safe and sound. However...after two weeks, the place could really no longer count as an ancient castle.

Due to the Angelic Phoenixes' efforts, the place had already become ruins. All the buildings, as well as the surrounding walls, had been completely torn down. If he hadn't seen the Angelic Phoenixes' figures, Suo Jia might have even suspected that he had come to the wrong place.

Seeing Suo Jia return, all the girls happily welcomed him back. Sweeping a glance around, Suo Jia found Duo Mei and smiled, "How is it, Duo Mei? Did you girls unearth any profits?"

"Mhm..." Vigorously nodding, Duo Mei excitedly replied, "The ground has already been completely excavated. All the discovered articles have already been gathered together. Come and look!"

Suo Jia excitedly rushed over to the place the articles were being kept. When he pulled open the tent.....a large pile of lustrous, metal articles filled his vision.

Suo Jia hurriedly squeezed into the tent to examine the pile closely. Originally, it had looked great, but the more he looked, the colder Suo Jia's heart felt. What were these? There were just some

chandeliers, and things like wall lamps. What kind of stupid use would those be? Did this even count as finding articles?

After patiently looking through the pile, Suo Jia blankly raised his head and asked Duo Mei, “Are these all the discovered articles? Don’t tell me that there are no magic equipment related items?”

Duo Mei helplessly shook her head and bitterly smiled, “There’s nothing else. This place has been excavated by people too many times. Aside from these broken lamps, everything else has been collected away by others already.”

“That can’t be? In that case, how could the silver-armored knight and his group gain so much profit here?” Suo Jia asked in disbelief.

Duo Mei replied, “Actually, they discovered a secret room. Those items are definitely from within there. Unfortunately, no matter how large the secret room is, all of its contents have been found and taken by them. So...”

Suo Jia furrowed his brows, then abruptly waved his hand, “Fine. Bring me to that secret room. I want to see whether I can find any new things there.”

Duo Mei didn’t dare waste any time, and immediately led Suo Jia to a corner of the ruins. There was a pitch-black entrance not too far away there.

Turning on a magic lantern, they entered the underground

passage. After a bit, they walked into a narrow underground secret room. Surveying his surroundings, Suo Jia guessed that the small room was only about 20 pings. He began to closely examine the area.

Aside from a few simple, wooden shelves, there was only a table and a chair. Aside from these, everything inside had already been moved away. It was just as Duo Mei had said; there was absolutely nothing left.

Suo Jia slowly straightened his back and waved his hand, firmly declaring, "Whatever. Since we came here, we definitely cannot return empty-handed. Right now, I want everyone to immediately dig the area around this secret room! Even if there aren't any treasures, I will dig some out!"

Nobody refused his commands. Soon...everyone had a shovel in hand, and began to excavate the area. To prevent the area from collapsing, Suo Jia didn't idle around, and continuously released an ice stream to support the secret room.

Some people dug, some people moved things around, and everyone was extremely busy. With the Angelic Phoenixes' strength, the walls were soon forcibly smashed and tossed aside. At the same time, a dark passage appeared in front of them.

Suo Jia couldn't help but get excited at the site of the dark passageway. As expected....this place wasn't simply a cramped secret room. They had managed to excavate out this long tunnel; how could the tiny room have been the only thing constructed? Suo Jia believed that the room was more like a lounge, or a

watchroom! He turned on the magic lantern and led the group of girls through the tunnel.

The tunnel was man-made; it was both wide and orderly. Not long after they had started walking, the sound of wind rushed in from the opposite end. A torrent of ‘Ding Dong’ sounds came from the Angelic Phoenixes’ bodies. When they raised the lantern to inspect the source, they discovered that the floor was densely covered with arrows!

Suo Jia wiped away his cold sweat, secretly glad that he hadn’t walked in front. Otherwise, the dense storm of arrows, although couldn’t pierce through his body’s Monarch Armor, would probably have bored holes through his unprotected head like a sieve!

Suo Jia hurriedly fell behind by a few steps, letting a few of the Angelic Phoenixes lead the way. The group slowly advanced, but before they had gotten far, Suo Jia felt the ground around them tremble. Then...the 10 meter long tunnel unexpectedly began to collapse.

Seeing the ground beneath him begin to crumble, Suo Jia didn’t dare tarry, and activated Unrivaled Wave Walking to fly up into the air. The Angelic Phoenixes wasted no time either, and opened the cloaks behind them to float over to the opposite side.

When everyone finally reached the opposite end of the tunnel safely, they turned around to look back. The 10 meter long passage had already become a bottomless abyss. If one fell down there, they wouldn’t possibly survive!

Suo Jia was inwardly glad that he hadn't let Aimi and Aila tag along. Otherwise, nobody could've saved them. Both the Angelic Phoenixes and Suo Jia could only keep themselves in the air. If they dragged two people along with them, they'd definitely drop down at high speeds like rocks.

"Gulu...gulu..." Just as everyone had sighed in relief, the passage walls once again began to tremble. Everyone looked downward in horror. Just as they thought the walls would collapse as well, a strange 'gulu' sound rose from the depths.

When they looked towards the source of the sound, no one could see any strange changes in the long passage. Just as everyone had raised their guards...an enormous shadow instantly turned around the corner in front of them, rumbling as it rushed towards the group.

Everyone watched as a gigantic boulder that blocked the entire passage heavily rolled down the passage. It had an imposing, unstoppable air as it wildly steamrolled its way towards the group.

"Not good! Quickly leave the passage!" Suo Jia urgently shouted.

Hearing Suo Jia's shout, the girls all extended their cloaks to the fullest, fleeing towards the passage behind them. Afterwards...the giant boulder dropped into the bottomless abyss. Even after a long time had passed, they were not able to hear any echo of it hitting the ground.

Suo Jia nervously wiped away his sweat. However, Suo Jia didn't cower; rather, he instead grew more excited. Although these traps were formidable, they indicated that there must be some kind of precious treasure hidden here. Most importantly, nobody had ever come here before!

With a wave of his hand, Suo Jia commanded everyone to head out once more to continue searching. For the next half an hour, Suo Jia and the others encountered six more rolling boulders in succession. As for other traps, there were too many to count. However...although Suo Jia and Angelic Phoenixes didn't dare boast about their strength, they were quite powerful. One after another, they broke through the traps.

Finally, they reached the end of the narrow passage. Within the spacious hole, two great doors appeared in front of them. When they looked around, they saw that the two dazzling doors were tightly shut. They exuded an imposing presence that filled the entire cave.

Suo Jia and the girls walked up to the great doors, closely examining them. However, after a long period of inspection, they couldn't find any mechanisms to open the doors aside from six keyholes. In a bout of anger, Suo Jia fiercely commanded that if they couldn't open the doors, they'd dig around the cave walls and clear a passage through to the other side!

Heeding Suo Jia's orders, the girls quickly spurred into action. They brandished picks, and their fire wind battle qi helped them smash slabs of rock and move it into the passage behind them. Because there were so many people, they were able to



simultaneously excavate the left, right, and top areas around the doors. Half an hour later, the entire area around the doors had been cleared, and the doors stood there alone. Although they hadn't been opened, they could no longer obstruct anyone.

Circling around the grand doors in satisfaction, Suo Jia followed the opened up, narrow path and entered the area behind the doors to arrive at a huge hall over 1000 pings large. Suo Jia observed that the entire floor here was flat and smooth, like a mirror. The absolute emptiness of the area was like an empty case; there was nothing present. At the same time, the Angelic Phoenixes came over from behind him, suspiciously looking around the spacious room.

“Creak...creak...” An ear-piercing rumble rang out, and the hall's surrounding walls all flipped around, exposing dozens of wide, pitch-dark holes.

“Not good! Be careful, raise your guards!” Seeing this scene, Suo Jia, who had already been completely frightened by all the traps in this place, urgently commanded. At the same time, all the Angelic Phoenixes unsheathed their war blades, focusing all their attentions warily.

Everyone watched as copper, humanoid figures walked out from the hundreds of holes. One by one, they entered from both sides, approaching the inside of the hall.

Everyone watched as 900 total—in the formation of 30 rows x 30 columns—metal people made of bronze lined up in a neat formation. The large hall was completely sealed off, blocking Suo

Jia and the others from leaving.

“This...this is!” Suo Jia couldn’t help but watch the strange scene unfold in front of him with wide eyes. If he hadn’t seen wrongly, these were the alchemist’s most representative tools that had been lost for thousands of years: Magic Automatons!

# Chapter 188: Super Magic Automaton (Part 2)

---

The Magic Automaton used a type of alchemy technique, a perfect combination of magic cores, metals, magic spells, and magical beasts. Its body was made of copper and steel, making it indestructible. In addition, it could use the spell formations inside its body to utilize the energy within magic cores, activating magic attacks.

Most importantly, Magic Automatons had a certain level of intelligence. By sealing the souls of magical beasts inside, the Magic Automaton had enough battle knowledge to use commands with language. Most importantly...these Magic Automaton only had the ability to think, and were not conscious of the concept of 'free will'. Thus, they would never betray their creator.

The Magic Automaton was the result of reaching the peak of alchemy techniques. It was the basis of an alchemist's power. Without the Magic Automaton, the alchemist would be more like a blacksmith or a tailor. But with the Magic Automaton, an alchemist could contend against any enemy.

Suo Jia was really curious about the 900 Magic Automaton in front of him. He just couldn't understand: during the year back when the Atomic Alchemy Lab had been destroyed by a calamity, why hadn't these things been dragged out? Suo Jia believed that once they were pulled out, their power would definitely be astonishing!

A strange sound burst out as the 900 Magic Automaton all

reached their hands backwards to grab the large bow on their backs. At closer inspection, the giant bow's body seemed to be made from some amethyst. Alien magic designs and symbols covered the bow's surface.

These bows were different from other bows; the back part was the same, there was still the arm of the bow, the grip, and the bow string. However, the front part was drastically different. It had a round, cylindrical-shaped mouth the thickness of an arm, much like a cannon, currently pointed at Suo Jia and his group.

“Not good!” Seeing this, Suo Jia cried out. At the same time, the 900 Magic Automatons suddenly emitted golden glows from their bodies, and the bow cannons in their hands began to sparkle with a violet light as well.

“Quick...we must retreat swiftly. This place is dangerous!” Suo Jia urgently shouted as he saw the Magic Automatons about to open fire.

As soon as he finished speaking, the 900 bow cannons abruptly shook, shooting scarlet Fireballs out from the canon mouths. They leapt towards Suo Jia and the others as fast as lightning.

Faced against the incoming red Fireballs, Suo Jia couldn't help but feel relieved that...everyone's speeds were fast enough. Since all the walls around the doors had been excavated out, it gave everyone enough space to retreat. If only one of these conditions were missing, a large majority of the people would've been lost.

Figures chaotically flashed as the girls all chose different locations in a well-coordinated fashion, quickly threading their ways to behind the doors. At the same time, a dull boom echoed, causing the metal doors to rumble violently. Suo Jia and the others used the doors as a shield to temporarily keep their lives.

However, the things inside the doors seemed to know Suo Jia and the others were behind it. Without moving, the bow cannons shot out scarlet Fireballs one after another in succession, violently banging into the metal doors. Soon after, the iron doors were glowing red from the heat, making them so unbearably hot that one couldn't even go near them.

With no other choice, Suo Jia and the others could only scatter into the passage. At the same time, the booms stopped. The Magic Automatons seemed to realize that their targets were no longer there, so they had stopped their fire.

Seeing this, Suo Jia's heart couldn't help but race. From his knowledge, the Magic Automaton used a heat sensor as a method to detect and respond. Although these ones couldn't see Suo Jia and his group, they could feel the heat radiating from their bodies. That's why they had continued to burst fire at them without stopping. Now that Suo Jia and his party had left, the automatons could no longer sense their body heat, and naturally stopped.

In order to confirm his suspicious, Suo Jia once again returned to the front of the metal doors. As expected...a whizzing sound rang through the air, followed by a fierce boom, and the world-shaking explosions continued again.

Suo Jia's eyes flashed brightly. He knew that these automatons couldn't shoot endlessly. In reality, they were using magic formations that retrieved energy from magic cores in order to attack. As long as the magic cores' energies were completely exhausted, they would just become piles of scrap metal.

Suo Jia stood behind the doors, activating Revolving Frozen Gas on them to lower the doors' temperature. Suo Jia was worried that if the doors continued to heat up, they would completely melt.

As a result of Suo Jia's efforts, the doors gradually cooled down. Afterwards...Suo Jia pulled out an ice stream to connect to the metal doors. He then continuously activated Freezing Touch, firmly wrapping around the outside of the doors.

The fierce booms continued for an entire hour before the peace was finally restored. Gathering up his courage, Suo Jia re-entered the spacious hall. When he looked around, he saw that the 900 Magic Automatons were dumbly standing there. The giant cannons were still facing the doors, but they weren't moving at all.

"Did they exhaust all their energies?" Suo Jia couldn't help but wonder.

Suo Jia looked at the doors behind him, then back at the 900 steel Magic Automatons opposite him. He knew that these doors were originally supposed to serve as walls of death. However, they had unexpectedly turned into their life-saving shield.

Originally, after entering the large hall, the doors were supposed

to instantly shut as the Magic Automatons appeared, blocking off the enemy's escape route. But now, the doors hadn't been opened once from beginning to end. Rather, they had become the shield to block arrows for Suo Jia and his group all the way up until now. The Magic Automatons had exhausted their energies, yet hadn't been able to do anything to their targets at all.

Seeing the densely packed Magic Automatons, Suo Jia couldn't help but shake his head as he sighed in admiration. Although these Automatons had intelligence, they had no consciousness after all, so they had to link with a person. Only then would they be able to display their greatest amount of power. For example, although they clearly knew they couldn't hit their opponents, they had still dumbly drained themselves of their energy, making them absolute idiots.

Suo Jia knew that as long as a person commanded them, the result would be different. If the opponent didn't come out, the opposite party wouldn't attack. As soon as the opponent showed up, the 900 cannons would simultaneously open fire, and nobody would be able to block them. The temperature alone was enough to melt steel into liquid.

Suo Jia looked at the 900 piles of scrap iron in front of him. He knew that although they were currently drained, they'd immediately become lively again once their magic cores were changed. As long as they had enough magic cores, they would be like tenacious cockroaches!

After cautiously walking up to the Magic Automatons and confirming that they had actually exhausted all its energy, Suo Jia

shouted at the girls outside the doors to re-enter. This trial could be considered as passed. Suo Jia believed that even if this wasn't the last trial, it was close enough. After all.... the protection of 900 Magic Automatons was already quite elaborate!

They walked past the still Magic Automatons, and soon...Suo Jia and his group had reached the opposite end of the large hall. When they looked back at the 900 Magic Automatons, Suo Jia made up his mind to definitely ship the things back with him. These steel fellows were indeed extremely formidable. What Suo Jia needed now were the blueprints of these Magic Automatons, and he needed to learn how to control and switch the magic cores. He could only hope that he'd be able to find these things further inside.

The group opened the inner door on the other end of the large hall, and...a round arena appeared in front of them. The grand arena was completely empty, without any trace of humans. The surroundings walls were all natural rock, and didn't seem like they were parts of traps. The group of people slowly entered the arena, walking towards the opposite door.

“Rumble!” They hadn't imagined that as soon as they walked to the center of the arena, a deep sound echoed. With a bang, a set of sturdy and thick, metal doors crashed down in front of the door they had come from, firmly blocking the way they had come from.

Seeing this, Suo Jia and his group couldn't help but be overwhelmed with shock. They warily surveyed their surroundings, and the next instant...the ground around them opened up into a deep, pitch-black hole. A hundred strong bodies



leapt out from the hole. A sound broke through the air as the hundred bodies flowed outwards, and exceptionally strong and healthy Magic Automatons tightly encircled Suo Jia and the girls.

# Chapter 189: Harvest Season (Part 1)

---

Without Suo Jia commanding them to, everyone quickly pulled out their weapons and formed a circular formation. They watched the hundred surrounding Magic Automatons cautiously. Although in terms of numbers, there were much less compared to outside, everyone knew that these 100 Magic Automatons were definitely much more frightening than the 900 outside.

Judging from outer appearances, these seemed to be female. Their bodies were created with purple gold, and the two-handed swords in their hands seemed extremely nimble, with terrifying speed. But just by judging from what they could see, the hazy, violet glow that surrounded their bodies was already enough to make everyone feel fear.

Suo Jia surveyed their surroundings, then said in a grave voice, “Everyone, watch out. Once they open fire, fly up into the air. Also, don’t break these Magic Automatons, exhaust all of them!”

The girls quickly nodded. At the same time, the hundred females surrounding them had finished gathering their energies, and suddenly leapt in. Their figures gradually sped up more and more, until eventually, they even left after images.

“Ding dong ding dong...” In a mere instant, the Angelic Phoenixes on the outer part of the circle were barraged with attacks. Seeing this, Suo Jia shouted in anger, and took the initiative to leap into the air.

Seeing this, the other girls near the center of the circle also flew up into the air. However, the outer girls had already missed their chance, and were completely entrapped by the hundred Magic Automatons that were as swift as a storm.

Suo Jia didn't dare waste any time, and hurriedly commanded for everyone to descend and save the girls. After a bitter struggle... all the girls were finally able to fly into the air. Under Suo Jia's lead, they stopped on a beam above the arena.

Although the enemies had left, the Magic Automatons on the ground continued to wildly race around, occasionally raising their hands to look at Suo Jia and the others in the air. However, they stubbornly refused to stop. The corners of Suo Jia's mouth tilted upwards at the scene. This time, it wouldn't take long for the Magic Automatons to exhaust all of their energies.

Just as Suo Jia was silently celebrating to himself, the central area of the arena slowly opened up to expose an enormous, circular hole. At the same time, the hundred rampaging Magic Automatons quickly leapt down the hole.

Under everyone's bewildered gazes, a crystal person whose entire body glowed with a violet light slowly rose from the hole as the Magic Automatons wildly running around all fell into it.

"Kacha...kacha...kacha..." Powerful sounds rang out. Suo Jia and the others watched with wide eyes as the hundred Magic Automatons unexpectedly assembled onto the crystal automaton's body. Amidst the brilliant violet, a 10 meter tall and incomparably thick, enormous automaton instantly took form.

A feeling of danger couldn't help but arise in everyone's hearts at this sight. Warily looking at the large fellow under them, and Suo Jia firmly said, "Everyone, be careful, and prepare your Space Shields. This big guy might have long range attacks!"

As expected, as soon as Suo Jia finished speaking, the gigantic automaton below them slowly raised its head. After sweeping its eyes across Suo Jia's group's position, it slowly raised its hands. Everyone noticed that, where the palm should've been, the two large hands sported pitch-black holes!

"Dudududududu..." Muffled bangs resounded as a chain of penetrating, violet glows fiercely flashed. Amidst the light, sharp amethyst crystals shot outwards, whizzing towards Suo Jia and the others in midair.

Even the Space Shield couldn't possibly block such concentrated attacks. After all....although the Space Shield was unequaled, it was something that broke instantly. Although it could block the first crystal, it couldn't possibly block the second and third crystals that followed as well...

The 36 girls remained dauntless. They first used the Space Shields to block one, then used their bodies to block it head-on. Although they really wanted to block the attacks, the power of the amethysts was too great. If they came into the slightest bit of contact with the crystal, the girls would instantly fly off into the distance, like a baseball. They had absolutely no power to resist.

As the enormous Magic Automaton below them crazily shot out attacks, the 36 fire wind girls were all sent flying backwards from them. Eventually...the only one remaining was Suo Jia, who had stayed in his original position. Now he'd have to face the amethysts by himself!

With a bitter laugh, Suo Jia released his Space Shield. He stamped his feet and leapt out oddly. The Magic Automaton below him turned the cannon around, and the shot out amethysts began to follow Suo Jia's figure, continuously shooting at him.

"Sou! Sou! Sou..." With tightly clenched teeth, Suo Jia quickly moved around the air above the arena, like an extremely nimble fish in water, not daring to stop for a single moment. He constantly changed his direction of movement in midair.

Although Suo Jia had already dodged quite well...the Magic Automaton was indeed too powerful. Although it didn't have a consciousness, a combination of over a hundred Magic Automatons had the intuition of a wild beast. No matter how Suo Jia evaded, it would subconsciously turn the cannon around to follow Suo Jia's figure.

After a while, Suo Jia had been brushed by the attacks 5-6 times. Despite the fierce pain, Suo Jia knew that being merely brushed was still not a big deal; it meant that he could dodge them. But if he was completely hit by one, the powerful impulse would crumble any power of resistance he had. Once that happened, his head, which had no protection, would instantly explode from the dense rain of fire.

For a period of time, Suo Jia's consciousness was concentrated to an unprecedented level due to the situation that threatened his life. His body flashed through the air; every time it shifted, it would leap forwards at an impossible angle as he tried his best to evade.

Although this sounded simple, it was actually something that happened in the blink of an eye. By the time all the Angelic Phoenixes had finally stopped their momentum and stabilized their bodies, Suo Jia had already dodged dozens of times, and had been hit 5-6 times.

At this site, the girls seemed to have made up their mind about something, and quickly rushed towards the giant Magic Automaton. The Young Master's life was most important; they didn't want, nor let allow, this Magic Automaton to continue pursuing the Young Master's life.

Faced against the flocking arrival of the Angelic Phoenixes, the giant Magic Automaton raised its other hand in contempt, blasting out a succession of amethysts in their direction. The Angelic Phoenixes were helpless...although their speeds were extremely fast, twisting and turning in the air was extremely strenuous, and it seemed like they had no nimbleness to speak of.

In comparison, Suo Jia was like an agile fish. He could change the direction of his movement at any given point, and a stomp of his feet could allow him to change his angle by 90 degrees at full speed, dodging the attacks. On the other hand, the Angelic Phoenixes were like birds; although they were extremely fast, turning 90 degrees like that was impossible.

As the Angelic Phoenixes were blasted away, the Magic Automaton shifted its focus back onto Suo Jia. As matters stood, how could it accept being unable to do anything to Suo Jia? Its task was to seize him.

Some time passed; Suo Jia felt like he had been chased for an entire century. Finally...the Magic Automaton stopped its wild shooting, and helplessly looked at Suo Jia floating in midair. It rotated its body left and right, not daring to attack, and unable to attack.

Suo Jia abruptly stopped as he cautiously watched the Magic Automaton below. Why had it stopped? Did it no longer have any crystals? Roughly approximating, the automaton had already shot out over 1000 amethysts just now.

He tentatively began to approach the Magic Automaton. When he had reached about 10 meters away from it, the Magic Automaton suddenly sprung back to life, striding over with its large feet and rushing at Suo Jia. It brandished its giant arms, trying to attack.

Suo Jia soon realized that his guess was right; the amethysts had all been used up. Now, the Magic Automaton could only use close range attacks, and was completely powerless against flying enemies.

Suo Jia quickly turned around to fly back to the beam, then commanded the 36 fire wind warriors to take turns playing around with the giant fellow, consuming its energy. Just as before, he

ordered for them not to destroy the Magic Automaton, but rather drain it of all its magic core's energy.

The 36 fire wind warriors split into groups of 6, and began to fight the big fellow. Although it was extremely large in size...its speed was very slow, making it impossible for the automaton to hit the lightning-fast Angelic Phoenixes.

After remaining deadlocked for quite a while, the giant Magic Automaton suddenly shuddered, and its body quickly crumbled. It turned into the 100 female bodies again, engaging in fierce battles with the Angelic Phoenixes.

Without any need for Suo Jia's command, the Angelic Phoenixes immediately raised their cloaks and flew back into the air, watching the 100 Magic Automatons below them wildly leap around like the wind. Finally...half an hour later, the magic cores contained inside these Magic Automatons had been completely drained. Just like the 900 that had been outside, they ceased to move. Suo Jia knew it was time for harvest.

The 100 Magic Automatons fell to the ground like mud and wood dolls one after another. Suo Jia smiled to himself in satisfaction; these Magic Automatons' sole weakness was their lack of flying ability. They had no other weak points. As long as Suo Jia changed their magic cores and looked for the method to control them, these fellows would become the best soldiers.

Weaving through the Magic Automatons, Suo Jia and his group finally arrived in front of the large door. Above it hung a golden board with large print: Atomic Alchemy Lab Headquarters!



## Chapter 190: Harvest Season (Part 2)

---

Although the doors were tightly shut, they weren't locked. When they pushed open the door, a bizarre world appeared in front of them. Glancing around the incomparably vast and empty room, they saw that various alchemic goods, tools, and piles of alchemic materials covered the ground. There were also two side doors leading to storage. What made Suo Jia most excited was that he had finally found the whereabouts of the alchemy notes and books.

For the next month, Suo Jia ordered the girls to train in the arena as Suo Jia began to gather everything within the large treasury. No matter which item he inspected, it was a priceless treasure.

Firstly, Suo Jia found a large batch of new generation interspatial rings that hadn't yet been made public, exactly like the one he wore. They contained 10 cubic meters of space within them. Although this wasn't that large, these rings were still quite impressive; much more useful than the ones with one cubic meter volumes that the Angelic Phoenixes had been using.

Counting them up, there was a total of 76 ten cubic meters, second generation rings. Each Angelic Phoenix took two, but there were still 4 remaining. This was just enough to give Aimi and Aila two each as well.

As for Suo Jia, he had found the newest generation ring that hadn't yet finished the beta state: the Generation III interspatial ring had a space of 100 cubic meters. The surface area of the Space Shield enshrouded the user with a 1 meter perimeter, and when

activated, the entire body was completely protected by it. This allowed the user to instantly enter an invulnerable state. In addition...it could maintain this state for 3 seconds now instead of instantly collapsing after touch!

Suo Jia had tested it; within three seconds, no attacks from the Angelic Phoenixes would cause the Space Shield to even fluctuate. It was as if the destructive power of the attacks had been sucked into another space, unlike how Generation I and II interspatial rings would reverberate from the shock, which was their sole drawback!

On the outside, this Generation III interspatial ring was a bit too luxurious. There was a large diamond embedded in the gold ring, giving it a rich and imposing air. The large diamond would reflect the sun's rays, making it absolutely dazzling. Only those that showed off their wealth would ever wear it like this; no warrior had ever worn such a thing before.

Truthfully speaking, Suo Jia didn't really want to wear such an eye-catching ring, but it was extremely powerful after all. Only an idiot wouldn't wear it. In addition, Suo Jia knew that this gem wasn't simply a diamond. It was a space crystal; in terms of size, it was surely the world's largest and oldest space diamond.

Suo Jia looked at the ring in admiration. He knew that this ring had to be quite complicated. Even if one got a hold of the Generation III interspatial ring blueprints, where would they ever be able find such a large space diamond? Without such a large diamond, how could the ring contain such ridiculous effects?

Releasing the shield in the Generation III ring required a high consumption of both spirit power and magic power. In addition, the shield took about 10 minutes to open. That's why Suo Jia didn't abandon his original Generation II ring; using both in combination was the most appropriate choice.

Moreover, Suo Jia discovered that the Generation III ring's Space Shield could be deployed for longer if one used their magic power and spirit power to supplement it, thus extending its duration. If one didn't use their spirit power and magic power as additional amplification, it could only be maintained for 1 second. If one did boost it, the shield would last for its current duration of 3 seconds.

Suo Jia knew that at the moment, his own magic power and spirit power were still a bit weak. When his powers grew stronger, he'd be able to maintain the shield for 8-10 seconds. That would be the display of the Generation III interspatial ring's true power.

From the alchemy notes, Suo Jia knew that the 100 speed-type Magic Automatons outside were actually used to test this Generation III interspatial ring. Under the attacks from those fellows, the longest one had been able to maintain the shield was 12 seconds! This was a record set by a Magister. In other words, he could even go against the combination of the 100 Magic Automatons.

Based on the notes, Suo Jia also learned an extremely exciting piece of information; the amethysts shot out by the combined form of the Magic Automatons were actually mediums of energy. In terms of its special characteristics, this meant that it could replace the spears the Angelic Phoenixes used to activate Thousand

## Feathers!

When the Angelic Phoenixes learned of this, they quickly spurred into action. They picked up the amethysts that were stuck at odd angles, including the ones embedded into the wall and the ones that had fallen onto the ground. When divided evenly amongst them, they had about 30 each. Duo Mei managed to get 36!

After some experiments, it was discovered that these amethysts were not only mediums of energy, but were also incomparably hard. In terms of hardness, it was not at all inferior to the Angelic Phoenixes' armor. Most importantly, when the fire wind energy was burst through the medium, the energy would compress before exploding, more than doubling its might. This was far superior to the effect-less spears that Suo Jia had made.

After gaining such amazing treasures, the Angelic Phoenixes wholeheartedly immersed themselves into training, familiarizing themselves with the skills used with the amethysts. The 36 Angelic Phoenixes spent every day fighting in the arena, and used each other as targets as they randomly shot out projectiles. This allowed them to practice Thousand Feathers, as well as train their evasion skills. It could also raise their ability to resist attacks, effectively improving many aspects all at once.

On the other hand, Suo Jia continued to gather the large amount of items that he constantly found left and right. Unfortunately, although Suo Jia was already an elementary alchemist...majority of the items here were still foreign to him. Although he found them, he wasn't able to figure out their uses, and could only store it for the moment.

After going through all the magic articles, Suo Jia stored all the alchemy books and notes. Originally...it wouldn't have been a big deal even if he had left them there, but Suo Jia was afraid that with the situation of his acquired land, they would be forced to leave this area for quite a while. He'd have to go to the plot of land first before thinking about anything else.

When he had received the drawing of the land, the area had already belonged to Suo Jia. The court would no longer care for it. However, this also provided a problem; it meant that Suo Jia would be completely responsible for it. The land didn't just represent power, but duties as well!

Under Suo Jia's command, the 100 speed-type Magic Automatons, as well as 300 of the bow cannon Magic Automatons outside, were all stored into the interspatial rings. The remaining 600 Magic Automatons were temporarily left there, as the interspatial rings were already full, and it wasn't like people could carry them around. These Magic Automatons were made of metal, so they each weighed at least a ton.

After the underground entrance had been properly concealed, the group of people quickly rushed towards Dawn City. For the sake of maintaining speed on the journey, Suo Jia had hired two large carriages where he, Aimi, and Aila rode. Although their speeds decreased by quite a bit, they could still hastily journey on for all 24 hours of a day.

Suo Jia continued to search through his things during the journey until finally...he managed to find notes related to the

Magic Automatons. It turned out that these 1000 Magic Automatons were originally not Atomic Alchemy Lab's products, but ancient articles that had been passed down this whole time. In reality, these Magic Automatons, as well as the entire Atomic Alchemy Lab, had gradually developed after the ancestor's notes had been organized.

As he read the notes, Suo Jia slowly came to understand many things. When the Atomic Alchemy Lab had suffered destructive attacks, they had also wanted to dispatch these Magic Automatons. However, these automatons hadn't been able to freely move around. They had to have countless binding mechanisms set up to be used. They could only defend a set area, and couldn't just be used anywhere they were brought to.

As for the 100 speed-type Magic Automatons, they were only able to move within that arena. Once taken outside, they wouldn't budge at all. Actually, they wouldn't leave the arena independently anyways. Once they left, they'd immediately stop moving. All their actions were controlled and completed by the magic system below the ground.

The 900 bow cannon Magic Automatons didn't have eyes, so they couldn't freely move around either. Actually, they were pretty much just stationary forts. Their eyes were simply decoration; they actually used heat, as well as the fluctuations of magic and battle qi, to sense their surroundings. Once the enemy entered their attack range, they'd automatically appear and initiate their attacks. Once the enemy left the range, they'd naturally stop.

# Chapter 191: My Territory (Part 1)

---

Clearly, this wasn't the Magic Automatons' complete state. In reality, they weren't like how they were described in the records, with their own intelligence. They were only machines that used magic spells, metal, and others in perfect combination to form a magic machine!

After half a month, the group finally arrived at Dawn City. When Suo Jia looked at it, his jaw dropped wide open, to the point where he could easily fit an egg in it. This...this was Dawn City?

The reason why Dawn City was a city was because of its city walls. However, these walls only guarded the outside and not the inside. The inner walls were only 2 meters tall, and beyond worn-down. The buildings within the city were also short and run-down, and looked as if they'd collapse any minute.

Dawn City was also called Dawn Fort, and was built in a ravine shaped like “人”. The line on top was the sole public path that led to the area. There were two towering mountains on either side, and Dawn Fort was constructed in the valley between them.

After entering the city that belonged to him, Suo Jia felt like crying. Although the area was very large, the buildings were all crumbling. While the road was paved with limestone, it was extremely muddy. From this, it could be seen that the management here was extremely disordered. Suo Jia even suspected that the streets here had never been cleaned!

There were quite a few people in the city, but they were all lifeless. When they saw Suo Jia and his group, they all looked on with dead, wooden stares. Seeing their tattered clothes and haggard faces, Suo Jia began to suspect that he had entered a refugee camp!

However, Dawn City still had highlights. The path near the outside of the valley had sturdy, two-story walls, which seemed quite new. This was a point that one couldn't be negligent about; if the city wasn't properly defended, it would be wide open for the countries. Wouldn't that basically allow the enemies to freely enter and exit?

But Suo Jia wrinkled his brow in dissatisfaction at the sight of the new, 4-5 meter walls. Although these city walls were quite good, they could only block normal people. They were absolutely too weak to obstruct the way of a powerful warrior. If a powerful warrior wanted to enter, it'd be as easy as walking on level ground.

Suo Jia shook his head as their group walked along the muddy and filthy road, straight to the city lord's mansion. What really went beyond Suo Jia's expectations was that such a run-down city would have such a mansion!

Dawn City was a medium-sized city that could easily hold 200,000 people. The area of it was extremely large. The city lord's mansion was built on top of a hill, far away from the city walls.

The most shocking part was that there was another set of walls that 4-5 meters tall around the mansion. They were entirely made of limestone, and incomparably sturdy. These walls even had



soldiers making rounds on them!

The areas around the hills had been dug up to form a deep moat. One could only enter the city lord's mansion through a sole suspension bridge. If they wanted to cross through the river, they'd definitely be shot into porcupines by the soldiers on the wall!

Standing outside the mansion, Suo Jia sighed in admiration at the luxurious building. Even Holy Light's city lord's mansion wasn't as extravagant. When one compared the dirty, run-down city outside, then looked back at the lavish mansion, it was really the difference between two different layers of heaven!

One of the soldiers shouted out from the top of the surrounding walls, "Oi! What are you guys doing? Hurry up and leave!"

Suo Jia smiled and shouted in reply, "I'm Viscount Suo Jia, and I have come to receive Dawn City. Immediately notify your city lord to come out and meet me!"

The soldier on the wall froze for a while, before quickly pulling out a piece of paper from his pocket and inspecting it closely. He then sized up Suo Jia and knit his brows, "Then wait here. I'll go call for the city lord to come out!"

The soldier quickly got off the wall. A while later, he returned with a fatty accompanying him, who walked up onto the wall with an ashen face.

The fatty had a cold look on his face as he said in a low voice, "Welcome to Dawn City, Viscount Suo Jia. The transfer of the city has already been completed. Everything is in the mansion behind you, so all you have to do is to directly take them. I'm feeling a bit unwell, so I won't escort you out afterwards." The fatty turned around to leave, his figure quickly disappearing somewhere on the walls.

"Eh!" Dumbstruck, Suo Jia stared at the empty walls, not quite understanding what had just happened. According to the picture the Emperor had given him, wasn't this the city lord's mansion? How come he, who was now the owner of this territory, couldn't enter?

Suo Jia turned around and looked over at the building behind him instead. From his interpretation of the fatty's words, the city lord's mansion should be right behind him. But...how come he hadn't noticed that place?

When Suo Jia saw it, he turned back around. It would've been better if he hadn't seen it at all; after catching a glance, Suo Jia couldn't help but feel anger rush to his head. This was too brazen....it was basically bullying to an extreme extent!

Behind Suo Jia was a short, broken-down, wooden shack. It was already inclined down towards the left at a 60 degree angle, and it looked as if it was going to collapse any moment. The door's lintel had three unclear words written on it with something like charcoal: City Lord's Mansion!

Seeing the three words that had clearly been written quite

recently, Suo Jia couldn't help but chuckle darkly. He knew that the opposite party was definitely bullying him. Since he still looked like a child, the other party wasn't afraid of him being able to overturn seas and rivers. However...was Suo Jia really that easy to bully? Man...even the old man Emperor wouldn't dare to owe him anything, let alone others.

Suo Jia wordlessly pushed open the wooden shack with an overcast expression, entering the so-called "City Lord's Mansion". Suo Jia knew that the opposite party wanted to seize the original mansion by force. After all...although the map noted the mansion, it was simply indicated with a circle. Thus, one could say that the the city lord's mansion was the luxurious building opposite him, or the run-down, wooden shack. Both were within the drawn area.

When he pushed open the door to that wooden shack, he saw a completely empty little room. The room was dark and damp, and the floor was actually still wet. With one step, one could sink down five centimeters Moreover... the mud on the floor exuded an extremely foul odor that would make anyone vomit.

Suo Jia swallowed his discomfort with great difficulty, and arrived in front of the wooden shack's only piece of furniture: a tattered wooden table. He picked up the pile of documents there and closely examined them.

Dawn City had a total of 20,000 buildings, two army camps, and no permanent residents. The entire city was really just a fort; those that lived here were all soldiers. Among them were 100,000 slave soldiers and 10,000 from the regular army. Although the military force wasn't that large, it was more than enough to protect Dawn

City. After all...the city walls near the outside of the valley were only 100 meters long. 10,000+100,000 soldiers was more than enough. If the strategic value of this place wasn't so high, even 1000 elite troops would've been enough.

After carefully examining the documents on the table, Suo Jia was shocked to discover that on the balance, only 213 gold and 100 bags of army provisions remained. Aside from the weapons the 10,000 Empire's soldiers had, there were only 17 tattered swords. The 100,000 slave soldiers only had these 17 broken weapons! They didn't even have armor.

“Bang!” In anger, Suo Jia kicked the table in front of him into pieces. This was beyond bullying. The other party had really looked down at Suo Jia as dough he could knead whenever he wanted. Even bullying someone wouldn't use this kind of method, right? He was the owner of this place after all!

Seeing Suo Jia's expression, as well as the surrounding environment, the Angelic Phoenixes also realized the situation. After all, it was something that even idiots could figure out, so how could the intelligent Angelic Phoenixes not understand?

During the past year, they had seen countless scenes. They had run unhindered across the land of the Gold Triangle, swept by the wind, and forced even the Great Tri-Alliance to retreat. Their power and influence were matchless for a while. Now that they had suddenly encountered such belittling and humiliation, they immediately burst with anger.

The Angelic Phoenixes were fire wind warriors. Due to their

attributes, their angers were both short and explosive, and were thus easily ignited. Now that they had clearly been bullied and shamed, their eyes all grew red with rage, and were about to immediately charge over and wring their opponent's heads.

However, everyone knew that Suo Jia was the boss here. No matter how bitter they were, they had to follow Suo Jia's intentions. Instantly, 38 girls looked at Suo Jia and awaited his instructions.

All the girls watched as Suo Jia strode out of the wooden shack with an overcast expression. They all followed out behind him, wondering what exactly Suo Jia would do next!

Seeing that everyone had left the wooden shack, Suo Jia abruptly turned around and double-kicked the wooden pillars on either side of the door lintel. Immediately...pieces of wood flew through the air, and the entire wooden shack gave a faint, painful groan before collapsing with a bang.

With a sinister smile, Suo Jia fiercely waved his hand and shouted angrily, "Goddamn, they dared to pick on me just because I'm young. Let's go...we'll get back at them!" Suo Jia took large strides towards the luxurious mansion opposite them. At the same time, the 36 Angelic Phoenixes, as well as Aimi and Aila, powerfully dashed behind him with excited expressions.

"Oi!" Suo Jia stood in front of the walls and indignantly yelled, "Summon your city lord out immediately. I need to speak with him."

The soldier swept a scornful gaze across Suo Jia and said in a voice of disdain, “Sorry, Viscount Suo Jia. Our Master has already said that he’s not the city lord anymore, so he is no longer responsible for any matters here. In addition, he is feeling unwell. Thus, he won’t come out to meet you anymore.”

Suo Jia tightly gritted his teeth together. Although the soldier’s words had been pretty respectful, that cold and mocking tone was clearly ridiculing Suo Jia. The soldier wasn’t paying any mind to Viscount Suo Jia at all.

Facing such humiliation, Suo Jia took a deep breath and shouted, “I am the master here. This is my territory. As long as I am within my own land, every single person must listen to me. I don’t care how well your previous master is; if he doesn’t come out to meet me within 5 minutes, then don’t blame me for acting!” Suo Jia crossed his arms across his chest, looking as if he were waiting for something interesting to happen.

## Chapter 192: My Territory (Part 2)

---

Within the city lord's mansion, the fatty was currently hugging his exquisite wife, eating sweet fruits. When he heard Suo Jia's words, the fatty's lips curled up in contempt and said, "That young brat, he wants to go as far as snatch food from the mouth of tiger? In that case, he's bringing humiliation onto himself. This place has high mountains, and is far away from the Emperor. I won't put up with his crap!"

The fatty turned around and bellowed, "Gather my generals. If the opposite party tries to barge their way through later, I want them blasted out. But be careful to not threaten their lives; that young child is still a viscount after all. If he dies here, I won't be able to explain it!"

"Yessir!" A low, respectful voice replied to the fatty's command.

The fatty grabbed a fruit and rapaciously stuffed it in his mouth as he said in disdain, "This place is my territory. Who cares if the Emperor bestowed the title of City Lord to someone? That doesn't change a thing. I've run this place for 40 years; nobody can snatch away my family property. Nobody!"

Time slowly trickled by. Finally...five minutes had passed. However, when Suo Jia looked at the walls, the few soldiers were still lazily patrolling, completely ignoring Suo Jia's presence!

"Good...very good....this is best!" Having seen such despicable actions, Suo Jia's anger shook into action. He abruptly waved his

hand as he roared, “Since they provoked us, then there’s no need to hold back. Everyone, let your angers run free. Don’t bother leaving face for me! I only have a single request: seize the fatty alive!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, who had been holding themselves back for so long that they had become extremely moody after thinking about the situation, all opened their cloaks. They leapt up as fast as lightning, and the 36 red and gold figures instantly shot towards the wall.

After going through such a long period of arduous training, these Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes were no longer at the same elementary state they’d been in before. After many life-or-death experiences, they had already grown. Although there was still a long way before they fully matured, it was clear to see that normal soldiers weren’t worth being their opponents at all.

As 36 purple gold lights flashed out, the soldiers on the walls all fell to the ground one after another before they had yet to figure out what had happened. Drops of fresh blood flowed from their necks, spurting out like crazy.

In reality, Suo Jia’s orders had been quite clear already, yet these fellows dared to act so disobedient. Thus, there wasn’t much point in keeping them alive. Suo Jia wouldn’t dumbly let them go for his own ambition. “Picking weeds from their roots” meant that one couldn’t be merciful. Since they had chosen to be enemies, then they had to be beheaded and exterminated, leaving no chances of danger behind!



After a short moment, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes quickly retracted their amethysts and landed in small plaza outside the city lord's mansion. At the same time, a dozen powerful figures sensed the incident outside and leapt out from various rooms. They all unsheathed their weapons, and cautiously faced the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes that had descended from the skies!

“What are you still waiting for? Hurry up and get rid of them. I'm going in first!” Suo Jia's body flashed in mid-air, sweeping past the crowd from above them, and directly leaping through a window to enter the mansion.

Seeing this, the group of warriors blocking the door couldn't help but feel dismay. Being able to easily breach the walls and then fly in just like that was a strength that had far surpassed their knowledge. Everyone knew that this wasn't an enemy they could obstruct!

This didn't mean that there weren't any powerful warriors aside from the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes. However, how could any real domineering powers appear in this remote and desolate place? Places like the Gold Triangle were more like areas they'd appear in.

During the repeated annihilations the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had committed the past 10 months, it wasn't like they hadn't encountered any experts. But...with the protection of the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes and the four colored potions, people could only injure them; nobody could defeat them.

It could be said that there were countless people that had strengths many times greater than theirs. However, the Angelic

Six-Winged Phoenixes were covered with indestructible armors, and when injured, they could heal themselves with Life Potions. Moreover, their spirit power, magic power, and physical strength would never be exhausted. This was the most difficult part of them to deal with.

If they got rid of their clothes and all the potions on their body, the number of people that could defeat them in the Gold Triangle alone was at least 10,000. The ones that instantly kill them numbered over 1000. But in reality, nobody could do a thing to the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes. They were unequalled in the Gold Triangle!

Absolutely everything had confirmed Suo Jia's tactics to be accurate. How could normal people contend against the effects of a semi-Epic equipment set? If one had the effects of a complete Epic ranked equipment set, they'd be the most powerful existence in the world. In this world, only 7 peak warriors used completed Epic equipment sets, and these people were originally peerless without it.

At the moment, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes would not necessarily be able to defeat all opponents. But it was extremely difficult for their opponents to achieve victory, and if the girls couldn't win, they'd run. With the help from the four colored potions, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes would always be able to run away, or even wear down and exhaust the opponent before killing them. This was precisely the reason why the Great Tri-Alliance had retreated.

Seeing the dozens of warriors blocking their paths, the Angelic

Six-Winged Phoenixes didn't bother to waste any time speaking, and directly pulled out the amethysts at their waists. After storing up energy, 36 violet lights flashed, and those dozens of lives were instantly reaped.

On another side, Suo Jia had directly charged his way through the place's hall. The next moment...Suo Jia was shocked to discover that he had seemingly been trapped by an encirclement of over 30 warriors. They came in from all directions and surrounded him with an impenetrable formation! When he looked off into the distance, he saw that fatty currently sitting next to the distant end of the table with a sardonic smile on his face. While stuffing fruits into his mouth, he lazily waved his hand.

Following the fatty's actions...the surrounding windows, as well as the dark frames of the walls suddenly shot out hundreds of sharp arrows. All of them were aimed at Suo Jia, and whizzed loudly as they flew over.

Faced against such an attack, Suo Jia didn't dare waste any time. He quickly released a Space Shield, then activated the Water God's Shield. Suo Jia knew that...what he'd have to face wasn't just the volley of arrows shot out, but the 20-30 warriors' close ranged attacks from all directions!

As expected, the situation had gone exactly as Suo Jia had predicted. As the arrows crashed into the Space Shield, the surrounding warriors all raised their weapons up in the air, fiercely charging at Suo Jia. At the same time, a second wave of arrows had already been shot out.

# Chapter 193: Taking Over Dawn (Part 1)

---

Suo Jia knew that he was currently in the most dangerous circumstances. He had to quickly end the battle; otherwise, as soon as he was surrounded, together with the shooting from outside, even the Water God's Shield wouldn't be able to last for very long!

Although the Water God's Shield could block 15 of Duo Mei's slashes, Suo Jia was currently surrounded by 30 warriors. In addition, there were over a hundred archers off in the distance. Such an overwhelming attack could disintegrate the Water God's Shield within 2 seconds. The Space Shield also had a 10 minute cooldown period. In other words, if he didn't quickly end it, Suo Jia would lose his defense and have to go against the 130+ enemies in a defenseless state. In other words, there was an 100% chance that he'd get instantly killed.

Facing the flocking 20-30 warriors, Suo Jia abruptly stamped his right foot. A dull sound rang out as the Diamond Charge instantly activated. Rings, rows, and columns of the Diamond Charge's attacks wildly diffused through the air starting from Suo Jia, causing anyone in its path to suffer from a crushing defeat.

It was clear to see that these fellows had quite a bit of strength. At the very least, they weren't normal soldiers. They all fell to ground one after another, and the ice layers around their bodies shattered. However, their bodies were still perfectly intact. Only their actions were slightly slowed, which was due to the freezing effect.

Seeing this, Suo Jia couldn't help but frown. Originally, he'd

thought that the Diamond Charge would definitely shatter all of these guys into pieces. However, he hadn't imagined that they'd actually have this amount of strength, where the Diamond Charge could only induce freezing effects on them. He was unable to inflict any significant damage.

Suo Jia didn't dare tarry. He stretched out his hands, and a 9-meter long, arm-thick ice stream instantly leapt out. His right hand grasped the tail end of the ice stream, and with a fierce wave of his arm, the thick ice stream twisted and wound around the air. This caused the warriors attempting to close in on him to retreat once more, and knocked aside many of the arrows as well.

However, Suo Jia's ice stream whip wasn't a complete defense. A few dozen sharp arrows passed through the chinks in the ice stream, and accurately hit Suo Jia's Water God's Shield. Having received this attack, the shield's strength instantly decreased by quite a lot, almost dispersing right then and there!

"Tch..." Suo Jia lowly cursed, and controlled the ice stream whip with one hand. He circled his left hand around and then yanked it back, causing a shrieking water vortex to appear. Under the effects of Revolving Frozen Gas, it condensed into an ice wall, firmly protecting Suo Jia. For the moment, it'd be quite effective against the arrows, even though it probably wouldn't obstruct the warriors.

His right hand controlled the ice stream whip as his left hand stretched out. The next moment....a sharp Ice Arrow instantly shot out. It pierced through a warrior's throat, then hit the shoulder of another warrior behind, killing one and injuring the other.

At the same time, the ice stream whip accurately struck one of the warriors. A clear bang rang out, and Suo Jia instantly activated Freezing Touch, successfully freezing his opponent into an ice cube. When the ice stream whip lashed out once more, it shattered the ice cube, filling the air with fragments of the body.

However, Suo Jia's circumstances hadn't yet changed for the better. The total number of warriors in the room hadn't decreased by much, and the hidden archers outside were still wildly shooting at him.

It was at this moment that Suo Jia finally realized that no matter how powerful one was, they would still be tiny and insignificant in the face of a collective team. Although he had exerted all of his strength, he was still surrounded by perils. One person against over 100 people was an entirely different concept from fighting 1v1 battles.

What Suo Jia had to go up against weren't just attacks, but the question of defense. Suo Jia didn't have the power to evade, and could only choose to actively block some attacks with his defense. However, he could only helplessly receive majority of the other attacks!

In addition, in terms of just attacking, Suo Jia couldn't possibly target everyone at the same time. At the very least, he couldn't at the moment. In addition, even if he did manage to, Suo Jia's attack power would end up being decreased by a large amount, as it would end up being distributed among the increasing number of enemies present.

Magic was just like this; the greater the range of attack, the less the destructive power and harmful effects each target would suffer from. On the other hand, the more concentrated the attacks were on a single target, the greater its might would be. Simultaneously attacking 10 people meant that one's power would have to be evenly divided into 10; this was an inevitable result.

In terms of defense, one couldn't just contend against a single person's attack. Rather, they'd have to face 10 people's, or 100 people's attacks. Blocking all of them wasn't impossible, but preventing a single attack from all 100 people was equivalent to one person attacking 100 times. This would decrease the shield's energy, and even destroy it. Even a Magister wouldn't be able to deal with a shower of arrows from 10,000 people. If they tried to face it head-on, the result would definitely end up being the magic shield instantly shattering!

Even if someone was unrivaled under the heavens in 1v1 battles, they couldn't possibly resist a 10,000 men army by themselves; this was true for everyone. Even if the army stood still and allowed one to hack at them however they wanted, the person's battle qi would run out before defeating everyone. Their physical power and spirit power would also be drained. In this sense, it was basically an impossible task.

Teams required teams to contend against; it wasn't something that a single person could play around with. Suo Jia didn't dare flaunt his power. A proper man should know how to retract and extend. If they didn't know how to retreat, they were fools!

Suo Jia took a deep breath, and prepared to quickly retreat. But the next moment...the windows all simultaneously exploded. At this most critical moment, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had finally come to his rescue.

Long before they had entered, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had already finished storing their energies. As soon as they walked in, 36 red and gold glows flashed, and all the warriors present got hit by the attacks at the same time. They hurriedly used their weapons to split the crazy attacks from the Thousand Feathers, but its massive impulse sent the 30+ warriors blasting off pathetically into the distance.

“Phew...” Suo Jia couldn’t help but let out a breath. Since the girls had come, there wouldn’t be a problem. These Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had the protection of the Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes, and were completely impervious to the archers’ might. They were only afraid of attacks from blunt weapons, as well as the force inflicted by close ranged weapons. Things like bows were weapons that they never even attempted to block or evade. To them, the rain of arrows wasn’t much different from natural rain.

Despite seeing that the Thousand Feathers hadn’t instantly killed their enemies, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes weren’t very surprised. After all...there were many experts out there. If the Thousand Feathers wasn’t effective, then they’d enter close combat. No matter when, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had always been strongest in close combat!

“Hula...” A fierce whistle rang through the air as all the Angelic



Six-Winged Phoenixes opened their cloaks. Their bodies quickly leapt out towards the 30+ warriors, instantly initiating some messy warfare.

After lightly flicking off some nonexistent dust on his body, Suo Jia checked the Water God's Shield, and could sense its energy quickly recovering itself. Suo Jia smiled at the fatty opposite him and began to walk over. Now...there was no longer anyone that could obstruct his way. That damn fatty had provoked him, and deserved to suffer from the repercussions!

Seeing all the warriors wrapped into the fights, and having fallen into the disadvantageous position where he could be beaten, the fatty finally panicked. Since the fatty had just seen Suo Jia display his godly might, the fatty was beyond terrified as he watched Suo Jia approach him with a sinister smile!

Abruptly reaching out his hand, the fatty pointed at Suo Jia and said, "Archers, heed my command. Concentrate your fire power at this fellow, and shoot him until he becomes a porcupine!"

Following the fatty's orders, the dark spaces in the surrounding walls immediately shot out another volley of arrows. However, the number of arrows had already drastically decreased. The archers in front of the windows had already been killed off by the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes when they first entered. Thus, only around 50 of the archers hiding in the darkness still remained.

Although only 50 of them remained, a volley of 50 arrows still had quite a bit of destructive power. However...the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had already arrived. Without any need for Suo

Jia to order them, they automatically leapt forward and caused all of the arrows to fall onto the ground. They then flung the charged amethysts in their left hands, swinging them towards the dark places. A bang echoed through the room, and the archers hiding in the darkness were all caught in the explosion. They had a few missing arms and legs, and their guts were spilling out of their bodies. A single glance was enough to tell that they were dead.

From beginning to end, Suo Jia hadn't even glanced sideways at the scene. He believed in the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, his own companions. As long as they were here, Suo Jia would definitely not be in any danger. Suo Jia deeply believed that they would help him block all attacks. In addition, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes hadn't yet disappointed him.

Finally, the fatty watched Suo Jia with an expression overstruck by horror as Suo Jia stopped 10 meters in front of him. Suo Jia coldly glared at the fatty and said in a low voice, "You shouldn't have provoked me. You're really too foolish."

## Chapter 194: Taking Over Dawn (Part 2)

---

Seeing this scene, the fatty was completely stunned. He was just an ordinary person that did not understand any martial techniques at all; he was a mere official of the empire. If his underlings couldn't protect him any more, perhaps even an ordinary person could beat him up, let alone experts of Suo Jia's type.

Behind Suo Jia, the 36 fire wind warriors had managed to finish killing all the enemies in the room within only a few seconds. Not a single one remained. The air reeked of blood, making anyone that smelled it feel nauseous.

In reality, if they had been dragged into a 1v1 fight, these guys that had died probably wouldn't have been so weak. At the very least, they could've fought for over 10-12 minutes. However, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' teamwork and mutual understanding of each other were incomparable. Although their numbers were about the same, each one of their opponents felt like they were going against 6 opponents. The situation was actually like this.

If it was 36v36, how would the opponent feel like they were fighting 1v6? It was because of their team's cooperation and connection with each other. These were both extremely important factors, and this level of connection was something that these girls had formed after being raised together since they were 5-6 years old. Now, they had already been together for 15-16 years. They didn't have to speak to each other, or even exchange glances. They simply knew what their companions were doing subconsciously.

While it was clear that they were each fighting for themselves, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes would often suddenly leave their opponents and exert all their strength to attack another enemy. In that instant, another 5 companions would do the exact same. Thus, a 1v6 scene would unfold. After they managed to kill that person in one go, they'd then use their speed to leap back and continue fighting against their own enemy, waiting for the next chance to attack together again.

The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes walked up behind Suo Jia and furiously glared at the fatty. Everyone was trying to guess exactly what Suo Jia was planning to deal with the fatty. After a period of silence, Suo Jia waved his hand and said in a low voice, "Go...since you've already done it, do it a bit cleaner. Massacre everyone outside!"

"No!" Hearing Suo Jia's orders, the fatty was finally unable to bear it any longer. His legs went soft as he abruptly fell off his chair and onto the ground. In a panicked voice, he said, "Viscount Suo Jia, a respectful person like you has much power. I beg of you to be magnanimous. I'll pay everything, all my assets. I just hope that you'll spare my family's elderly and young."

Suo Jia furrowed his brows and hesitated for a long while before firmly replying, "Fine. Immediately tie up all the people in this mansion. Don't let a single one escape!"

The 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' figures flashed, quickly disappearing from the hall and rushing to various parts of the building. Suo Jia believed from their actions that nobody could possibly escape them.

After the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had left, Suo Jia's attention moved back to the fatty as he coldly said, "You'd better not say I didn't give you a choice. Right now....I want you to immediately hand over everything I deserve. Otherwise, I can guarantee that your family's elderly and young won't live to see the light of day!"

Seeing Suo Jia's evil expression, the fatty was terrified as he nodded and trembled as he replied, "I'll hand it over...I'll hand it over...I'll hand it all over to you!" The fatty hurriedly turned around and a large records book from a cabinet in the dark corners, presenting it to Suo Jia.

Suo Jia carefully examined it as he flipped through it. There were 100,000 army provisions, 300,000 sets of weapon armors, and 140 million gold, and the city lord's mansion.

Suo Jia coldly closed the book. He knew that this was definitely not everything. It looked like...this fatty was still trying to take advantage of his young age, and wanted to trick him. He really deserved to be killed.

Suo Jia furiously said with a stormy expression, "Fatty, I've discovered that you seem to keep wanting to trick me because of my young age. Have you really thought carefully? Do you really confirm that this is everything?"

"That...that...there's nothing else?" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the fatty replied in both fear and confusion.

“Bang!” Abruptly slamming his hand on the table, Suo Jia angrily yelled, “And you still want to lie to me? Let me ask you, this place is at the border. How could there not be any gifts from other kings’ businessmen? Where are the foreign treasures? Also...this place’s location is so special, how could there only be 100 million gold?”

Suo Jia bitterly spat out, “In addition, you have a massive military force, with a large number of experts under your command. How is it possible that you haven’t tried risking to rob others? After so many years, have you only accumulated this tiny amount of wealth? Do you really think I’m just a child?”

The fatty’s face instantly turned deathly pale. Actually, he had long since decided to do this. He had already make preparations for this anticipated situation, and created a fake records book to try to confuse Suo Jia. However, he hadn’t imagined that the brat would be so intelligent and see through everything with a single glance.

A jumble of sounds could be heard outside. The next instant... over 100 male and female, old and young, were escorted by the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes from the main entrance.

“Bang!” Strongly throwing the book on the table, Suo Jia cast a glance over the group of people. There were unexpectedly 30+ beautiful and young women. Each of them had boundless amorous feelings revealed in their eyes. It was clear to see that these were the fatty’s little wives.

Suo Jia quickly determined that just the jewelry on those 30+

wives already had a total worth of over 100 million. It was very clear to see that the fatty was still tricking him.

Suo Jia suddenly turned around to look at the fatty and fiercely said, “Alright, do you still have anything else to say? I’ve already been quite magnanimous. Let me warn you, you’d better treasure this opportunity. I don’t mind killing 2 more people!”

The fatty’s expression changed, and he desperately reached into his pocket to pull out a golden records book. He wordlessly placed it in front of Suo Jia with an extremely reluctant expression on his face.

“Hmph!” Suo Jia coldly snorted and stretched out to grab the records book and flipped through it carefully. There were ten cases of jewelry, 180 hundred million gold, and 10,000 sets of high ranked weaponry and armor!

Seeing these contents, Suo Jia’s hands violently shook. He took a deep breath and slammed the book into the fatty’s face and roared, “You are incorrigible. You dare to trick me again and again! Fine then...since you don’t seem to care for others’ well-beings, then I’ll comply to your feelings!”

“Girls! Pull out 10 people and behead them!” Suo Jia angrily commanded.

Hearing this, 10 of the 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes quickly pulled out some women and children and placed their war blades horizontally against their throats, waiting for Suo Jia’s order.

“Wait!” With a terrified shout, the fatty looked at Suo Jia and said, “I don’t understand, I clearly gave you everything. Why do you still insist on acting like this?”

With a dark smile, Suo Jia coldly said, “Did you really hand over everything? Then let me ask you, you’ve already lived here for 30-40 years. How come you don’t have a single magic equipment?”

Hearing this, the fatty finally turned completely white. He helplessly looked at Suo Jia as he shook his head and said, “Whether you believe me or not, my magic equipment was all given to my daughter. I don’t have any here to give to you. If I’m hiding anything more from you, go ahead and kill me.”

“Oh?” Suo Jia doubtfully sized up the fatty, but was unwilling to believe that this fellow would actually hand over everything obediently. With his sinister cunning, there was no way he would.

After pondering it for a bit, Suo Jia said in a heavy voice, “Fine then. You can explain the magic equipment. But let me ask you now, where did the high ranked military officers and their uniforms go? Why don’t I see them on this records book?”

“That...” The fatty looked at Suo Jia with a pained and bitter expression as he said helplessly, “You’ve already seen them. They’re here in this room. They were all slaughtered by you and your subordinates!”

“What!” Suo Jia turned around in shock and looked around at



the corpses littering the hall. He finally realized why those guys' strengths were so formidable; they were actually the high ranked military officers here!

# Chapter 195: Looking Down On Others (Part 1)

---

Suo Jia nodded in understanding; he now believed about 80% of the fatty's words. He glanced around at the corpses on the ground and helplessly turned around. Just as Suo Jia was about to say something, he suddenly sensed that a triumphant and scheming look flashed in the fatty's eyes!

Suo Jia abruptly swallowed his words and thought hard. There had to be some kind of loophole. If the fatty was hiding something, there had to be some kind of flaw. But...what exactly was this loophole?

“Got it!” He suddenly thought of the answer. Smiling darkly, he shook his head and said, “Fatty, don't say I didn't give you a chance. It's your own fault for not cherishing it, so don't blame for being merciless. You brought this onto yourself!”

Seeing Suo Jia about to order for the deaths of his subordinates, the fatty anxiously shouted, “Wait! You can't just say I'm hiding things from you without any basis! I really handed everything over to you!”

“Tch...” Sneering in disdain, Suo Jia coldly said, “Did you really? Then let me ask you, why don't you have a list of other properties? Also...why don't you have other locations for hiding treasures? Don't tell me that all your wealth was placed in the treasury; nobody would ever believe you!”

The fatty's face turned ashen. One couldn't blame him for under-preparation; Suo Jia was just too cunning. In addition....he had received the order from the capital way too late. His time had been short, so there was no way he could've prepared many ploys!

“Kill them!” Seeing the speechless fatty, Suo Jia gritted his teeth and gave the order.

Hearing this, 10 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes grasped the war blades in their hands tightly, and began to exert strength in their arms. Just as they were about to act, a delicate voice rang out, “Stop!”

Following this delicate shout, a bright yellow figure gracefully floated down so elegantly that the figure seemed to be moving in slow motion. But in the blink of an eye, that yellow figure already landed in front of everyone.

As Suo Jia stared at the yellow figure in shock, he felt a sense of familiarity for some reason. But even when he thought more closely, his memories were too foggy to recall where he had seen this girl before.

At closer inspection, the girl was wearing a golden mage robe, with a similarly golden staff in her hand. Her facial features were beyond delicate and pretty, and had an indescribable type of beauty that penetrated one deeply in the heart!

What especially made Suo Jia sigh in praise was that this girl's every action was exceptionally graceful, and she didn't show any

signs of rashness at all. Even in such a situation, she was still serene and refined, something that no ordinary person would be able to achieve.

“My...my daughter! Why are you here? Hurry...hurry up and run away! This place is dangerous!” When the fatty suddenly saw the girl, he was at first happy, but soon fear replaced it as he shouted a warning at her.

Hearing this, a trace of warmth could be seen from the girl’s gaze as she smiled at the fatty. Her delicate voice said, “Father, what exactly is going on here? Why are they here?”

When she spoke, the girl turned towards Suo Jia and said, “Student Suo Jia, why are you in my house? Why treat my family in such a way? Did we offend you somehow?”

“Eh!” Hearing the girl say his name, Suo Jia couldn’t help but gape in shock. He had absolutely no clue how she knew his name. From her initial arrival up until now, nobody had once said Suo Jia’s name.

“Senior An An, why do you run so quickly? I almost lost you!” Just as Suo Jia was pondering the situation, an impatient shout rang out from outside the walls. The next moment...a flaming red figure leapt over the walls and dropped down quickly into the hall.

Suo Jia looked at the fiery red figure in doubt. At first, he started in shock, but then gritted his teeth in fury. This guy was actually that bastard! Suo Jia hadn’t ever imagined that he’d meet this old

friend here!

The golden robed girl suddenly furrowed her beautiful eyebrows and said sharply, “Student Kaos, please don’t call me by that nickname. Only my relatives can call me that. We are only from the same school. Please conduct yourself with some more dignity!”

“Hehe.... Hehe...” Hearing the yellow robed girl’s words, the red figure couldn’t help but awkwardly scratch his head with a foolish smile on his face. He didn’t notice the hostile surroundings around him at all.

“Oh! So Young Master Kaos came! What a rare visitor!” Seeing the red figure, the fatty suddenly brightened as he happily shouted.

Hearing the fatty’s words, Kaos’ eyes lit up and he respectfully cupped his hands towards the fatty and said, “I, Kaos, greet the Lord.”

Kaos’s face suddenly turned deathly pale as he looked at Suo Jia with clenched teeth. After a moment of silence, Kaos laughed out loud and said, “Aiya, you little wretch, why are you here? Could it be...that I didn’t beat you hard enough last time? Hurry up and beat it!”

“Gasp!” Hearing Kaos’s words, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes couldn’t help but inhale sharply. They all knew that throughout Suo Jia’s life, he had only been beaten up once. And that one time was because of them! Thus...they had stood guard in front of the

school entrance, going all out to find that bastard. But they hadn't imagined that he would reveal himself!

Kaos continued, "Oi! Brat...I may have been afraid of you before because of that group of crazy and ugly bitches. But now, those lunatics are long dead. That's why...you'd better get out of here immediately. Otherwise, I'll beat you until you the ground is covered with your teeth!"

Hearing Kaos's words, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes and even the yellow robed girl couldn't help but feel shock. This Suo Jia had been the champion of the King of Kings Tournament in Holy Light Academy at the age of 8. On what basis was Kaos supposed to beat him? Wasn't it the reverse that was actually true?

Suo Jia said in a dark voice, "I didn't go searching for revenge, yet you dare to show yourself in front of me. Do you really believe that you can destroy me?"

Duo Mei stepped forward and indignantly said, "Young Master, no matter what, please allow me to fight. This matter came up because of us. We must earn back the Young Master's face!"

Suo Jia couldn't help but smile at Duo Mei's words. He knew that these Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes had been secretly worried about this matter the whole time. That's why Suo Jia had never dared to reveal this guy's identity. Now that the bastard was trying to flaunt his power right in front of them, it was clear to see that he didn't know the meaning of 'death'!

Shaking his head, Suo Jia said with contempt, “A mangy dog like him isn’t worth using qi. Taking care of him casually is good enough. It’ll be the same no matter who does it.”

Suo Jia turned around and looked at the yellow robed girl. Now that he recognized Kaos, he also quickly remembered this girl’s identity. That day, it had been precisely because Suo Jia was looking at her that he had been beaten up. To this day, Suo Jia still clearly remembered that moment.

At that time, the yellow robed girl’s movements had been so light and elegant that it had seemed she’d fly up into the air at any moment as she swiftly moved over from the distance. What had really peaked Suo Jia’s curiosity was how this girl’s body had been so agile. In addition, her footwork had been extremely strange. Although it had clearly looked like she was moving forwards, it had seemed as if she moving so swiftly that one couldn’t lock onto her position at any moment. If one tried to fight her, it’d be hard to hit her with magic.

Because he had been so fascinated by it, he’d provoked the guy named Kaos. In the end, after a clash of words, Suo Jia had been viciously beaten. It could be said that this girl had been the main cause of his beating!

As Suo Jia was recalling this, Duo Mei leaned close to Suo Jia and whispered, “Young Master, this girl is Holy Light Academy’s number one beauty: Naifa Lian, wind elemental mage, officially graduated last year.”

Suo Jia nodded in understanding, and surveyed his

surroundings. He thought to himself that it was clear this Naifa Lian was this fatty's daughter, and this Kaos was Naifa Lian's wooer. Today's situation seemed to have gotten more complicated. But no matter what, Suo Jia refused to allow anyone to owe him anything.

The fatty seemed to have found his supporter, and smugly said, "Viscount Suo Jia, I've already handed over everything I'm supposed to. As for others, they're all my private assets. I have no reason to give them to you, sorry!"

The fatty completely ignored Suo Jia and casually walked over to the yellow robed girl and Kaos. He arrogantly introduced, "I'm sure Viscount Suo Jia recognizes these two people. That's right... this one is my daughter, and the other one is the son of the Imperial Marquis, Young Master Kaos!"

"Marquis?" Hearing the fatty's words, Suo Jia finally understood; the reason the fatty was so confident he had backing was because he planned to rely on the Marquis' distinguished name. After all....to aristocrats, Suo Jia was only a minor noble that had just stepped into the circle of the high ranking aristocrats. There was still the earl, marquis, duke, and prince ranks above him; the classes were piled one after another. The difference between levels was clear.

Just as Suo Jia was mulling this over, Kaos arrogantly said, "How could a mere viscount act so savage? Could it be that you're looking down on me?"

Suo Jia couldn't help but give a cruel smile. With a wave of his



hands, an ice stream instantly uncoiled. Before Kaos could even react, it had tightly wrapped itself around him.

Seeing this, Kaos couldn't help but panic. Everything had happened way too quickly. He hadn't even realized what was going on; how could this brat seal him with ice just with a stretch of his hand!

Suo Jia walked up to the terrified Kaos and slowly stretched out his right hand. He brought his right hand up to cover a yawn and smiled darkly, "Back when you hit me, I swore that there would come a day when I'd pay you back a hundred times over for the humiliation you brought onto me. Prepare yourself, that time has come!"

## Chapter 196: Looking Down On Others (Part 2)

---

“Oi!” Kaos couldn’t help but shout in fear at Suo Jia’s angry growl. Unfortunately for him, Suo Jia didn’t give him any chance to speak. With an abrupt wave of his right hand, a clear, resounding sound of a slap rang through the air.

“Pa! Pa! Pa...” Once Suo Jia started, he could no longer stop. The more he recalled the humiliation he had suffered back then, the more resentful he felt. His right hand struck back and forth against Kaos’s face. Although Kaos was a fire warrior, his inner battle qi had long since corroded away from the cold air, effectively taking away his ability to resist.

After slapping Kaos dozens of times in succession, Suo Jia’s hand began to throb in pain, so he reluctantly stopped. He had no other choice...although the other party was in pain, Suo Jia’s hand was suffering as well, and Suo Jia wasn’t a masochist or anything. It was best to hand this type of thing to others to handle.

Suo Jia gloomily stopped, then turned to say to Duo Mei, “Send two people over. They cannot stop until they’ve slapped him 200 times!”

Without any need for Duo Mei to repeat the command, a group of girls fought to come out first. They each slapped him twice, then naturally retreated and switched with their other sisters and let them slap him as well. Every one of them wanted to help the Young Master pay back the revenge.

Although the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes didn't use any battle qi...after training for so long, their physical strength was already extremely great. Adding on to the hard gloves of their Six-Winged Phoenix Heavenly Clothes, Kaos's previously handsome face soon became a mess of bloody flesh. Even his own mother probably wouldn't have been able to recognize him.

Seeing this, the fatty grew so anxious that he couldn't utter a single word. On the other hand, Naifa Lian completely ignored the matter. It was clear to see that she didn't have a very good impression of Kaos. Whether or not he got beaten didn't seem to affect her emotions; if Suo Jia wanted to hit him, then he should go ahead.

After a long while, the fatty finally regained his senses and roared, "Viscount Suo Jia, you're too brazen. Do you know who he is? He's Marquis Karuda's eldest son. If you offend him, do you really think you'll be able to continue living here?"

With a cold sneer, Suo Jia shook his head and said, "Don't just count on relying on others; even if the Emperor himself stood here, you'd never be able to change my mind. You'd better brand this into your head: I refuse to let anyone who owes me anything go. Even the old man Emperor can't!"

With this, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes finally stopped in satisfaction. Although Suo Jia had ordered them to strike him 200 times, they had probably already slapped him 400 times. Who asked that bastard to have provoked this group of madwomen?

Seeing how Kaos's head was slightly deformed, and his face now a complete bloody mess, Suo Jia took pity on him and the corners of his mouth lifted, "What's the point in saying all this? Why provoke me for no reason? I don't go around causing trouble for others; that's already quite generous of me. Yet you still choose to irritate me. Screw you!" As he said this, Suo Jia spat onto Kaos's body angrily.

Suo Jia bit his lip and he turned around to say to the fatty, "Don't bother trying to suppress me with others; it won't work, it won't work in the slightest. If one provokes me, I will always repay the debt, even if it were the Heavens itself, let alone a mere Marquis. In my eyes, a Marquis is a piece of shit!"

Suo Jia tilted his head and angrily shouted at the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, "What are you all doing? Didn't you hear my orders? Drag 10 people out and behead them!"

The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes quickly rushed to pull out 10 people from the fatty's family. At that moment, the previously silent Naifa Lian finally spoke up, "On behalf of our relationship as schoolmates, may I ask you to stop for the moment? I would really like to understand the situation; what exactly is going on here?"

Suo Jia couldn't help but knit his brows at the girl's words. He was just that kind of person; although he was ruthless once he acted, he strongly respected relationships. Even if they were only schoolmates, he had to give some face to the girl.

Suo Jia helplessly sighed and said to Naifa Lian, "I think it's best if you ask your father about the situation. He brought everything

onto himself!

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the fatty hurriedly replied, "I admit that it was my bad in the beginning; I shouldn't have hidden public records from you and refused to give them over. But I've handed you even my own things now. Why do you still demand for more? You won't even leave me a source for a coffin? I still need to support my family."

Suo Jia couldn't help but snort as he said in disdain, "Forget it, no matter how pitiful you sound, I won't change my mind. Look for yourself, just the jewelry on your little wives are already worth 100-200 million. How much more do you want to keep?"

Suo Jia's expression turned icy, "As a noble, you were selfish, and used public funds for your own purpose. In addition, you used the power of a noble for your own personal gain. I didn't directly behead you, and have already offered my sentiments to you three times. Yet again and again, you continue to trick me. How can I let you live?"

Abruptly turning around, Suo Jia angrily said at the yellow robed girl, "And you, what kind of act are you trying to pull? Do you not know what you're wearing? Do you not know what you're using? Let me tell you, that set of yours cannot be purchased even with 5 billion. Do you really think that your father's measly wages are enough to purchase such a precious wind magic equipment set for you?"

After hearing Suo Jia's questions, Naifa Lian's expression finally changed. Indeed...as a the leader of a border station guarding a

fort, the fatty couldn't have that great of a salary. He wouldn't be able to buy a single piece of an equipment set, let alone the entire thing.

Yet currently, from inside out, her jewelry, staff, and mage robe were all Legendary ranked magic equipment. These indeed far surpassed the limits of her father's power.

Seeing Suo Jia's exasperation, the fatty urged, "You're being unreasonable. These treasures were all things that I led my soldiers to go snatch. They qualify as my assets. You don't have the power to take them away!"

"Pfft!" Angrily snorting, Suo Jia said resentfully, "Who do you think you are? A Mage Deity or a War God? Do you think that you alone can gain everything?"

Suo Jia turned around and furiously glared at Naifa Lian, "Don't tell me you don't know anything. In reality, every single magic equipment on your body is covered in countless soldiers' blood. These soldiers all served the country, they didn't sell their lives out to your family! The results of their hard work only belong to the country, not you individuals!"

The fatty's jaw dropped at Suo Jia's angry rant, and he was unable to say anything. Suo Jia was right, if he hadn't relied on the soldiers risking life and limb to fight, and simply relied on his own abilities, there was no way he could've gotten everything he currently possessed.

# Chapter 197: Finally His (Part 1)

---

After pondering for a bit, Suo Jia said in a heavy voice, “Money is something that everyone desires. But one must exchange for it with their own labor. People like you are just like bloodsuckers. No matter what, I won’t let you drain those soldiers of their blood and sweat. Leave here right now!”

Naifa Lian suddenly raised her head, her eyes shining brightly as she said, “So you’re saying that the money would be more fitting in your hands? What’s the difference between us possessing it and you possessing it?”

“Che...” Snorting in disdain, Suo Jia waved his left hand. Instantly....two cards glowing with a bright, purple light appeared in his hand. He gazed at the two people in contempt and firmly said, “Do you think that I’d care for such a small amount of money?”

“What!” The fatty and Naifa Lian simultaneously cried out in shock. There were only a total of 100 Amethyst Cards in the world. That Amethyst Card was equivalent to 100 billion gold!

Suo Jia felt satisfaction from seeing the people’s shocked expressions. As if performing a trick, he pulled out 4-5 of the same card from his interspatial ring until he could no longer hold them all in one hand, before finally stopping.

Seeing the large pile of cards in Suo Jia’s hand, everyone present could tell that this wasn’t everything Suo Jia had. He definitely

had many other cards in his interspatial ring. In other words, Suo Jia's total assets probably surpassed 500 billion!

Suo Jia looked at the fatty and Naifa Lian in disdain as he said, "I won't pocket a single cent of your money into my own wallet; that's too disgraceful. I'd rather steal than become a leecher like you. I want to spend all the money on the soldiers, as well as the fort. In addition, I also plan to invest a lot of my own money into this place. There's no need for you guys to try to contest against me in this respect."

The two people's expressions drastically changed, and they didn't utter a single word. Suo Jia had already proven that he wasn't lacking in money. The reason he wanted to strip every cent of their money from them was just because Suo Jia refused to see the two people run off with the money from the soldiers' blood and sweat!

Naifa Lian sincerely said, "Alright. No matter what, I have to admit that you're standing on the side of justice. We can give up all our assets. However...we hope that you keep your word and let all of our people go!"

"No problem!" With a firm nod, Suo Jia confidently said, "Although I have no qualms about killing, I won't kill for no reason. As long as you hand over all your assets, I'll just let you guys go once!"

Naifa Lian nodded in satisfaction, "Alright, Father, hand over all your assets now. These things originally shouldn't have been ours."



“No!” The fatty exclaimed in dismay, “That’s not possible. I can’t hand everything over! Once I lose all my money, how will I support such a large family? Without money, how do I employ bodyguards? You don’t know this, but I have too many enemies. Once I lose power, I’ll meet a tragic end.”

“Pfft...” With a sneer, Suo Jia said in contempt, “If you knew this would happen, why did you do what you did previously? If you weren’t overly greedy to the point of stealing from your own countrymen, would you have fallen to today’s state?”

Suo Jia swept a glance across the fatty and said, “You don’t have a choice right now. You have no qualifications to take away the wealth earned from the soldiers’ blood and sweat. Even if I took pity on you, I’d have no way of helping you. Doing it yourself will be more effective than just asking me for help!”

He then turned around to say to the group of family members, “And you guys, take off all the precious jewels on your persons. I can only let your lives go; don’t even dream of running off with a single cent!”

Suo Jia turned back around to look at Naifa Lian, “And you, you have to leave behind your magic equipment and treasures as well. Since we’re schoolmates, I won’t ask you for usage fees. Otherwise, the rental fees alone would be an amount that you couldn’t possibly afford. Even selling you wouldn’t cover the slightest piece of the amount.”

Duo Mei bitterly smiled as she walked up to Suo Jia and said, “Please, Young Master. She’s a girl, moreover, a beauty at that. How can you be so merciless? At least leave her some face.”

Suo Jia pouted and replied, “What does her being a girl or a beauty have to do with me? In my opinion, she’s just a person that’s no different from anyone else. I really cannot figure out why I should treat her differently.”

Duo Mei was both pleasantly surprised and pained by these words. That little guy clearly wasn’t affected by a beauty’s charms; his whole heart was still dedicated to Duo Mei. However...as a gentleman, how could he act so harshly to a girl?

Naifa Lian shrugged her shoulders and said, “Even if you say that, I wouldn’t continue wearing this magic equipment covered with soldiers’ blood and sweat anyways. If it’s not supposed to be mine, I definitely won’t cherish it!” Naifa Lian stretched out her hands, throwing her staff onto the table. She then took off her earrings, necklace, and ring, and shrugged off her yellow robe as well. She loftily stood there in light yellow clothes.

Suo Jia looked at Naifa Lian in appreciation. What he admired about her was her character and nature, not her appearance. At least, that’s how Suo Jia currently felt.

Suo Jia turned around to the fatty and said, “Alright, it’s your turn. Hand over all your other assets and treasures, and you can all leave!”

The fatty scowled. He knew that he currently had no other options; if he didn't hand everything over, today would be his end. He wouldn't have to wait for his enemies to find him; Suo Jia would take his life before that.

The fatty raised his right foot and opened a secret compartment on the bottom of his shoe. He took out a piece of sheepskin and reluctantly handed it to Suo Jia, "This is a hidden treasure map that has marks where all the treasures were buried, as well as my other estates in various cities."

After storing the hidden treasure map inside his ring, Suo Jia waved his hand and said, "Alright, since you've handed over everything, I won't trouble you guys any longer. You guys are all free to leave this place at any time."

The fatty opened his mouth, but no words came out. He just dumbly returned to his seat with a lifeless expression...when Naifa Lian saw her father's expression, she began to tear up. How could her grand, unyielding father fall to this point!

Seeing the fatty unwilling to leave, Suo Jia couldn't help but knit his brows as he declared, "Ok, I've already said that you guys can leave. Unless...you demand that I personally escort you?"

"Haha..." With a laugh, the fatty bitterly said, "Viscount Suo Jia, where am I supposed to go? The world is so large, but there is no longer a place for me to be. You might as well just kill me now. I have no other request aside from asking you to help me look after my family."

The fatty turned around and looked towards Naifa Lian in despair, “An An, Father won’t be able to care for you from now on. Fortunately, you’ve already graduated; you can take care of yourself now. Father also doesn’t have any regrets.”

“Father...” Hearing the fatty’s words, the proud and aloof Naifa Lian was finally unable to bear it any longer, and cried out in grief. She knew that after losing his power and all of his assets today, her father was already about to reach the end of the road.

The fatty closed his eyes in agony as he said in a shaking voice, “Viscount Suo Jia, although I’ve committed a lot of wrongs...on account of my services of protecting the Empire for so long, please help me take care of my family!” The fatty suddenly raised his hand, lifting a glinting dagger high up in the air before thrusting it down towards his chest.

“Master...Father!” Seeing this scene, all the family members, as well as Naifa Lian, all simultaneously wailed out. However, nobody tried to stop him. Everyone knew that the fatty had already made his decision. Although they were all grieved at his choice, they didn’t try to stop him because...although the fatty was quite bad of a person, he was still the family’s lord after all!

## Chapter 198: Finally His (Part 2)

---

“Ding!” Everyone watched the fatty about to turn into a corpse. Suddenly, a clear sound of a strike rang out through the room. The fatty felt his right hand shake, and just as the dagger was about to descend into his chest, all that was left in his hand was the handle.

Puzzled, the fatty opened his eyes and looked at the remaining handle in shock. As for the blade, it had long since flown off to some unknown place. He raised his head in confusion as he stared doubtfully at Suo Jia.

Suo Jia couldn't help but feel conflicted as the fatty stared at him. He didn't quite have the heart to watch the fatty die. Although he had just hated the fatty for tricking him, the fatty was still his schoolmate's father, even if they were only related in the sense that they had attended the same academy, and weren't familiar with each other at all.

The fatty said in an agonized voice, “Viscount Suo Jia, I'm admittedly unable to continue living, but do you mean to say that I don't even have the privilege of dying? Or are you saying that you still want to punish and torment me further?”

Suo Jia smiled bitterly as he shook his head and helplessly said, “Whether you die or not has nothing to do with me. However...on what basis can you ask me to take care of all your wives! Look at them...that's over 100 people. How could I possibly watch them all!”

“You!” The fatty dumbly stood there. That’s right...Suo Jia didn’t seem to have any obligation to take care of so many people, nor did he have the ability to. Over 100 people was really too much.

The fatty looked at each of the people closest to him, and felt an agonizing pain. He knew that if they followed him, they’d have no other path. It was inevitable; in the past, he would often make the soldiers cover their faces and loot others, regardless of whether the victims were foreign or local merchants. None of them were ever allowed to get away, and now it could be said that the fatty had enemies everywhere.

Before, the fatty had authority and power, so they naturally couldn’t do anything to him. But now, he had no money or power, so his enemies would naturally come find him. It’s true that he had wanted to die, but his wife and children no longer wanted to live anymore either. Everyone now understood the meaning of saying: ‘to eliminate weeds from their roots’

Suo Jia calmly said, “It’ll be easy for you if you die. But you still want me to watch over your wife and children. In particular, your precious daughter is a major beauty in Holy Light Academy, and she’s extremely powerful as well. Tell me, do you think that if I hound you to death, I’d keep your family alive and just wait for them get to revenge for you?”

“Gasp!” Everyone sharply inhaled at Suo Jia’s words. That’s right...to get rid of weeds, one has to uplift them from their roots, or else a simple spring breeze would regrow them. If the fatty just died like that, Naifa Lian would definitely hunt down Suo Jia for revenge. With her beauty and intelligence, who knew how much

destruction she could bring about?

Everyone knew that either everyone had to leave, or everyone had to die here, ending it all. Otherwise, Suo Jia wouldn't be able to run operations here peacefully. Putting others aside, Suo Jia's mother was still retired in Holy Light. If she encountered an ambush from an assassin, what would happen then?

After a while, the fatty raised his head up and gave a long sigh. It was clear that now...he could only try his luck. He would have to bring all of his family to leave this area. Whether they died or not, or when and how they died, would depend on fate.

The fatty sullenly turned around and led all the hundred members of his family out of the hall. They walked out the doors and began to head towards the capital. At the moment, they no longer had a place to stay here anymore.

Naifa Lian shot a complicated look at Suo Jia, then silently floated towards the door with her strange footwork. She quickly disappeared outside the door as well.

Seeing that everyone had left, Suo Jia sighed in a relief, then gestured at Duo Mei, "Go dispatch some people to check what they do after leaving. Don't let anything happen to them, but don't let them stir up any trouble either. Do you understand?"

Duo Mei smiled and nodded, then turned around to shout, "Group #2, pay attention. Immediately chase after that group of people and secretly observe them. Don't let them encounter any

trouble, but don't let them incite any either! Report back the situation at all times!" Following her commands, 6 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes quickly sped out in a flash, speedily chasing after the group.

Suo Jia turned around and frowned at the corpses that filled the hall. He then used a seal of command to order a large group of slave soldiers to enter. Soon, they cleaned up all of the corpses in the room. They didn't stop until they had washed the floor so many times that the room no longer smelled the slightest bit like blood.

Finally, the hall recovered to its original state. It was both luxurious and clean. Suo Jia comfortably sat down in a large chair, and inwardly appreciated the fatty's tastes in enjoyment. This was the first time Suo Jia had ever sat in such a comfortable seat.

Just then, news from outside came in. The fatty's home had been intercepted at the city entrance, the perpetrators being slave soldiers. Fortunately, with the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' help, the group had smoothly left the city.

Suo Jia nodded his head in understanding and finally relaxed. Since they had already left the city, anything that happened to them from now on would have no relation to Suo Jia. After thinking about it for a bit, Suo Jia ordered for that group of 6 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes to immediately return. At the same time, Suo Jia would tightly shut the city gates, not allowing anyone to enter or exit!

Suo Jia's orders were currently higher than everything else. In



such a remote location, any central powers couldn't possibly reach it. Even the Emperor's orders wouldn't be as powerful here. At the very least, this was absolutely true to the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes. And all of Dawn City was within their jurisdiction.

As expected, the fatty didn't pull any tricks. He had pretty much handed over all his assets and resources. During the next two days, Suo Jia sat in the large office and flipped through, organized, digested, and absorbed everything about Dawn City without stopping.

Dawn City had 100,000 slave soldiers, 10,000 people in the regular army, 50,000 sets of weapons and armor, and 100,000 sets of army provisions...there were other resources as well, but they were insignificant in Suo Jia's eyes. The remaining things were mainly run-down houses and such, things that didn't fall into Suo Jia's concern.

As he was engrossed in quickly organizing everything, an Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix suddenly knocked on the door. With Suo Jia's prompt, she quickly walked in and loudly announced, "Young Master Suo Jia, the fatty and his family have returned."

"What? The fatty returned? Which fatty?" Suo Jia asked in doubt, still muddle-headed from looking through the documents.

The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix smiled at Suo Jia's bewildered expression and said, "What other fatty is there aside from the fatty that was chased out from Dawn City by you just 2 days ago?"

“Oh!” Nodding in understanding, Suo Jia firmly said, “Didn’t I tell them to leave immediately? Why did they come back? Go tell them that I’ve already sealed off the city so that nobody can enter or exit.”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix bitterly smiled and said, “I’ve already said that. However, that girl keeps using her status as your schoolmate to request meeting you. She said she has something to tell you.”

“That...” After some hesitation, Suo Jia helplessly stood up and said, “Alright. In that case, I’ll go meet her.” Suo Jia stood up and headed out the door.

Soon, Suo Jia and the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenix arrived outside the city gates. When they looked out, they saw that the number of people had gone down to only a bit over 50. All of them were covered in dust, beyond exhausted, and covered in injuries.

What especially caught Suo Jia’s attention was that Naifa Lian’s expression was abnormally haggard. Her body was also covered with blood. It was clear to see that during the last two days, they had been attacked. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be in such a state.

The yellow robed girl outside the city said in a clear voice, “Please, Student Suo Jia, open the city gates and let us in. They are just about to catch up to us.”

“They?” Suo Jia couldn’t help but furrow his brows in suspicion at Naifa Lian’s words and asked in confusion, “Who’s chasing you

guys? Exactly what is going on?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Naifa Lian anxiously turned around and glanced at the path they had come along, then urgently said, “It’s a thief corps. We’re being tracked by them now, and we can’t get far enough from them. Please, I beg of you to open the city gates and let us in!”

Suo Jia gave a troubled frown and shook his head, “No, that won’t do. This place is a fort city, as well as my home. I can’t let a group of people that are hostile towards me in like that. You should also know that your father still has a large amount of influence on the soldiers here. I don’t want to risk it; I hope you understand.”

# Chapter 199: Slave Soldiers (Part 1)

---

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the people outside the city suddenly fell silent. They all knew that Suo Jia's concerns weren't without reason. The fatty had been, after all, stationed here for 30-40 years. His foundation here was quite deep. If he was allowed into the city, he could incite a soldier rebellion. Then, no matter how powerful Suo Jia was, he would most likely fall in power, and be forced to leave.

After thinking for a long time, the fatty outside the city finally said, "Then how about this: I won't enter the city. Can you just let my family members in? They are innocent."

Suo Jia coldly shook his head and smiled grimly, "Why must you say such things again? If I only forbid you from entering and allow you to get killed by thieves, then your wives and children would surely hunt me down for revenge in the future. It's not like I don't want to let you all in, but think about it; if you were in my position, would you let me in?"

"Alright..." Fiercely gritting her teeth, Naifa Lian resolutely said, "Student Suo Jia, tell me...exactly what must we do to make you let us in?"

Suo Jia helplessly shook his head in response and said, "Actually, I really do want to let you guys in. But my wisdom tells me that letting you in is simply asking for trouble. At the moment, even I am at loss at what to do. Unless...do you want to help me think of a solution?"

After muttering to herself for a long time, Naifa Lian suddenly knelt down in front of the city gates and said, “Fine them. From now on, Naifa Lian, in cooperation with my family, will follow and vow loyalty to Viscount Suo Jia. Please allow us to enter the city!”

“That...” Suo Jia was momentarily shocked speechless. As matters stood, it seemed that only vowing loyalty to him was the only way to resolve the current issue. However...could Suo Jia comfortably accept their loyalty and devotion? Were they worth his trust?

Everyone knew that saying something like loyalty and devotion was extremely easy to do. It was only a matter of opening and closing one's lips. But how many people in the world could actually do it?

Even after thinking about it for a long time, Suo Jia still couldn't make a decision. He understood that even if Naifa Lian could be trusted, the fatty was definitely unworthy of trust. He couldn't just fall for the fatty's currently pitiable state because of the dire situation; once the fatty gained power, he'd definitely change to a completely unrecognizable face. A person like him that had always been extremely ruthless wouldn't ever repent. It was easier to change mountains and rivers than to alter one's character!

Suo Jia firmly stated, “Sorry. Pledging loyalty and devotion are fine, but I can't possibly believe in these things. There are many matters where word of mouth just isn't sufficient.”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Naifa Lian anxiously looked behind her towards the path they had come from. A single glance was enough

to see that in the distance, faint black figures could be seen. They were currently rushing towards them as fast as lightning.

Abruptly turning around, Naifa Lian desperately said, “Hurry, hurry up...I beg of you, Viscount Suo Jia; I will agree to any request you have. Please just let us in; we really cannot suffer any more losses!”

Suo Jia followed Naifa Lian’s gaze, and noticed the black figures as well. He furrowed his brows, and mulled over the situation for a long time. Eventually, he said, “How about this; I’ll accept your loyalty and devotion, and I will help arrange for your family’s living conditions. However...they cannot enter the city!”

“You!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Naifa Lian anxiously said, “What are you talking about? If you don’t let my family enter the city, we’ll definitely lose our lives. If they all die, how would I pledge loyalty and devotion to you!”

“Haha...” Suo Jia smiled proudly as he puffed out his chest, “Don’t worry. Although I won’t let them enter the city...nobody can possibly kill the people I wish to protect. Be at ease.”

Suo Jia narrowed his eyes and looked Naifa Lian up and down. He then firmly said, “However, you have to think through it carefully; are you certain that you will pledge loyalty and devotion to me? Once you agree, you’d better not think of running away. Otherwise, both you and your family will die!”

Naifa Lian nodded and said resolutely, “I, Naifa Lian, always

Speak words of enormous weight. Don't worry, as long as you save my family, I will pledge loyalty and devotion to you."

As the two were speaking, the distant black figures had already caught up. They were now only around 50 meters away from the city walls. When Suo Jia looked over, he saw that there were over 100 black-clothed and masked thieves. Each one of them held sharp blades, and moved extremely agilely. A single glance was enough to tell that they weren't on the side of justice.

The head thief glanced at the city walls and ordered the thieves to stop 50 meters away. He then loudly asked, "May I ask if the one on the wall is Viscount Suo Jia?"

Suo Jia nodded and replied, "That's right, I am Suo Jia. Do you have any business with me?"

"Hmph!" The head thief snorted and said, "I'm chasing the survivors of that sinister and vicious Naifa Family. I hope that City Lord will help make things convenient for me. Otherwise, don't blame me, Blackbeard, for not giving you face!"

Hearing the head thief's words, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes all paled. Who was this guy, to so brazenly say anything he wanted in front of them? If he dared to say such things, he had to be quite powerful.

Surveying the ashen-faced Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, Suo Jia smiled and said, "Blackbeard? Such a character-filled name. However, allow me to say something: My face isn't something that

you give me. In addition, I really wonder, if you guys don't give me face, will that even affect me?"

Blackbeard couldn't help but blow up in anger from Suo Jia's words. He fiercely shook the dagger in his hand as he shouted, "Brat, don't be too arrogant. If you offend us, you will have to suffer. We Blackbeard thief corps are top ranked amongst the 180 members of the great Thief Alliance. If you provoke us, it'll be the same as provoking the entire Alliance. Assess it yourself, see if you can afford to provoke us or not."

Suo Jia shot Naifa Lian a questioning glance and asked, "Hey, is what this Blackbeard saying the truth? Is he really that powerful?"

Bitterly nodding, Naifa Lian replied, "That's right. The standard Thief Alliance includes all the thief groups within an 800 li range in Dawn City. There are over 180 member thief groups, and their total number of members reaches 180,000. They conquered the entire path along the boundary. The number of experts in the Alliance are as great as the forests here, and even the Imperial Soldiers are powerless against them."

"Oh!" Suo Jia's eyes lit up with excitement. He turned back and around to say to Duo Mei, "Aha...it's finally time for you girls to break away from your silence. Your next training opponents have been found!"

"Mmmmm..." Duo Mei happily nodded and replied, "You're really too awesome, Young Master. We've practically gone crazy from resting so much. Now we finally have people to help us train!"



Duo Mei suddenly reached out her right hand and made the symbol of a six with her hand. At the same time, she said, “Young Master, give us 6 months, or half a year. We’ll sweep our way through the trade routes along the borders on your behalf!”

Suo Jia smiled and nodded, saying, “Then don’t hesitate to do it. Even if you make a huge blunder, I, your Young Master, will support you. Go play with those that dare to threaten me until they collapse. Got it?”

Duo Mei nodded in response to Suo Jia’s teasing and laughed. Seeing how happy she was, Suo Jia’s expression suddenly turned grave as he said indignantly, “If you know, then what are you still still standing around here for? Could it be that you’re telling me that I, your Young Master, must initiate it?”

“Hehe...we wouldn’t dare, not at all...” Duo Mei waved her hands in response to Suo Jia’s teasing, then abruptly turned around to tell the girls behind her, “Sisters, what are you waiting for? Start fighting!”

All the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes pulled out the Blood Angels mercenary group’s emblems and quickly stuck them onto their left shoulders. After several months had passed, the Blood Angels were going to descend once more!

# Chapter 200: Slave Soldiers (Part 2)

---

Suddenly seeing the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes pull out those rumored emblems, the Blackbeard thief group was momentarily dazed. These were the tyrannical powers that had conquered the Gold Triangle! Even the Great Tri-Alliance couldn't do anything against them. Now they had even come here; did that mean they didn't care about their agreement with the Great Tri-Alliance at all?

The 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes opened the cloaks behind them. All 36 figures rose up into the sky, drawing out paths of light, whizzing as they leapt down from the city walls and directly charged at the Blackbeard thief group.

“Mother of...hurry up and run!” After the slightest contact, the black-clothed thieves were cut up into pieces like mere vegetables by the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes. Seeing this scene, how could anyone dare to stay any longer? A single shout was enough to send all the thieves scurrying for their lives in all directions.

Against the fleeing thief group, the 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes were reluctant to chase them around all over the place, and directly beheaded over 100 of them. Only a few dozen tiny pests had successfully escaped.

Of course, if these women really wanted to chase after them, none of them would be able to even dream of running. However... running away wasn't anything major. If they fled, then they fled. No one was willing to chase after them; there would surely be another chance to meet. The Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes

wanted to spare some to bring back a message; otherwise, if nobody knew what happened, no one would come after for revenge.

After hacking up the last enemy, the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes turned around and flew back to city walls like birds. Going into battle and back, they were like the wind, both light and unrestrained, not at all like they had just killed enemies.

Seeing how overpowering the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes were, Naifa Lian's face turned deathly pale. Originally...her opinion on herself had been quite high, and she believed that she was still quite a figure. However, after seeing the actions of the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes, she suddenly realized that she was pretty much nothing!

Before, Naifa Lian had thought that after following Suo Jia, she'd surely be one of the top numbered figures in his group. However, she was now certain that her own power would rank below the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes'. She just wasn't sure how many such figures were exactly by Suo Jia's side.

Seeing Naifa Lian's deathly pale face, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile. Comparing to the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes was something this girl was still unable to do. Their talents were definitely the children that the Heavens were proud of. They also wore semi-Epic ranked equipment. Although the enemy numbers were high, even the Empire's marshals weren't as highly ranked as the girls were. Their surroundings and equipment that had been growing were all enough to flabbergast a marshal. Suo Jia could no longer keep track of how much money he had spent on them. In

addition, they'd undoubtedly keep spending more and more in the future.

Suo Jia looked towards Naifa Lian at the city entrance and said, "Alright, I've already saved your family. From now on, you are my person. Mn...how about this; for the moment, act as my follower!"

"Eh!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, Naifa Lian couldn't help but be shocked. She hadn't ever imagined that she'd only become a follower, not much more powerful than a maid. However, when she recalled the Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes' display, how could she possibly refute?

Naifa Lian bitterly chuckled as she shook her head and helplessly said, "Alright, Viscount Suo Jia. From now on, I'm your follower. But what about my family? What arrangements have you planned for them?"

Suo Jia replied, "You'll all station yourselves outside the city for now. I'll send people to bring you tents. In a few days, I'll dispatch people to escort you guys out of here to wherever you guys want to be. As for where that is, it is your decision."

Suo Jia paused slightly, then told Naifa Lian, "Ok, for now...you should enter the city. I have matters to discuss with you." Suo Jia turned around and leapt off the wall, heading back towards the city lord's mansion.

Following closely behind, Duo Mei teased, "What? Did that little

beauty catch Young Master's eye?"

"Mn..." Nodding his head, Suo Jia smiled, "She did catch my attention. You're quite perceptive, hehe..."

"Ah!" Duo Mei's jaw dropped in shock. Originally...she had just been poking fun at Suo Jia. She hadn't imagined that Suo Jia would just admit it. For a moment, Duo Mei could feel some unknown, aching feeling in her heart. It was slightly depressing as well.

Suspiciously glancing at Duo Mei, Suo Jia continued, "However, what caught my eye wasn't her beauty, but her magical footwork. No matter what, I must learn it from her. Could it be that you hadn't noticed? Her footwork is quite strange; it makes it hard for others to lock onto her body's location!"

Duo Mei naturally regained her spirits at Suo Jia's words, and nodded, "That's what I was saying; how could Young Master be infatuated by a girl? There was surely some other reason." Duo Mei patted her chest and heaved a sigh of relief.

They rushed back to the city lord's mansion and soon after, Naifa Lian entered the doors as well with her strange steps. She respectfully greeted Suo Jia, then said, "Viscount Suo Jia, please tell me if you have any matters you'd like me to attend to."

Suo Jia shook his head and said, "Don't. Don't call me Viscount Suo Jia; just Suo Jia is fine. If you aren't used to it, calling me Young Master is fine too, I like that form of address."

Naifa Lian nodded with a smile and said, “Alright Young Master. May I ask what business you have with me?”

“Mn...” After a bit, Suo Jia replied, “It’s like this; I just arrived at Dawn City, so I’m not familiar with the area. I want you to help show me around, then gather everyone together so that you can help me quickly take over Dawn City. You are also aware that because of you, I’ve already irritated the Thief Alliance. We must hurry up and raise defenses!

Naifa Lian shot Suo Jia a shamed glance. She knew that for the sake of saving her family, Suo Jia had made a huge risk. He’d even gone and provoked an Alliance with over 180 thief groups. The resulting consequences were extremely grave.

Naifa Lian then said, “That’s no problem, Young Master. The regular soldiers are all within the army camps on the left and right sides of Dawn City. There are 5,000 of them on each side. As for the slave soldiers, they all live in buildings within the city. As long as you sound the alarm bell, they’ll quickly gather in the plaza.”

Suo Jia immediately turned around to say to Duo Mei, “Immediately send someone to ring the alarm bell. We don’t have any time to waste.”

Soon after Suo Jia made the command...the heavy sound of the bell rang through the entire city. Hearing this, numerous figures poured out of the run-down houses in Dawn City. Like a river, they all flowed through the alleys and quickly gathered at the plaza.

After half an hour, Suo Jia, accompanied by the 36 Angelic Six-Winged Phoenixes and Naifa Lian, arrived at the plaza's inspection stage. Suo Jia couldn't help but gasp at the sight of the densely packed crowds of people. This was the first time in his life that he'd ever seen so many people gathered together.

How could 100,000 people be described? They were as many as the mountains and the seas. However...although the number of people was great, they all looked emaciated. They didn't have anything resembling armor on their bodies either. Majority of them were only wearing coarse clothing, and the wooden sticks in their hands were their weapons.

It was disappointing, very disappointing. Suo Jia didn't have any expectations for the slave soldiers, but he still hadn't imagined that their situation would be bad to such an extent. How could they even count as soldiers? If they were sent to battle like this, it'd just be sending them to their deaths. He couldn't count on them being of any use.

Suo Jia tightly knit his brows and closely examined the crowd. It was evident that these slave soldiers weren't adequately provided for. Once a battle started, they'd end up as the first line of defense and use their own bodies as shields to block the enemy's advances. Although they could damage the enemy to some extent, 100 slave soldiers could only be exchanged for a single enemy's life. Pounding wooden sticks against a steel armor wouldn't be enough at all. Especially now that these soldiers were in a state of hunger, what kind of hopes could Suo Jia possibly have for them?